

Heaven Awakening Path

(天醒之路)

Chapter

001-070

Butterfly Blue

(蝴蝶蓝)

Story Description:

Infusion, Sound, Qi, Pivot, Strength, Essence, Excellence Soul's seven forces.

Perception of these seven souls has produced countless strong people.

However, in an ordinary courtyard, a youngster was facing a crisis of banishment.

Original Story can be found here: [Link](#)

Chapter O: Prologue

“Where should we go?” small girl asked.

“I don’t know, but we will always be living.” Both legs of the small boy were completely stuck inside the heavy snow. He was moving, but with great difficulty. With every step he took forward, a metal colliding sound was produced. Both of his legs and feet were tightly bounded together by an iron chain. Snowflakes were rolling on his face like knives. He didn’t dodge them, because, there was nowhere to dodge. He was lifting his body up in such a way. He hadn’t even blinked his eyes. Dragging the chains, carrying the small girl, he kept on going forward.

“I am a little cold.” The small girl said.

“Me too. We are cold together.” small boy replied.

“Okay!” Small girl agreed.

Behind the two of them, deep footprints were being engraved inside the boundless white snow with a faintly visible red colour.

In the depth of the footprints, there wasn’t snow, but blood.

It was dyed red with fresh blood. Every person who toppled over was watching with an incredulous face, as if looking at something inconceivably frightening.

Huge snowfall was mournfully covering all of this.

Chapter 1: Talented and Useless

“Lu Ping, get off the bed and go to the class.”

“Sleep, five more minutes.”

“Let me help you up!”

Along with a crashing sound, sunshine illuminated the entire body of Lu Ping.

“Eh!” Next moment, a frightened shriek resounded throughout the skies and thoroughly smashed Lu Ping’s sleepiness to pieces. Su Tang, after having smashed the door already, snarled:

“What requires you to play naked while sleeping?”

“Why would sleeping naked have to require something?” Lu Ping finally stood up as he mumbled to himself. As soon as he stood up, the room, which was already narrow, immediately appeared to be even more congested. Lu Ping eyed the door smashed by Su Tang’s fury while picking up his clothes from the bedside.

Creak, creak..... the smashed door was tremblingly swaying. Lu Ping unbearably closed his eyes.

Eventually, the door dropped down and pathetically leaned against the wall

“Truly a monstrous woman.” Although Lu Ping lamented in his heart, he absolutely didn’t go towards the door. He loosely draped the jacket over his shoulders, pushed open the window, and jumped out just like that, being half naked.

Sky was blue and sunshine was glittering. Outside the cottage, there was a Flower Garden. It was emitting a peculiar kind of fragrance. Lu Ping walked inside the flower garden and looked in all directions. Eventually, his eyes shined.

“Here!”

Lu Ping happily walked forward, bent down, picked up the Flower

Garden's irrigation pipe, and shamelessly aimed it towards himself. Water drawn from the ice cold spring existing at mountain's peak allowed him to be fresh and cool for the moment, and it also drove away the last bits of his sleepiness. After washing his face and rinsing his teeth, he threw the pipe away before he suddenly heard a shriek once again.

"Lu Ping !!!!!" In charge of Zhai Feng Institute's twenty-two flower gardens, Gardener Mo Sen was furiously standing at the garden's edge.

"Oh! It's Mo Laoshi, you are quite early!" Lu Ping seemed completely unaware of the former's anger.

"My Dormant Fire Lotus!" Mo Sen roared. He was a strong individual who had a total of seventeen Heavenly Layers added up through different layers of six souls. Moreover, he had also Linked Up Infusion's soul. As he roared, his killing intent was even felt by the insects inside the Flower Garden. Countless frightened birds flew away from within the deep lush on either sides of the boulevard.

However, Lu Ping was assuming an appearance as if he was completely unaware of it. With astonishment written on all over his face, he asked: "Where?"

"Under your foot...."

"Eh?" Lu Ping bowed his head and shifted his leg. Sure enough, there was a budding of Dormant Fire Lotus stepped on by him. The root of the Dormant Fire Lotus is a rare variety, and transplanting it from inside the water to the dry land is very difficult. However, at this moment, it was completely turned into a steamed bun by Lu Ping.

"Get lost." As Mo Sen looked at that steamed bun kind of Dormant Fire Lotus, his heart ached deeply. He couldn't even get angry. He hurriedly charged into the Flower Garden and knelt in front of the Lotus. Then, with great caution, he began to examine its stem.

"It's not important. Right?" Lu Ping crouched his body and brought his head close. He seemed very focused.

"Disappear or die!" Mo Sen's desire to kill was already at the limit.

“I will disappear.” Lu Ping immediately retreated. His vision fell upon the fumingly walking Su Tang who was walking straight in his direction. Lu Ping raised his hand to make a greeting.

“You....” Su Tang stared at him blankly. She couldn’t figure out, why would Lu Ping come in front of her against all the exceptions. But as her vision flew towards Quarter’s side and she looked at the wretched appearance of Mo Sen leaning on the ground with buttocks out, she instantly made the connection.

After firmly glaring Lu Ping for a moment, she quickly walked beside Mo Sen.

“Mo Sen Laoshi, he didn’t do it on purpose. Can I help with something?”

Mo Sen raised up his body. He was even unconscious of the mud on his body before he breathed a sigh of relief. The stem of Dormant Fire Lotus was unhindered. His anger also disappeared at last. After all, this kind of thing wasn’t happening for the first time. He truly was somewhat insensitive. If not for having his precious Dormant Fire Lotus being stepped upon, he might not have even bothered to get angry. On the entire road that Lu Ping used, this Dormant Fire Lotus wasn’t the only flower or plant that he’d messed up by stepping on it, but Mo Sen didn’t spare a single glance to the rest of them.

As far as Su Tang’s explanation is concerned, Mo Sen felt even more helpless. ‘That loathsome brat, of course, it wasn’t on purpose, he doesn’t have a single care in the world, why would he think of doing it on purpose? He is only a problem for Su Tang, this good child, she would still keep on fixing the blunders created by that worthless guy.’

It’s not worth!

Mo Sen feels that it was not worth for her. It was not only him, though. In the entire Institute, the only ones who would want her to be burdened by Lu Ping were the people who were jealous of her or her talent. ‘If there was no Lu Ping, if she could wholeheartedly cultivate, then going by her talent, her current realm....’

Eh? Realm?

As soon as Mo Sen thought till here, he was able to vaguely perceive something. As soon as he realized this, the power of Infusion's soul Linked Up with the Excellence's soul had already begun to circulate. A trace of bright light suddenly flashed in his eyes.

"Sixth Heavenly Layer? Strength's soul, sixth Heavenly Layer! Your Strength's soul has already broken through to the sixth Heavenly Layer?" Mo Sen's words seemed like as if he had lost his reasoning.

Sixth Heavenly Layer, this was the peak of a single soul's cultivation. Su Tang at present had just turned fifteen years and it had been three years since she started to cultivate at Zhai Feng Institute. However, she had already cultivated Strength's soul up to the sixth Heavenly Layer. This, in the history of Zhai Feng Institute, was unprecedented. As for Mo Sen himself, he had attained the sixth Heavenly Layer realm in the Infusion's soul. For the whole thing, it took him almost a time period of seven years. Even this would be considered outstanding compared to a lot of people. It allowed him to be proud of himself. However, now compared with Su Tang, he fell behind a lot more than just twice. Moreover, he could also remember that during that time he was cultivating single-heartedly. He didn't have to pay attention to a bothersome guy like Lu Ping.

"Unbelievable! Strength's soul sixth Heavenly Layer. You have unexpectedly attained it so fast." After he watched Su Tang nod to confirm it, Mo Sen recovered his spirit from shock. At this very instant, he decided in his heart; this kind of outstanding natural aptitude and talent, he wouldn't let it squander in front of his eyes.

"Su Tang, answer a question of mine." Mo Sen's expression suddenly turned very serious.

"Yes." Su Tang was a little baffled looking at Mo Sen's serious expression, but she didn't let it show on her face and only showed her approval.

"If there was a day, your father and mother fell into water at the same time. You can only choose one, who would you chose?" Mo Sen said.

Su Tang was surprised.

“I know you are an orphan. It’s only a conjecture.” Mo Sen said

“Can this question.....”

“This question is very shameful, is it not?” Mo Sen stated. His vision turned and intentionally lingered on Lu Ping. “However did you ever think that in our lives, sometimes, we are subjected to such cruel alternatives. You don’t have a way out. You have to give up something. Hesitating or being ambiguous will only result in a much more unfortunate outcome.”

Give up, it’s cruel, but still must give up.

Su Tang knows what Mo Sen was suggesting. Ever since she’d entered the Institute, there have been far too many people including teachers and students advising her to maintain her distance from Lu Ping. Because he was a good-for-nothing and she was extraordinarily sharp. Lu Ping would be her burden, a burden which would grow more and more heavy.

‘But the truth is, you all are mistaken! Moreover, even if it was like your imagination I would absolutely never throw him out for my future.’

About this point, Su Tang didn’t have a shred of hesitation.

“From the moment you entered this Institute, your lives were destined to be different.” Mo Sen continued on. He deliberately didn’t lower his voice, rather he wished his voice to be heard by Lu Ping who was not too far away. He knew about the affection between Su Tang and Lu Ping; these two children were orphans who had supported each other from a very small age. Three years ago, Institute Dean brought them here when he returned from outside.

On the entire continent, there are about four hundred Institutes. Every single one of them is a cultivation learning palace capable of changing a person’s entire life. Institutes in itself have a very strict selection process. A person lucky enough to get in the whatsoever institute will strive hard. No matter what will be the final accomplishment, he is bound to push his life to new heights. But, Lu Ping was an exception. During the three years of him being in this institute, he failed to clear the Major Annual assessment two times and repeated the same grade for consecutive two years. At this date, he was still a first-grade student. According to the

rules of Zhai Feng institute, students who fail to pass the Major Annual Assessment for the third time would be expelled out of the institute.

These rules of the institute were already very lenient. If it was any other strict institute, a guy like Lu Ping would have been expelled within a month. Now, the third Major Assessment was approaching, and Mo Sen, after Linking Up his two eyes with infusion's soul, can make out that there wasn't the slightest bit of possibility of Lu Ping's body passing the assessment.

Lu Ping would be expelled out of the institute. And Su Tang?

His intuition already had an answer for him. If Su Tang was required to make a cruel abandonment, what she would abandon will not be Lu Ping. Mo Sen could already make this out from her eyes very clearly.

This makes him admire Su Tang even more. Although, he truly desires for Su Tang to be separated from Lu Ping, but if it was done by Su Tang herself, then he would be a bit disappointed.

Now, what he sees in Su Tang was not just talent and hard work, but also an excellent moral character.

He wished Lu Ping could also see this. He wished Lu Ping would carefully think about how much Su Tang was sacrificing for him. He wanted Lu Ping to think what could he do for the good of Su Tang.

Mo Sen turned his body and looked straight towards Lu Ping who was standing at the side of the pathway. Su Tang also realized that the words said by Mo Sen were completely meant to be heard by Lu Ping. Su Tang smiled and hid behind Mo Sen's body. Then, she pulled off a sly face towards Lu Ping.

"En!" Lu Ping heavily nodded towards Mo Sen.

"Su Tang, Laoshi's instructions, have you heard them or not? You must continue on with twice the effort, only then, when faced with such a shameful alternative, you would be able to make the perfect selection: To not give up, no matter what!"

Mo Sen's expression turned ice-cold within an instant. Lu Ping's that

‘serious about the matter’ face, for him, seemed no different than a devil. He was wrong, he was delusional about the character of Lu Ping. ‘He has already burdened Su Tang for three years without any sense of shame. This guy who only knows ‘to take but never to give’, has he already made a decision to die while being coiled around Su Tang? He wishes to survive on the basis of Su Tang’s destruction? He is a completely despicable shameless blood-sucking devil, a parasite.’

Killing intent!

This time, Mo Sen’s heart was truly twitching with desire to kill. This despicable fellow, did he truly think no one could do anything to him? No, That was only because everyone still had a bit of hope from him. Now, to Mo Sen, it seemed like lenient rules of the institute were completely a kind of waste on his body. ‘This kind of a scum, he has no need to survive.’

A little bit of killing intent that had leaked out was immediately suppressed. This time, it didn’t alarm the birds. .

Because this time, Mo Sen was truly determined. He was not just showing momentary anger. The killing intent was very quickly concealed by him. He didn’t intend to immediately set things in motion. For Su Tang, he was determined to cause Lu Ping to die in rather a credible way.

“All right, you can leave.” Mo Sen waved his hands, indicating two of them to leave.

“Mo Sen laoshi, from the window up to here, Lu...” Su Tang once again raised this issue.

“It can be discussed again after he is able to pass this year’s Major Assessment.” Mo Sen stated.

“OK. Thank you, Mo Sen Laoshi.”

Su Tang happily jumped out of the Flower Garden. Mo Sen watched her walking away up to a certain distance together with Lu Ping. Then, he turned around and looked at the Lotus which was now turned into a Steamed Bun by being stepped upon. He pointed towards it with his

finger. The flower bud boiled from above the stalk. It only left behind an incision which was oozing out a fire like red-colored stalk juice. It felt like blood, soaking through the mud.

Chapter 2: Soul's Power

“Mo Sen Laoshi truly cares for you.” Lu Ping said while facing Su Tang as they walked on the pathway.

“True, Mo Sen Laoshi is a good person.” Su Tang said.

“Unusually good.” Lu Ping said.

“So, can you stop stepping on his plants in future?” Su Tang said.

“Actually, I am behaving with propriety. All I have done is help him remove the weeds.” Lu Ping said.

“Dormant Fire Lotus is also a weed?” Su Tang glanced at him out of the corner of her eye.

“Can’t say for certain!” Lu Ping’s vision, as if avoiding Su Tang, wandered over to the Flower Garden once again.

Two people chatted as they walked. They were drawing the attention of other students and even many teachers. Their position in the institute was a combination of the famous Bright Flower and Cowhide Candy. Originally, everyone wished to say Bright flower and Cow-dung. However, a student of high grade firmly opposed this idea. He felt cow dung although feels disgustingly ugly, it still provides nutrients for the flower. On the other hand, Cowhide candy just curls into a sticky lump, having no use at all. Such a description is much more apt.

There were some people who felt that this description was more apt for describing Lu Ping, but at the same time, there were also who liked Cowhide candy. This was basically slandering and disrespect of the Cowhide candy. However, regardless, this name was spread around. Ultimately, the people had no choice but to accept this setting.

Lu Ping and Su Tang were already accustomed to this kind of looks. They didn’t mind it too much. Unconsciously, the two individuals while casually walking on the pathway, reached the main building of the institute.

The building had altogether six floors. Till the fourth floor, all were

classrooms from first to fourth grades. The fifth floor was for the use of teachers while the sixth floor was Dean's personal watch. It is said that many collections of institute's rare-precious books and techniques were being concealed here.

"It makes no sense, how did I end up here?" He mumbled to himself.

"For how long, you haven't come? Shouldn't you reveal your face once in a while?" Su Tang said.

"All right....." Lu Ping's entire face looked like as if he was having a great deal of trouble. But, in the end, he did follow Su Tang inside.

The first floor revealed a lobby.

At the extreme left of the left side wall, rules of the Zhai Feng institute were being suspended. The content was fairly simple. Rules were genuinely acknowledged and treated as important by the students. Also, it contained only a single clause which was: Students who fail three Major Assessments will be expelled.

Rules being so simple and generous was only because when the institute was in its early stages of establishment, the Dean casually hung a six-lettered guideline, which was now present beside the rules.

' Strict with yourself, lenient with others.'

From the beginning, these six characters had always been the way in which the institute had carried itself. To speak the truth, the words "from the beginning" didn't count for a long time. The history of the institute was suspended down opposite to the six lettered guideline. Its content was even more simple than the rules.

In the entire continent, there were explicitly written accounts of the positions of the four hundred and forty-two institutes. Zhai Feng's position among these was not too inferior. However, it was certainly not above the long-established institutes. Considered as qualified to be called as long-established, there were only four major institutes. The head of Zhai Feng institute himself was from one of the four major institutes. He was a graduate from Black Tortoise institute's 327th year. After many

years of travelling outside, he returned back to his homeland and established the Zhai Feng institute. Twenty-four years had already passed since then. At present, the Dean was stationed at institute's sixth floor.

Institute's rules, institute's teachings and institute's history were written on the left side of the wall, while on the right side, there was a list of outstanding geniuses which have emerged during these twenty-four years. It included teachers as well as students; some were still alive while some were already dead. As for when it comes to the names which had shaken the heavens, there wasn't a single one of them. However, there were still four names which were often enthusiastically discussed among the students. The common point of all four of them was that they all went for Advanced Learning through recommendation of Zhai Feng institute and ultimately entered the four Major institutes.

Both were institutes, but the difference between them was like the difference between heaven and earth. Everybody knew that many heroes have emerged within the past several hundred years and most of them were from Four Major institutes.

Four Major institutes were destined to be out of ordinary. The four students who have entered the Four Major institutes, when they will emerge, they will certainly not use the identity of the Zhai Feng's students again. Even though it was like this, just by making into the four Major institutes, they were considered to be successful and glorious. In the Zhai Feng institute, they were considered to be the individuals who'd the most bright future ahead them.

Contents on the left and right side wall of the hall seemed already familiar to students. Very rarely would someone halt. Su Tang was planning to follow the staircase to the third grade. Suddenly, she felt the in-existence of the individual beside her. She turned her head around and found that Lu Ping had turned towards the classroom on the first floor.

"Where are you going?" Su Tang hurriedly shouted.

"I am a repeater, so obviously, I am going to the first-grade classroom. You go on." Lu Ping waved his hands.

“You are only too lazy to go upstairs....” Su Tang was speechless. Due to the liberty offered by Zhai Feng institute, even if a first grader wanted to go to a third-grade class, there won’t be any hindrance whatsoever. However, Lu Ping casually found the first-grade classroom and made his way in.

Quite a few students were already seated. For most of the people among these, Lu Ping would be considered as a strange face. But with such a casual atmosphere, everyone was already accustomed to not mind such strange faces too much. However, a few individuals after carefully confirming were eventually able to recognise.

“Lu Ping?”

“Who is that?”

“Cowhide Candy Lu Ping.”

“Oh, oh, oh!”

As soon as this nickname was brought up, everyone immediately followed up. Everybody’s gazes , carrying surprise, curiosity, wonder as well as disdain, were aimed at him.

“That Lu Ping, who is always holding on to the thighs of senior Su Tang?”

“Right, he failed the Major Assessment two times. He is still a first-grade student, the same grade as us.”

“Just because he doesn’t have any talent himself, he is desperately clinging to the thighs of senior Su Tang?”

“Truly Shameless.”

“Thinking that he would be taking this year’s assessment together with us makes me sick.”

“But this would be the last one time.”

“Senior Su Tang could be finally free of this scoundrel.”

All kinds of cold eyes, disdain and all kinds of taboo words were

included within the mockery aimed at Lu Ping. However, Lu Ping was as if he didn't hear any of it. He selected a seat by an empty corner at the window and immediately sat down.

Classroom bell rang up. The teacher had yet to arrive, however, the classroom immediately turned silent. Everyone returned to their respective positions and began to meditate in order to polish their Soul's Power.

The class arrangements at Zhai Feng institute is said to be an advanced experience brought back by the Dean from one of the four Bigs, the Black Tortoise institute. These common students, who might not even get a chance to touch the doors of the big four, just get too tense upon hearing a claim that had to do something with the big fours. Just by the sound of bell, they'd begun to cultivate without wasting a single bit of time.

Shortly after, teacher Luo Wei arrived in the classroom. Upon seeing such an attitude of the students, he was completely satisfied. Merely, at the corner of the classroom, there was a solitary figure looking out of the window and pondering about something. His mind was clearly not on cultivation.

Luo Wei stared at that corner for ages in hopes to get the attention of that student. The result was, the student didn't even turn his head. Luo Wei was beginning to get a bit angry, he was just about to personally go and warn that student, but the student finally gave up and turned his head.

As soon as he saw that face, Luo Wei turned his face to the other side and walked away.

Lu Ping. It turned out to be that garbage.

The individual who hadn't been seen throughout the entire year had finally shown up in his classroom. Luo Wei couldn't help but feel a little honoured. Just like any rotten wood can't be carved.... or all kinds of similar descriptions are simply made to describe Lu Ping. Saying anything to him would simply be a waste of energy. It would be much better to use this energy on the other children.

As his vision returned back to students who were putting serious efforts, his mood became much better. These children, although they are no geniuses, they, at least, know to strive hard. They know how to treasure this hard to come by opportunity. Liberal rules of the institute are precisely in order to provide even more opportunities for these children. The result, on the contrary, is that these rules are allowing this Lu Ping to act as a parasite. It's disgusting just to think about it.

After once again shooting a quick glare towards Lu Ping, Luo Wei didn't bother with him anymore. He turned to the teaching board and wrote down six characters in huge letters.

Infusion, Sound, Qi, Pivot, Strength, Essence.

Six big characters were arranged in a circle. There was an empty block inside the circle. It seemed like these six characters were pointing towards that blank space.

Student's spirits were roused, they already had a faint idea about what will be explained by the teacher. Although they still had not officially began to read this content, but due to the open-mindedness of the institute, they had already heard somewhat about this from high-grade students or through high-grade lectures. And now, they were finally going to study it for real.

Under the enthusiastic gazes of the students, Luo Wei was also smiling. In that blank space between six big characters, he wrote down the seventh character.

Excellence!

Seven souls. These seven souls are precisely the cause of the strength produced by the cultivators. However, during this one year, all the students had begun to perceive the power of six souls according to the given directions. These six souls are Infusion, Sound, Qi, Pivot, Strength and Essence.

What is this seventh soul? Why was it omitted in provided cultivation guidelines; all the students were totally curious about it. Although they had heard some theory through various means, but it couldn't compare to

the official explanation provided by their teacher.

“The Seventh soul, Excellence’s Soul!” Luo Wei said while pointing to the teaching board. Just by looking at the middle position in the layout, one could tell the importance of the Excellence’s soul. Students excitedly maintained silence.

“What are the previous six souls, I assume everyone already knows.” Luo Wei said.

Students nodded, six souls, in fact, are the counterparts of six intellects of an individual. Eyes, Ears, Nose, Tongue, Body and Thought. These six kinds of feeling are the means to observe. It is similar to the way in which the six souls works. This was not hard to understand. The cultivation of the six souls; Each soul was divided in partitions of six Heavenly Layers adding up to a total of thirty-six Heavenly Layers. One soul at the second Heavenly Layer or two souls at the first Heavenly Layer, both would be considered as in the realm of the second Heavenly Layer. However, an individual in the second Heavenly Layer would be much stronger than the two individuals in the first Heavenly Layer. Moreover, further cultivation would also be much more difficult.

Currently, for the first year students, the primary lesson was to perceive the Soul’s Power. Which soul, it didn’t matter. Just catching onto the existence of this kind of strength first was good enough. Furthermore, they were not asked to reach any realm.

This step, all first-grade students could easily achieve. There were many individuals who could even perceive the power of many souls. However, breakthrough to attain the first Heavenly Layer was exceedingly rare.

“Amongst us, everyone has already perceived the power of souls. For example, fellow student Ba Yong in this respect is outstanding. He is even able to perceive five kinds of Soul’s Power. On top of it, he has also broken through into the first Heavenly Layer of the second soul, Sound’s soul; Extremely outstanding.” Luo Wei kept on going. As his name was pointed out, Bai Yong showed somewhat a proud look. Other students also sent envious looks in succession towards him.

“However, even if you are outstanding like fellow student Ba Young, it is still too early for you to touch upon the Excellence’s soul.” Luo Wei’s words suddenly took a turn in direction.

“So, why do we need to mention the power of Excellence’s soul this early? Because it is the future. It is the final direction that comes after attaining six Heavenly Layers realm in all six souls.”

Luo Wei on one side was talking, while on the other side, he was circling the six big characters and arrowing them towards the Excellence’s soul.

“Linking Up of a soul. This term, I assume everyone here has heard about it. Linking Up a soul is the establishment of a connection between the first six souls and the Excellence’s soul. And for this to happen, there is a prerequisite, which is the sixth Heavenly Layer!” Once again, as he spoke, he marked Six on top of every arrowhead.

“Only after a soul has reached the sixth Heavenly Layer, it can be linked with Excellence’s soul. And after we link the meridians, our abilities would be able to enter into a completely new domain.” Luo Wei said.

“What is that? Laoshi!” Some students impatiently asked.

“Laoshi will demonstrate it for you all. Everyone should know that Laoshi has linked up Infusion’s soul, right?” As Luo Wei was speaking these words, he had already closed his eyes. When he opened his eyes again, the skin above his eyes was already covered with a layer of faint white light.

“Wa!” Students immediately began to shout in surprise. Luo Wei’s face revealed a tiny smile. Raising his eyes, he casually swept a glance and began to talk: “Fellow student Yuan Min, you only brought three packets of snacks? Isn’t it a bit insufficient?”

“Eh?” Yuan Min was completely startled as soon as her name was called. She couldn’t figure out why would teacher talk about this matter. Other students who had turned their head towards her were also confused, snacks? What snacks?

“Fellow Student Kang De, are your clothes buttoned up properly? No, I am not talking about the coat, rather the fourth button of your cream coloured inner vest.”

All students once again looked towards Kang De. Cream-coloured inner vest? Where is it? After astonished Kang De took off the coat, all people could see that there truly was a cream coloured vest inside and its third button was wrongly matched with the fourth buttonhole.

“Laoshi.....” Ba Yong was worthy to be called the smartest student among them. He was first one to react. He astonishingly looked at that white light in the eyes of Luo Wei.

“ That’s right. This is my newly obtained ability after linking up my Infusion’s soul, Penetrating Vision. That’s why Laoshi could see fellow student Yuan Min’s snacks under the table, or fellow student Kang De’s inner vest. Eh?” The moment Luo Wei spoke till here, his expression suddenly transformed. He wished to take the advantage of the situation and see through a few more things to increase his persuasiveness, but when his vision shifted and fell upon the corner, he saw a figure sneakily and cautiously moving along the wall.

Who is it? Luo Wei set his thoughts in motion. He was just about to intensify his Penetrating Vision, but he caught somebody’s neck being raised through the corner of his eyes.

“ Mo Sen Laoshi, what a coincidence. Huh?”

Mo Sen? Is he Mo Sen? At long last, Luo Wei’s Penetrating Vision finally intensified. That circular wall immediately appeared transparent like glass in the eyes of Luo Wei. He was able to clearly see through the wall. Sure enough, it was Mo Sen who was about to lose his head from fear.

Who spoke?

Lu Ping?

Lu Ping was lying on the window with half of his body protruding outside the window. The corner of his neck was raised with the same angle as Lou Wei had seen from the corner of his eyes. He was smiling as

he was speaking with Mo Sen.

Chapter 3: This is not Professional

Discovered !

Mo Sen's whole face was covered with shame and anger. Not too long after Lu Ping and Su tang had departed, he began to follow them closely. He intended to understand a little about the movements of Lu Ping in order to help him with his objective.

However, he had been unexpectedly discovered before being able to hear anything, and moreover, was actually discovered by such a garbage.

Mo Sen's old face turned thoroughly red. Previously, he believed that even though he is a gardener, taking care of this garbage won't consume any of his energy. Now it seems that in this kind of shady work such as following and eavesdropping, he is a bit too amateur.

He truly wanted to do it!

As he looked at that smiling face exploring out through the window's opening, he truly wished to just do it straight away.

However, he was unable to do so.

After all, he was a teacher and Lu Ping after all, was still a student of the academy. The more crucial point was that he was doing this to sweep away the hindrance of Su Tang. He didn't wish to leave behind such a shadow in Su Tang's heart. The best would be an accident.

How would he create an accident?

Mo Sen immediately had a new worry for himself. He discovered that this affair is not as simple as he had thought. Being a gardener, causing an accident to kill a person, he didn't have a single clue about such a thing.

" Mo Sen Laoshi." As he was lost in the thought, another body came out through the other side's window and suddenly shouted his name.

Oh damn!

Mo Sen's face immediately turned even more red. I was actually absent

mindful! If Lu Ping happened to be an enemy, an opponent, how many times I would have died without even being aware?

Voice was coming from ahead. Mo Sen moved forward to take a look. It was Luo Wei who was scouting out from the side window, and had shouted his name. His entire face was filled with doubt.

‘Oh! so it’s Luo Wei Laoshi.’ Mo Sen completely relaxed in the next moment.

So that’s the reason! he thought.

Luo Wei was an individual similar to him who’d linked up the Infusion’s soul. The difference being, the ultimate abilities produced by their cultivation were different.

His ability is known as Inspection. It can allow him to see signs of life inside the body of a living being. Therefore, he was able to make out that even though Dormant Fire Lotus was spoiled by being stepped upon, its metabolism inside the stem was still not harmed. He was also able to see the intensity of Strength’s soul inside Su Tang’s body was at sixth Heavenly Layer realm.

On the other hand, the ability of Luo Wei is Penetrating Vision. So, him being discovered outside is not hard to understand. He was discovered because of Luo Wei’s Penetrating Vision. Lu Ping was present at the window right beside his body. Of course, he would stick his head out to take a look.

“Mo Sen Laoshi, what brings you here?” Surprise was written across Luo Wei’s entire face. He couldn’t understand anything regarding the previous surprised and flustered behavior of Mo Sen.

“It’s nothing, I was merely passing through, I was just about to..... uh....go that way...”. Mo Sen is no assassin or pursuer. He is not even good at telling lies. He originally wanted to casually throw a destination, however, the moment he was about to speak his mind, he blanked out. He is quite familiar with the institute. However, when he was required to lie, he wasn’t able to come up with a single location’s name as a distraction in the end.

“Oh! In that case.....walk slowly.” Although Luo Wei couldn’t clear his suspicions, but he was unusually trusting towards Mo Sen. There must be a reason for it. Right? His thinking was he would ask him again when he has the opportunity.

“ Mo Sen Laoshi. See you again.” Lu Ping also bid his farewell towards Mo Sen.

“Yeah we will.” Mo Sen cooly(Tl: ‘cool dude’ sense) replied in one sentence. Then pretending to be calm, he positioned both of his hands behind his body and walked away.

“ So, we will continue with our class.” Luo Wei returned to the desk. He decided to temporarily put off Mo Sen’s matter. However, Lu Ping was still lying at the window’s opening. As he looked at Mo Sen who wished to quickly walk away but also didn’t dare to walk too quick thinking that if he was to turn again that would be too embarrassing, he couldn’t help himself from laughing out one time in the end.

“Lu Ping, what are you laughing at?” Luo Wei had just barely explained a few sentences and was interrupted again. This truly was a little more than he could bear. Originally, he absolutely didn’t wish to pay any attention to this name.

“ Sorry for the inconvenience, please continue.” Lu Ping immediately restrained his smiling expression. However, the other students were definitely not happy. They truly looked forward obtaining instructions from the teacher. However, the result was them being interrupted twice by this garbage of a student.

“People who don’t wish to hear the lecture, please go out. Don’t waste everyone’s precious time here!”

Having the reputation of the most outstanding student within the classroom, Ba Yong stood up and said. His manner of speaking was not too heavy. After all, he didn’t wish to resemble an evil person in front of the teacher and his classmates, though, his disdainful expression was not covered in the slightest.

“Right, please go out.” Some students also followed the suit.

“ Don’t bother us!”

“ Get Lost!”

Voices were rising more and more, and were also becoming more and more blunt. Who originally didn’t share this opinion were also left unable to do anything.

Luo Wei was unable to sit idle. Although he too despised Lu Ping, but due to him being a teacher, he felt like giving another chance to Lu Ping. He didn’t think that there was much need, but it was still his duty after all.

The result was, before Luo Wei could open his mouth, Lu Ping was already standing up.

Classroom suddenly turned silent. A kind of uneasiness rushed through every single individual’s heart. A lot of people couldn’t endure and shifted their gaze from Lu Ping’s body.

“ Are you talking to me?” Lu Ping asked. His tone was very tranquil. Those who a moment ago were heavily aroused, unexpectedly didn’t utter a single word. Everyone seemed to pretend that this doesn’t have anything to do with them. They were completely avoiding him, wishing that someone else would take care of it.

There was complete silence for a moment.

“ Yes!” Eventually, someone replied. It was first grade’s most remarkable student Ba Yong. As Lu Ping’s question was faced off, everybody felt themselves relax a bit.

Being under everybody’s attentive gaze, Ba Yong felt as if he had rescued the world. He completely forgot that what he did was merely giving an answer to a simple question. Furthermore, he also didn’t realize that when he’d replied “Yes”, he was supporting his body by having his right hand being placed on the table behind him.

He opened his eyes wide and glared at Lu Ping. Lu Ping nevertheless smiled and nodded his head.

“ Ok. ” He said.

Then supporting his body by placing both of his hands on the window's ledge, he jumped out.

He truly left like this?

Students stared blankly for a good while. They originally believed that since Lu Ping had received this kind of contempt, he would probably set off a whirlwind or speak spiteful words. And what actually happened was that he ran away with tail between his legs?

“ Truly a garbage person.” Someone muttered.

“Yes. He doesn't have even a little bit of courage.”

“ Coward.”

More and more voices were resounding. They were completely despising Lu Ping and were getting delighted by doing so. It was clear that the first impression of Lu Ping was the last for them, no matter what Lu Ping did, it would remain equivalent to the behavior of a garbage person.

However, Luo Wei was still in a daze, what was that just now?

For the students, it was only an uncomfortable feeling as if they were feeling sick. However for him, although it was only momentary, he felt pressure.

Where did it come from? From Lu Ping?

Luo Wei didn't have enough time to clearly perceive that feeling before it completely disappeared.

Students were still commenting and still looking down on Lu Ping. However, Luo Wei once again walked up to the corner window and looked outside. He saw Lu Ping, walking all alone on the road. He again tried to use Infusion's power to find some peculiarities, but he couldn't find anything.

“ Did someone passed by? Or was it someone from the classrooms above?”

Luo Wei looked in all four directions, then again looked up towards the second floor and the third floor, but was still unable to find anything.

Chapter 4: Cost of Tardiness

Mo Sen was carefully controlling his steps. He was trying his best to not walk too quick, looking straight ahead and not even sparing a single glance to his left or right.

It was truly a humiliation for him to be discovered previously. However at present, Mo Sen felt that his calm appearance could, at least, score ninety points. But a part of him was aware that this 'ninety point' appearance of him was instead causing his walking to appear very unnatural. It even caused Lu Ping to let out a laugh which later on sparked a crisis in the classroom. .

Mo Sen never anticipated that he was about to see the individual who was supposed to be left far behind. As soon as he turned his body and began to think about what to do next, he saw Lu Ping coming out from the classroom's window.

Loathsome brat, he is escaping in the middle of a lecture!

Mo Sen was furious, he completely ignored the fact Lu Ping actually never even go to the class in the first place. In these three years, it was already an extremely rare occasion.

However, as he watched Lu Ping walking on the road with no other soul in sight, he suddenly felt his mind reeling.

This....seems like my chance?

Students at this time are in class and there are very few active people present in the institute. Using this opportunity, I should ask Lu Ping to come to a desolate place. No, could I reduce the risk even more?

Right, it has to be this way.

A plan was forming in Mo Lin's brain at a lightning fast speed. He accelerated his speed and went around a big tree to adjust his frame of mind. Then, he began to head directly towards Lu Ping as if nothing was amiss.

"Eh? Mo Sen Laoshi. We meet again." Lu Ping made a hand gesture as a

greeting, implying as if the situation was very unexpected.

“ You are not in the class? Why are you here?” Mo Sen said with wrinkled brows. This was planned by him in advance, supposedly a good opening scene. He seemed unusually natural and unusually fair.

“Oh. Students said: who don't want to hear, get out of the class. So I left.” Lu Ping said.

“Huh....” Hearing such an honest answer that can leave people dumbfounded, Mo Sen forgot what he planned to say next.

“Incompetent and Ignorant!” He eventually thought he should probably say these words as these words seemed to be harsh and criticizing at the same time.

(Tl: Actually he used an idiom which roughly translates as Incompetent and Ignorant.)

Lu Ping smiled.

“ Anyway, you have nothing to do. Help me for a moment and I will forgive you a little for spoiling my Dormant Fire Lotus.” Mo Sen was beginning his plan.

“ Oh, ok. What is the matter?” Lu Ping asked.

Hooked the bait so easily! Mo Sen was very proud of himself. He immediately said “ Ten o'clock. No, ten and a half o'clock actually. Come to the Flower Garden in the North West region. You know where?”

“ I know.”

“Hm, ten and a half. Don't forget.” Mo Sen again reminded.

“ Actually, I don't have anything better to do right now. Wouldn't it be better to go now?” Lu Ping said.

Hearing an unexpected reply made Mo Sen a bit panicky. Of course going now won't do, he needed to accomplish everything in the form of an accident.

“ No need!” Mo Sen denied it in an unquestionable tone of voice. “ You

are not required yet. Come again at ten thirty. Later.”

“ Then.....ok” Lu Ping hesitated a little but eventually accepted Mo Sen’s arrangements.

Mo Sen let out a long sigh in his mind. “Ok, Later.”

“Yes, goodbye Mo Sen Laoshi.”

Mo Sen nodded a little. As Lu Ping was departing, Mo Sen followed him with his eyes for as long as his figure could be seen. Then, he turned around and dashed towards the Northwest region. This garden is the strangest location in the Zhai Feng institute. Garden’s planning is also not too good. But that is the work of a Landscape Gardener. Mo Sen is a Gardener. Although these names differ by just one word, their work differs a lot. What he excels in is, to grow and nurture all kinds of plants and flowers. This is not particularly a well-received garden. However, Mo Sen frequently comes here to do some odd cultivation(Tl: plants) experiments. He is very familiar with this place.

During this time phase, there is no way that there would be people here.

After hurrying up to the garden, he confirmed the time with a quick look. Nine thirty-five, and as he did he was even more convinced about how perfectly he had shifted the time from ten to ten-thirty.

Fifty-five minutes should be enough, right?

Mo Sen’s brain was already working on a plan to create an accident. He decided to make use of an observing pavilion inside the garden. This pavilion had already survived too long. Nobody is likely to suspect an accident caused by the collapse of this pavilion. He would modify this pavilion in accordance with his requirements.

After studying the composition of observing pavilion, he began to set his hands in motion. He was moving his hands like a busy bee while his head was fully covered with sweat, however, the time was flying away. After accomplishing the first section, he took a glance at the time.

Ten Fifteen!

Forty minutes have passed just like that?

Mo Sen was greatly alarmed. The rate of time consumption had far exceeded his imagination. He completely overestimated his capability to pull down a building. He also didn't dare to use Soul's Power for assistance as it would leave behind traces.

15 minutes! It seems a little too late now. However what one can achieve depends on his own efforts!

Mo Sen didn't give up. Instead, he accelerated his movements. His efficiency was increased by a lot, but making it on time would still be extremely difficult.

Perhaps, that youngster would be late?

Mo Sen was unwilling to give up halfway. As he considered every kind of possibility, he decided not to stop. He was constantly paying attention to the incoming road. Ten and a half o'clock: Lu Ping was still nowhere to be seen. Mo Sen was ecstatic. This unreliable guy, he will definitely arrive late. Come a little more late, five minutes and I could finish this.

After five minutes: Wait it's still a bit wrong. But he still hasn't arrived. I have a little more time, better correct it once more. Come more late you fool!

After ten minutes: But it's still a bit wrong. However, the guy has not arrived yet. Very well, you will pay for your own tardiness. This really was an exquisite kind of sarcasm

Fifteen minutes: Huff! Finished. This guy is actually fifteen minutes late. Truly unreliable, just because of this reason, he has wasted his opportunity to live, truly sad.

After accomplishing everything he required, he let out a long sigh. Although he was completely covered with sweat, but he wasn't tired at all. He began to eagerly wait for Lu Ping's arrival, expecting that he would be smashed by the collapse of the pavilion.

Wait, Wait and more Wait.

Mo Sen felt that his plan to trap Lu Ping was extremely perfect. He was extremely pleased with himself. Ninety points! He once again rewarded his plan with a score of ninety.

However, within a blink of an eye, it was already eleven o'clock. It was already half an hour past the agreed time, but there were still no signs of Lu Ping.

Truly disappointing, he doesn't keep his words. Moreover, he even disrespects the time....

Mo Sen continued to curse Lu Ping in his mind. Another half an hour, Lu Ping still hasn't shown up.

Don't tell me.....this guy assumed ten thirty o'clock as in night's ten thirty.

As he carefully recalled, he realized that he'd never really emphasized early morning.

Wait till evening's ten thirty? That sounds too stupid. I should come again in the evening. However, there is yet a simple possibility, if he somehow shamelessly comes after an hour. Then?

I should probably wait for another hour!

After pondering in different directions, Mo Sen finally came to this conclusion. Thus an hour later, Mo Sen left the Northwest Garden starved and tired. Even his legs were trembling as he walked on the pathway that leads to the institute's dining hall.

Old age and unremarkable physical strength. Although he is in the realm of seventeen Heavenly Layers combinedly made by adding up layers of different souls, his Strength's soul which is essentially related to the true essence of physical body is not even at the first Heavenly Layer. This is hereditary, though. His whole family's perception towards Strength's soul is exceptionally slow.

He didn't dare to use soul's power before and had solely relied on his physical body. This definitely wasn't easy on his body. At first, a feeling of excitement was supporting him, but after two hours of wait, this support

had disappeared long ago.

At this moment, all Mo Sen desired was to have his fill and then take a nap on the beautiful earth. However, just by chance, he stumbled upon Lu Ping and Su Tang as they were walking out of the dining hall.

“Lu Ping!” Mo Sen suddenly regained some spirit.

“ Mo Sen Laoshi.” Both individuals simultaneously paid their respects.

“ I suppose, you didn’t forget the matter I entrusted you, right?”

“ Of course, I haven’t.” Lu Ping said.

Mo Sen’s mind relaxed. Looks like this youngster truly thought that I was talking about evening’s time.

“ Don’t Forget.” Mo Sen was not willing to say anything more than this. All he wanted to do was to eat and then go to sleep. But, as soon as he intended to leave, he heard Su tang saying:

“ What matter?”

Disaster!!

Mo Sen’s heart suddenly tightened.

Great idea! Why I had to open my mouth in front of Su tang. Now that Su Tang has asked, Lu Ping would obviously spill out the beans, and then, there would be an accident in the evening, wouldn’t it allow people to make some connections?

What should I explain to go around it?

As Mo Sen was deeply weighing his options, just at that time, some people could be seen shouting and running on the pathway. “ It’s not good !”

“What?” Yelling and commotion attracted the attention of a lot of people. They went after the source to make some inquiries.

“ Pavilion at the Northwest region’s 18th park has collapsed.”

“ Oh! Was someone injured?”

“ Surprisingly no one was injured. However, after inspection, Master Huo Fu said that someone damaged the structure of the pavilion.”

“ Eh? Who would do such a thing?”

“ Currently unknown. The investigation is still ongoing, though. Master Huo Fu said that the damage to the structure was not done with the intention of collapsing the pavilion, rather was done to fulfill a different purpose by exploiting the collapse of the pavilion.”

“ What could it be? Oh! To injure someone.”

“ Yeah, you bet.”

“ There is actually such a person within the institute.”

“Yeah, it’s too terrible. Who could it be?”

“ Did you see someone going over that side in the morning?”

“I don’t know.”

The news was spreading. Everyone had different opinions about it. Students were commenting on it. Discussions were going on everywhere around Mo Sen.

“Mo Sen Laoshi, Mo Sen Laoshi?”

“Huh!” Mo Sen suddenly returned to the earth and discovered that Su Tang has managed to come beside him at some point in time. He doesn’t know how many times she had called out to him prior to this.

“ What happened to you? You look quite bad.” Su Tang asked in a deeply concerned voice.

“ I....I am all right. Just a little tired from working too much early morning. I just need some rest.”

Mo Sen said.

“ Then, should I see you back?”

“No need, no need. Just do your own work!”

“Ok, then take care of yourself.”

‘Take care’, ‘Take care’, Mo Sen repeated these two words in his mind. For him, meaning implied by these two words was completely different. How should I take care of this matter? Should I go and confess? I was doing it in order to help Su Tang by getting rid of a degenerate, the institute would be considerate. No! If it was from the perspective of an individual, then it might have worked. But from the institute’s perspective, just because someone wanted to eliminate the influence of one student on others, he would eliminate the student itself? This is completely groundless on the basis of moral ethics. I might have gone too far!

While he was losing his mind, Lu Ping’s voice suddenly arrived in his ears from behind “ Mo Sen Laoshi, should I still go to the 18th garden?”

Chapter 5: Discipline Squadron

“No need....” Mo Sen replied Lu Ping’s question without turning his head and then quickly disappeared. He didn’t even eat.

“What’s going on?” Su Tang said. From Mo Sen’s uneasy appearance, anyone could make out that something was amiss.

“He was seriously worried.” Lu Ping repeatedly nodded his head to show his agreement.

“Should we go and take a look one more time?” Su Tang was somewhat anxious. She had often seen harsh and strict Mo Sen, but this kind of scared out of wits appearance? It had never happened before.

“Do I really have to? Seeing me will only make him more depressed.” Lu Ping

“Why did he want you to go to the 18th garden?” Su Tang once again raised this question. The result was before Lu Ping could provide an explanation, he was interrupted once again. Three people were blocking Lu Ping and Su Tang’s path. They seized the opportunity aroused from duo’s halt and encircled them.

Zhai Feng institute doesn’t require a dressing code. However, these three individuals were wearing the exact same black-colored clothing. On their left hand was a mark engraved in golden colors with silver boundary: ‘纪’(Discipline).

Discipline Squadron!

It was a team made up of students which helped to maintain discipline inside the institute. Similar discipline groups could also be found in other institutes, however, in Zhai Feng institute, this squadron was rather an awkward existence.

Reason being, the current rules inside Zhai Feng institute are not strict even a little bit. Arriving late at classes or leaving early would be considered as activities that are required to be seriously monitored in other institutes, however, no one paid any attention to such things in Zhai

Feng institute. Most of the students didn't even know about the dealings of the Discipline Squadron.

However, Lu Ping wasn't unfamiliar with Discipline Squadron in the least. Just a single glance at the three individuals who were blocking the path ahead, and he skillfully pulled off a helpless face.

“What is the matter again, three seniors?” Lu Ping asked.

“What did you say?”

The individual in the middle of the three was called Xi Fan. He was currently a fourth-grade student at the Zhai Feng institute, and also the captain of the Discipline squadron. For some reason, he became extremely angry as soon as he heard the word ‘again’. He'd been closely watching Lu Ping ever since he became the captain of the Squadron in his second grade. Since then, almost three years had already passed.

During these three years, Lu Ping hardly went to any classes and, even more, failed two Annual Assessments. Only because Zhai Feng institute had such lenient rules, this kind of existence is possible to be tolerated. For such a bad-reputed garbage, Xi Fan always believed that it was the duty of the Discipline Squadron to find something against him that can lead to his banishment from the institute. Apart from failing the Major Assessment three times, there were still a few other untouchable bottom-lines of the Zhai Feng institute.

However, three years....

It had been approximately three years since Xi Fan began following Lu Ping, but surprisingly, he was unable to discover a single usable information against Lu Ping. For other people, Lu Ping was nothing more than a garbage, but he couldn't even deal with a garbage; How could he let it down his throat?

However, there was not much time remaining for him. Annual Assessment is approaching, and this time, he would graduate from the institute whereas Lu Ping would be banished from the institute according to the rules. Regardless of how you look at it, there won't be another chance for him to wash away the incompetence of Discipline Squadron

from the eyes of people.

Within a week, he got to find something against Lu Ping.

For Xi Fan, this matter was even more important than passing the Major Assessment.

Now that he had finally found an opportunity, he won't allow Lu Ping to escape, and thus was keeping a close eye on the former.

However, Lu Ping continued with his helpless expression:

"We are so familiar with each other. Don't hesitate to ask me anything."

"Don't try to act cozy with me." Xi Fan strictly reprimanded. "Garden no. 18's pavilion, is it your doing?"

"Of course, it's not." Lu Ping said.

"Then why some people have seen you going in that direction at such a time, usually that area is a desolate place." Xi Fan said.

"Who saw me?"

"Still trying your luck?" Xi Fan coldly laughed and waved his hands. A person emerged forward from within the crowd of students who had flocked around and were watching the scene.

"Little Bao." Lu Ping greeted the person who just emerged.

Upon hearing the greeting, student Little Bao stared blankly; There was no way for him to be familiar with Lu Ping, they had never even exchanged words. Him knowing Lu Ping was not strange, although Lu Ping was reputed to be cowhide candy, but it was still a reputation nonetheless. The individuals with a name in Zhai Feng institute could be counted on fingers, while on the other hand, he, Wei Bao, is nothing more than a common student, it was really pretty surprising that Lu Ping was able to recognize him. Not only did he recognize him, he even called him "Little Bao", as if they were pretty close.

"You two know each other?" Xi Fan was also astonished.

“No.” Both individuals simultaneously replied.

No, with such an affectionate greeting? Xi Fan was suspicious, but he couldn't dwell on this point for now. He indicated Wei Bao to speak.

“ At the intersection of the pathways at Northwest Area, I saw Lu Ping coming from the east and going towards the North direction. It only leads to Garden no. 18's region.” Wei Bao's entire face appeared as if he was making a solemn vow.

“ This early morning, you are the only person to go in that direction. You still have to say something?” This time, Xi Fan was truly confident. He had never been this confident before. Three years, and this time, he truly felt that the distance between him and his objective is as close as it could get.

“ Me alone? That's impossible, are you sure that your intelligence hasn't missed something?” Lu Ping, however, was starting to get suspicious.

“ What do you think?” Xi Fan was sure that Lu Ping was just trying to annoy him. Xi Fan coldly laughed as he didn't mind taking pleasure in this moment, after all, he had waited only too long for this moment.

“ You saw me going over there. Is that true?” Lu Ping suddenly started to question Wei Bao

“Yes.” Wei Bao also had full confidence in himself.

“ I also saw you.” Lu Ping nodded his head.

“ Huh?” Wei Bao blankly stared. Some uneasiness flashed in his eyes.

“ At that time, although you were properly hiding, but I was still able to make you out. You were with a girl student, I will refrain from mentioning her name. You saw me going and gave me a quick glance, but you never paid any attention to me, because at that time you were too busy. When your face was just 1.7 centimeters apart from the right side of her face, you closed your eyes. Your enchanted face closed the distance, then did you open your eyes?

“ I did not!” Wei Bao blurted out without thinking.

“ Didn’t open your eyes, so how did you know whether I went towards north, or towards west?” When Lu Ping said ‘or towards west’ his face was showing an expression as if he had been completely wronged.

“ Your this time ’s witness is also unreasonable.”

Xi Fan clenched his teeth in rage. This facial expression, he had seen it too many times in the course of these three years. That ‘also’ word was also extremely ear-piercing. For once again, his face was inscribed with ‘incompetent’.

Looking at that hideous expression on Xi Fan’s face, Lu Ping was still calm and unmoved as before, however, Wei Bao, on the other hand, was losing his mind. Wei Bao’s reply was originated from his own stupidity, he couldn’t provide any explanation for ‘going towards west’ part.

“II was just helping you!”

“ Get Lost!”

Xi Fan doesn’t have much to say. He clearly understood the thought process of Wei Bao. There were too many people in the institute who despised Lu Ping. Most of the people’s first impression of this incident was that it was done by Lu Ping. Xi Fan also believed that this was the case, but as a member of Discipline Squadron, he couldn’t make further deductions without any hard evidence. He couldn’t just biasedly fabricate something casually like Wei Bao tried to do. Although he had been carefully watching Lu Ping for three years without getting any results, although he was burdened with a tag of ‘Incompetent’, he still never thought even for a second to smear the name of Lu Ping through cooked-up evidence. This was his bottom line, this was something he would never tolerate as a member of Discipline Squadron.

At this moment, his disgust towards Wei Bao outstripped his hatred towards Lu Ping. But after a moment, the hatred again returned.

“ Six more days to go, I will keep a close eye on you.” Xi Fan said turning towards Lu Ping.

“ Thanks for the trouble Senior.” Lu Ping smiled.

“ Go.” Xi Fan turned and left with the other two members of Discipline Squadron. Other students also dispersed. As the saying is ‘ There is no lack of people who despise you’, some were looking down on Lu Ping while some were looking down on Xi Fan.

“ Senior Xi Fan truly is...” Su Tang also couldn’t come up with words to describe Xi Fan. Xi Fan’s honesty was unbiased. However when it was directed towards Lu Ping, he believed in ‘First impression is the strongest’ more than any other person. For approximately three years, he had been the person who made the most amount of contact with Lu Ping excluding Su Tang, and what it resulted in was, Xi Fan’s hate towards Lu Ping kept getting more and more.

“ Fortunately, he is just about to graduate.” Lu Ping let out a sigh.

“ What did Mo Sen Laoshi asked you to do in the 18th garden. Does the Matter of Pavilion has something to do with you two?”

Su tang was beginning to make some extremely precise connections.

“ It’s not just us. It has something to do with you too.”

“ Me too?” Su Tang blankly stared at Lu Ping.

“That’s why I said, Mo Sen Laoshi truly cares about you!” While Lu Ping was speaking, Su Tang continued to maintain her blank look, however, she was already aware of something, and following it, the expression on her face gradually turned into something like between a laugh or cry.

“ I don’t know whether he gave up or not at this point, though.”

Give up?

Mo Sen still hadn’t thought so far ahead. Matter of the Pavilion had caused his mind to be unsteady. Only after hearing the discussions of the students did his mind calm down a little. According to the discussions, currently, any sort of clue is yet to be discovered, though, he had heard several students confidently claiming the culprit being Lu Ping.

Mo Sen naturally knew that it wasn’t Lu Ping. Although he hadn’t decided to confess at this point of time, but he was also not willing to

hear some other person being turned into his scapegoat, even if that person happened to be Lu Ping.

When he harshly scolded several students for blaming Lu Ping, they were not ashamed, on the contrary, they were actually astonished as if they were having a hard time to understand the logic behind why would someone try to defend Lu Ping? Right after he departed, students turned their heads and looked at him as if trying to figure out what kind of drug had he eaten today.

What should be done about it?

Pondering about this matter while scratching his head, Mo Sen arrived at the Flower Garden that was near Lu Ping's small house. Out of the twenty-two flower gardens in Zhai Feng institute, this one was his favorite. He had always felt that the flowers and plants in this garden have a kind of special vitality, always growing with a special essence.

However as soon as he arrived at the entrance of the flower garden, he saw an individual crouching inside the flower garden. Individual's entire body was dressed in green clothes and his head was covered by a straw hat.

Mo Sen rushed inside, hoping to figure out what was that individual trying to do.

"It's me." Individual stood up and turned his body while removing his hat as he heard the commotion. The individual seemed to be just a youngster of seventeen or eighteen years. Constantly tanning in the sun didn't leave any sort of beautiful colored skin on his body, on the contrary, it left behind some sunburn injuries. At the moment, he was exposing a mouth full of white teeth as he was smiling towards Mo Sen.

"It's you young fellow, but how did you manage to come over so fast?" On one side, Mo Sen was delighted, while on the other side, he was astonished.

"I was originally going through this road. I was thinking about coming here, then I received your letter."

“ Then it is truly fortunate.”

“ So, what is the problem that I can help you with?”

“ Actually, it is not some ** trouble, but I managed to cause too big of a commotion. So I was thinking, you are more professional for this kind of matter.” Mo Sen said. The events he’d encountered today, had caused him to thoroughly understand that: Being Professional is very important!

Chapter 6: Frail Assassin

Mo Lin.

Mo Sen's nephew. Just like the position of Zhai Feng institute among many institutes, Mo family is also a nothing-out-of-ordinary family among countless families on the continent. Neither their blood vessels are extraordinary, nor they have a single family vocation. They don't have fixed unified rules towards the clan's future. In fact, they resemble an ordinary extended family. This 'nothing out of ordinary' family is reputed to carry a burden and every person has his own way of living. They just share affection with each other due to possessing same blood vessels, that's all.

Mo Sen is a Gardener at Zhai Feng institute, on the other hand, Mo Lin is actually an Assassin, more precisely a Hitman. Mo Sen had always been anxious that he wouldn't be neat enough in this kind of work. Therefore, he had called his assassin nephew for help in advance. Now that Mo Lin has arrived, he doesn't need to worry about that stuff since Mo Lin's methods specifically target assassination.

"Where is the target?" Mo Lin is an individual who greatly treasures the time, therefore after initial greetings, he wished to get on with work right away.

"He lives just there." Mo Sen pointed to a small wooden house behind Mo Lin's body.

"Currently, no one is there, though.." Mo Lin displayed his professional qualities. He had probably surveyed all the conditions surrounding this region before settling on his current position.

"That's right." Mo Sen said

"Then it makes the matter very simple." Mo Lin said while turning his body, and began to walk in big steps immediately after. He arrived in front of small wooden house's window. The window was comparatively high. He had already confirmed the situation inside the house, he didn't need to check it again. He placed both of his hands on the ledge and

pushed himself up. Just the very next moment, the charisma of an assassin completely vanished from his body.

“ Uncle come and give me a hand!” Mo Lin shouted. He had already tried to climb up two times, but eventually, he had no other choice than to powerlessly slide down. Ultimately, he had to turn towards his relative to ask for assistance. Mo Sen was also helpless. If one must label a quality upon Mo family’s blood vessels, then perhaps labeling utterly disappointing physical stamina is the most fitting. It would be much better to rather not mention such a quality.

Mo Sen looked all around, after ensuring that there was no other person in sight, he quickly went forward to lend a hand. Eventually, he managed to push Mo Lin inside the window. Immediately after that, he heard Mo Lin’s depressed shout “Ah! what a guy, why would he not close the door before going out?”

Mo Sen’s heart ceased a little. He only knew that this nephew of his is in this kind of work, as for how proficient he was, he had no idea. At first, Mo Sen felt that he would be pretty reliable, but now, Mo Sen was not too sure about it. .

“ Don’t sweat on details. What are you planning to do?” Mo Sen was standing up on his tips, trying to make out every detail about what Mo Lin was trying to do.

“ Very Simple.” Mo Lin had already begun to set his plan in motion. He arrived at the bedside and fished out a forceps from his right side pocket. Then he carefully inserted it into the leather bag inside the left lapel of his robe and took out a needle.

“ This is the poison I extracted from Oleander and Morning Mandrake. The amount in this needle is enough to kill the entire first-grade students of your Zhai Feng institute. Now...” Mo Lin was talking while placing the poison needle under the mattress . After placing the poison needle, he stepped back and double checked. Then he nodded his head in satisfaction.

There was no need to ask, Mo Sen had already realized Mo Lin’s plan.

Simple but very practical. Who would be able to discover the poison needle which had already disappeared in between the bed sheets? At least, Mo Sen couldn't find it with his sixth Heavenly Layer of Infusion's soul.

"Uncle, help me." Mo Lin returned to the window and asked assistance from Mo Sen who was standing outside.

"Why don't you walk out from the door?" Mo Sen said.

"No need to leave unnecessary traces. It is comparatively better." When Mo Lin was speaking, half of his body was already outside the window.

The plan was practical, thought process behind it was also very thorough. However, just due to the clumsiness in crawling down the window, the charisma of an assassin was thoroughly destroyed. Fortunately, Mo Sen is a family member, he can understand Mo Lin's difficulties. If it was any other employer, then perhaps he would have long lost his faith in Mo Lin.

"After midnight, I will come to collect the needle. Then I will wait to collect his corpse!" Mo Lin said while sweeping his clothes which were disheveled due to crawling.

"Pay attention to the time when you leave." Mo Sen again reminded. Zhai Feng has very lenient rules. But, a murder of student will not be taken lightly. It will be thoroughly investigated. And Mo Lin, a stranger at Zhai Feng institute, was bound to arouse suspicions.

"Uncle you can be at ease. When I will come to retrieve the needle, I will also take care of the aftermath. No one would be able to discover that his death is abnormal." As Mo Lin was smiling, the charisma of an assassin which was missing when he was crawling down the window, was once again on display. After he was finished saying his words, he turned and walked towards a direction where no one was in sight. After a short moment, he completely disappeared from the vision of Mo Sen.

Is it possible to be over like this? After watching Mo Lin disappearing from his sight, Mo Sen once again turned his gaze towards the small house. Very soon, there won't be that annoying existence in this flower

garden, the flower garden he was most fond of. As he thought till here, Mo Lin realized that he didn't have the kind of expectation that he'd in the early morning when he was at the pavilion, instead, his heart was heavy.

“ I hope Su Tang won't be too sad...” Mo Sen thought and bent down to take care of flowers and plants. Only this could make his heart calm down.

After midnight.

Only a handful of stars were shining in the sky, however, from the perspective of a person who had attained second Heavenly Layer in Infusion's soul, the starlight from this handful of stars was enough to see everything clearly.

A silhouette was softly moving through the Flower Garden. Although its footsteps were producing sound, but fortunately, this sound was being mixed up with the sound produced by the rustling of the wind blowing through the Flower Garden. Someone with an amazing perception of Sound's soul can easily make out the difference, however, Mo Lin knew that the person inside the small house didn't have any kind of perception whatsoever. Not to mention, that person at present would be a dead man already.

Even though it was like this, Mo Lin was still doing his utmost to move as quietly as possible. After arriving below the window, he bent down to lay down two bricks underneath it to serve as a support to place his feet.

This truly was an eyesore. However, with such a physique, Mo Lin was also helpless. He naturally envied those with outstanding agility. Those guys can come and go like wind. However, the body of the descendants of Mo family is just too slow in terms of perceiving Strength's soul.

Nothing can be done about it. He can just rely on wisdom to solve the issue.

He stepped on two bricks and placed both of his hands on the window's ledge. Although it was mostly dark inside the house, but just a single light ray was enough to enable someone with a perception of second Heavenly

Layer in Infusion's soul to see things in dark without any difficulties.

Mo Lin watched the target motionlessly lying on the bed. However, at this moment, his much stronger and much sharper perception of sixth Heavenly Layer in Pivot's soul was providing him with much precise information.

Not right.

Temperature is not right.

He hadn't touched the body, but with just this much of a separation, Mo Lin could easily sense the temperature emitted out by the target's body. This guy must have recently lied down, otherwise, it is impossible to emit this kind of temperature after dying at midnight.

Circumstances were a bit wrong, he was just one step away from confirmation. Or...

Mo Lin was still hesitating, however, at this moment, the figure on the bed moved.

Damn!

Mo Lin had taken precautions in his mind. Although he was hesitating, but he had never let his guard down. Target's body just made a tiny moment and it was already sensed by him. He backed down and ran away without the slightest hesitation.

Why didn't the injected poison needle display its effect? Was it discovered?

Mo Lin was completely confident in his poison, no matter who the target was. The only explanation was that the target wasn't injected with poison.

He never turned his head since he'd started to run. He only tried to hear the movements coming from behind his body. His Pivot's soul was the most formidable one, being already at the sixth Heavenly Layer. Moreover, regarding this soul, he had already attained the realm of linking up with Excellence's soul. It allowed him to possess much

stronger abilities. Apart from his Strength's soul, his other five souls have also reached some definite realms. His Sound's soul has already attained the third Heavenly Layer. At such a distance, no movement could pass his ears unnoticed.

Body stood up.....Down from the bed.....Reached window's opening....Jumped out!

Behind Mo Lin, a sound of body jumping down echoed. Surprisingly, the target has come out to chase!

Mo Lin couldn't help himself from turning his head back to take a glance. This useless garbage doesn't seem to be that useless as it was in Mo Sen uncle's words. At least, he has a lot of courage, even if this courage makes him very stupid.

Since Mo Lin was a member of a family whose strength was very weak and being a Perceiver, he naturally possessed a lot of methods at his command to fight anytime. Compared to ordinary people, his methods were also a level higher. This guy clearly doesn't have any soul's power whatsoever and he still dares to chase, this is precisely what they say 'Ignorant fears nothing.'

Since he doesn't have any perception, this youngster doesn't realize how formidable his target is.

Should I directly kill him?

Not possible.

Although Mo Lin was capable of it, but he had been repeatedly warned by Mo Sen that the death must be an accident, an accident which no one will find abnormal.

"To think that I have to use that plan in order to deal with an ordinary individual." Mo Lin was feeling apprehensive in his mind.

Chapter 7: Mistake

Twenty steps, turn left, run straight, avoid obstacles.....

Under faint dark starlight, Mo Lin's movements seemed extremely smooth. He could clearly see everything, and moreover also seemed deeply familiar with this route. However, the sound of the footsteps behind his body seemed like as if the legs were heavily pounding on the ground. Both feet and both legs of the individual behind were roughly brushing against plants and flowers. It caused Mo Lin to feel sorry for Mo Sen.

Although it was this way, the distance between both sides was constantly being pulled together. Although Mo Lin's vision was extremely clear and running very stable, his speed was not too quick. The movements of the individual behind were although staggering, but his momentum was sufficient to catch up.

But, all of this was within the calculations of Mo Lin. His selected plan was precisely in the light of such unusual circumstances.

While hearing the footsteps behind his body, Mo Lin began to silently count.

Five....Four...Three....Two....One...

Right here!

Bam!

The figure chasing behind his body suddenly sank down into the ground in an awe-inspiring way. Mo Lin had prepared a trap here beforehand. This was the plan he opted for. Offense Through Defense.

"Ha Ha" Mo Lin delightedly laughed and turned his direction. He carefully verified that individual in front of him is the same Lu Ping whom Mo Sen talked about. This trap was not as simple as just being a hole, or it could be even said that it was absolutely not a hole, rather it was like a swamp. It was a region of loosely scattered drifting sand. As soon as Lu Ping ran through here, he immediately went deep into the

ground. At the moment, only his head was above the ground. He was incapable of making of any movement.

“Wonderful. huh?” Mo Lin walked closer and crouched in front of Lu Ping’s head. Pointing towards a grass beside Lu Ping’s face, he said “ This is called earthworm grass. During the period of growth, its roots will cause the soil to become exceptionally soft. However, what you are seeing now is a special breed grown by me. It grows very quick and also possess very strong propagation power. This was planted by me in the afternoon. Take a look, it has already covered so much area. It is wide, deep and in a few moments, your head will also sink down. If you still have something to say, then speak. This is your chance.”

“ You truly think that this is enough to bind me?” Lu Ping said.

“ Nice joke. Is it not? Who do you think you are?” Mo Lin said.

“ What do you think, who am I?” Lu Ping asked.

“ Rest assured. I haven’t mistakenly took you. Lu Ping, a Zhai Feng institutes’s student who had failed two times in Annual Assessment. It’s still fine that he doesn’t aspire to forge ahead, but he is actually living as a parasite on some other individual’s body. I think that would be you?” Mo Lin said.

Lu Ping was silent for a short while, then looking at Mo Lin, he said: “ You are not from our courtyard.”

“That’s right, I am not. So, what about it?” Mo Lin said

“ Who asked you to come here?” Lu Ping asked.

“ You don’t need to know this.” Mo Lin said

“ That will do.” Lu Ping nodded. It seemed like the only movement he was able to make in his condition.

“ What?” Mo Lin was unable to understand the meaning behind Lu Ping’s action.

“ There was a bit of misunderstanding just now.” Lu Ping said.

“ Heh, are you planning to beg for forgiveness?” Mo Lin laughed.

“No, I am saying that I had a bit of misunderstanding towards you.” Lu Ping said.

“That so, what did you misunderstand?” Mo Lin was still laughing.

“You don’t need to know this.” The words which were spoken by Mo Lin just a moment ago, Lu Ping returned them back untouched.

“Oh, then what after this?” Mo Lin said.

“After this, I will just go back to sleep.” The sound of Lu Ping’s words had barely travelled upwards, but both of his hands had surprisingly made their way out of the ground already. Before Mo Lin could even react, he placed both of his hands on either side to support his body and raised his entire body from inside the ground just like that. Then as if stepping on stairs, he took out one of his legs from inside and set it on the hard ground nearby and walked out of the swamp just like that. Throughout the entire process, he didn’t apply a single trace of strength to struggle out. All of the movements he performed in succession seemed completely natural.

“I am going back to sleep.” Lu Ping was seriously cleaning the mud on his body, he didn’t spare a single glance towards Mo Lin.

“You should quickly clean this up. It’s too dangerous.” After saying these words, Lu Ping turned around and left, leaving behind an all alone Mo Lin who was blankly staring the huge hole left behind by Lu Ping.

“This....what is this?” Without waiting for Mo Lin to speak, Lu Ping had already disappeared into the darkness of night. Mo Lin was staring at the huge hole in front of his eyes with his entire face covered with an expression as if all of this was inconceivable. This was his backup plan. Offense Through Defense. As the name implies, this was his method of surviving under unfavourable conditions.

Since it was serving such an important role, there is not much need to say about its reliability. The modified earthworm has always been Mo Lin’s secret weapon. He is extremely clear about the effects of Earthworm grass on a piece of land after it is grown under it. It greatly increases the suction power of the earth. Preceptors at third Heavenly Layer of

Strength's soul or below can't even imagine about escaping, let alone ordinary people.

“What is happening?” Mo Lin was still mumbling to himself.

“Don't tell me the properties of this ground are unusually different.” Mo Lin rubbed the soil loosened by an Earthworm grass between his fingers. He even tasted it.

“There are no problems....” Mo Lin already did this kind of examination after he planted the grass in the afternoon. At this moment, he was only trying to double check it.

But regardless of whether it was Earthworm grass or earth, there were no problems whatsoever. So the only possible issue lies in Lu Ping's body. An ordinary individual's body has the strength of Strength's soul third Heavenly layer or higher?

This is not possible.

Or, there are some people who possess innate Spiritual Power. However, if this kind of people examines this power through their perception, they might discover that this so-called spiritual power in fact also originates from Strength's soul. They are Innate Perceivers, individuals who can naturally perceive Strength's soul. There are even some individuals who are naturally in the realm of first Heavenly Layer.

Such individuals who can naturally perceive the Soul's power are known as Awakeners. Their innate perception towards the power of souls is much sharper and stronger in comparison with ordinary people. They can improve their realm of soul's power much quickly, and after attaining sixth Heavenly Layer, their linking up with Excellence's soul also goes much more smoothly and stably, thus producing much stronger abilities afterwards. These abilities usually will be of fifth level or higher. Consider Mo Sen's Inspection and Luo Wei's Penetrating Vision, although both of these abilities are useful, they don't serve any real fighting purposes. Finally, both of these abilities are evaluated as second level abilities.

However regardless of talks, Awakeners who naturally possess the

realm of third Heavenly Layer are extremely rare. What's more is, even Awakeners are unable to conceal Soul's power. And from Mo Sen's information, furthermore through Mo Lin's own inspection, there was no existence of soul's power on Lu Ping's body.

“ So, what the hell is happening?” Mo Lin once again repeated these words as he was removing Earthworm grass as per Lu Ping's instructions due to lack of better options.

While removing the grass, Mo Lin's brain was as busy as his body. But he still couldn't find any explanation. However, he also didn't try to rashly probe again one more time. He was already unable to sense Lu Ping's depth.

Clear morning, sunshine and a new day.

Lu Ping opened the window and saw Mo Sen bustling in the flower garden outside the window.

“ Mo Sen Laoshi, so early!” Lu Ping struck a greeting.

Mo Sen nodded a little, his expression was extremely complex.

Yesterday midnight's three o'clock past, his nephew Mo Lin entered his room. He was scared to death. But this was nothing compared to what he recounted afterwards. It even took three turns to confirm it back and forth.

Unbelievable!

Uncle-Nephew, the two individuals analyzed it till daybreak, but still couldn't come up with anything. Mo Sen's both eyes were boiled deep red. Being an individual who has linked his Infusion's soul with Excellence's soul, this can't be caused merely by excessive fatigue.

At first light, he dashed out to take care of flower garden, however this time, his mind was still unable to calm down.

Until now, Lu Ping opening the window and then jumping out, everything was same as always.

“I haven't stepped on anything!” Lu ping said facing Mo Sen and shook

his both hands.

Mo Sen nodded his head with difficulty. As he saw Lu Ping searching something inside flower garden, he immediately pointed towards a direction and said: “Over there.”

“Over there.”

“Thank You.” Lu Ping happily walked over to the side where Mo Sen pointed, picked up the pipe and washed his face.

Everything was as it used to be. The only difference was Mo Sen. Those insignificant actions of Lu Ping which used to make him fly in rage, today he seemed unexpectedly compatible with them. And towards his this kind of unusual behaviour, Lu Ping didn't show a single trace of reaction, as if this all was already anticipated by him.

“So, who are you in the end?” The question which caused Mo Sen to be distressed for an entire night, he finally laid it out in front.

“Eh! I am Lu Ping.” Lu Ping smilingly said.

Mo Sen was unable to see through and unable to find out anything. The other person was also not willing to say anything. Mo Sen can only watch Lu Ping leaving. After Lu Ping departed, Mo Sen's nephew Mo Lin appeared out from the densest location of the flower garden.

Uncle and nephew looked at each other in dismay. Lu Ping's attitude was also as if nothing had happened, this made them even more at a loss. Whether it was poison or earthworm grass, the killing intent displayed by Mo Lin was obvious by just one look. Result was this guy did nothing? He doesn't hold a single thought of vengeance?

“This is not rational...” Mo Lin mumbled to himself. He is an assassin after all. He is more accustomed to scenarios made up of blood's smell and massacre. Under such circumstances, he himself wasn't subjected to any retaliation was truly miraculous.

“I want to test him again.” Mo Lin said.

“Don't lose your mind!” Mo Sen said. Lu Ping gave him a feeling that he

is too profound to be understood. More important is, he was already a little regretful after the incident of yesterday morning's. Yesterday night, after he was woken up by Mo Lin and told about his loss, although he was surprised but at the same time he was also a little happy.

“ I am not losing my mind, I will be extremely careful. It's only testing. Uncle, the truth is you also don't wish him to die. Is it not?” Mo Lin said.

Mo Sen remained silent.

“Also.” Mo Lin turned his gaze towards the interiors of the flower garden. “ What's the matter with your Dormant Fire Lotus? Yesterday I saw it was on the verge of blooming. So, today, why it appears like it will grow a new flower?”

“So, what is the problem?” Mo Lin didn't understand.

“Dormant Fire Lotus's internal heat is very heavy. When it blooms, it will definitely absorb huge amounts of moisture. Therefore, it is suitable to grow in water, if it is grown on land, it would definitely leave a small area dry. As a result of this, plants within two meters of its surroundings will be withered. Don't tell me you place its bud without knowing this?”

“ What are you saying?” Mo Sen was hugely alarmed.

Chapter 8: Huge Difference

Mo Sen was astonished. And it was not because of the fact that Mo Lin knows more than him. He already knew that this nephew of his is also deeply knowledgeable about plants. Only, his main focus is different than a gardener. This property of Dormant Fire Lotus has much more possibility to be covered into Mo Lin's area of expertise.

He is astonished because the Dormant Fire Lotus was just about to bloom and got stepped on by Lu Ping, was it coincidence? Or Lu Ping knew that blooming of Dormant Fire Lotus will produce a calamity?

As Mo Lin looked at the plants and flowers surrounding the Dormant Fire Lotus, the plants and flowers which he cherished, he couldn't help himself from considering this.

The plants spoiled by Lu Ping were not a few. And when he would be fuming with anger, Lu Ping would say

“ I am just stepping on weeds.”

At that time, Mo Sen absolutely didn't take notice of such an explanation. However now, he was thinking.

He doesn't remember too clearly, but he has some impressions.

Viscum vine, Heart piercing fruit, Tong tian bamboo, Fei Xin grass....

These names made Mo Sen's impression even deeper. When Lu ping was stepping on the plants, Mo Sen was only focussed on being regretful and angry. But now that he carefully think about it, although saying that these plants are weeds, is still an exaggeration, however, their existence does affect the growth of other plants to some extent. They are not too much of a harmonious existence.

Viscum Vine climbs onto the body of other plants, it can possibly crush the other plant beneath its body.

Fruit produced by Heart piercing fruit is very sharp, squeezing it inside the flower garden can easily result in it piercing the other plants.

Tong Tian bamboo's roots grow a lot, it can damage the roots of other plants under the ground.

As far as Fei Xin grass is concerned, it doesn't influence the vegetation surrounding it. However after maturation, its leaf flocculants moves freely with the wind, producing a new Fei Xin grass. Such an uncontrolled propagation will affect the composition of the entire flower garden.

Above mentioned few plants are pretty good if considered from the ornamental property. However, their growth needs to be managed very carefully. Is it possible that such a cruel treatment by Lu Ping actually was in order to sort out the growth of these?

Mo Sen who was standing in the flower garden seemed blanked out. This most favourite flower garden of his, this special vitality, is it possible that all of this is the result of Lu Ping helping out from the shadows?

Immediately accepting this point was truly a little hard for Mo Sen. He was completely incapable to superimpose the Lu Ping which has just formed in his head with the Lu Ping in his previous impression. At this moment, the shock and feeling of being at a loss in his heart far exceeded the same which Mo Lin brought to him late night.

Mo Lin!

Mo Sen suddenly returned to the earth, but there were no signs of Mo Lin around him.

“ This youngster!” Mo Sen was feeling very anxious. If my recent thoughts happened to be true, then it would be wrong to aim Lu Ping. I am afraid that this child is completely different from what everyone considers him to be.

Where did he run off to?

Mo Sen began to search for Lu Ping at once. He asked around from the people he ran into. Though, there were only a few people who recognised Lu Ping. Very soon, Mo Sen spotted Lu ping and Su Tang at the Zhai Feng courtyard's dining hall. But what about Mo Lin?

He swept his glance inside the dining hall and eventually spotted Mo

Lin at an extremely ordinary corner. He was holding a large piece of bread in his hand. He would take an occasional bite, however, his eyes were unblinkingly staring in a direction. The direction in which Lu Ping and Su Tang were eating breakfast and chatting.

Mo Sen quickly walked in front of Mo Lin. However, Mo Lin's eye was already on him.

“What are you doing?” Mo Sen sensed an abnormality.

“I have poisoned his porridge.” Mo Lin said.

“Didn't I ask you to stop this already?” Mo Sen was worried, he was just about to dash forward.

“Don't worry.” Mo Lin dragged him back. “Amount of drug inside is not much. I have also prepared an antidote in advance. However it doesn't seem to be of much use.”

“Why would you think that?”

“He has finished eating, but there is no reaction.” As Mo Lin was saying these words, his vision never left Lu Ping's body for a single moment.

“Which poison did you use?”

“Sesame wood.”

Although Mo Sen is not too researched in this domain, but he is comparatively knowledgeable about plants. Sesame wood is kind of a commonly seen poison grass. Its toxicity can't be considered as much, its antidote is even more common, even he can forge it himself. Moreover, Mo Lin even controlled its quantity, this allowed him to let out a sigh of relief.

However right after, he heard Mo Lin mumbling to himself “Although the amount of drug is reduced, it is still enough to kill three people. How can there be no reaction from him?”

“So this how you control the amount of drug!” Mo Sen almost jumped up. However just as he turned his head to look there again, Lu Ping's gaze

also arrived on them.

Mo Sen and Mo Li, both were at a loss. However, Lu Ping just smiled and pointed with his fingers towards the recently emptied porridge bowl. After that, he departed together with Su Tang.

“What does it mean?” Mo Sen was still in a daze. However, Mo Lin immediately dashed forward with a lightning fast speed. Mo Sen jerked himself and immediately followed after him.

Mo Lin didn't go towards Lu Ping, he immediately arrived at the location where Lu Ping and Su Tang were recently seated. He picked up that empty bowl and looked at the shallow remainder of that white porridge at the base of the bowl.

Mo Lin's expression suddenly changed, with a thought, he fished out a measuring pipette from his leather bag. He very cautiously inhaled all of that remaining white soup at the bottom of the bowl into the pipette. Afterwards, he looked at the marked scale showing extremely clear and precise 0.6 millimeters. Mo Lin's face became incomparably serious. He very seriously took out the antidote he prepared for Lu Ping and dropped one drop of it in his mouth. After that, he dropped all of that 0.6 millimeters of content in his own mouth. Soon after, his face revealed a painful expression. Beads of sweat began rolling out of his face. Severe pain was rendering him incapable of even standing straight. However even in pain, Mo Lin's face was displaying grave seriousness. He was carefully comprehending this feeling. The antidote which he took earlier also began to display its effect. It collided with the pain until last bit of it was removed. However, Mo Lin's face didn't resume a single bit of its former peace. After calculating through measuring instruments and testing it on his own body, Mo Lin was now certain that the quantity of poison he mixed inside the porridge was residing untouched at the bottom of the bowl. It was exact to the finest quantity.

Mo Sen who was standing to the side also realized what had just happened. A single look at Mo Lin's expression and he didn't even need to confirm the result.

“How is this possible? What did he do?” Mo Sen said

“I didn’t saw him making any movements....” Mo Lin said. From the moment Lu Ping picked up the bowl, his vision never left Lu Ping’s body for a second. He watched every single gulp Lu Ping took, it seemed like Lu Ping wasn’t able to detect anything. Or more importantly, Lu Ping didn’t use any detoxification methods whatsoever. But in the end, poison was left at the bottom of the bowl untouched.

“Unbelievable.” In the eyes of Mo Sen, Lu Ping was getting more and more unfamiliar.

“If it is real. Then, it is only possible through an ability produced by linking up of Pivot’s soul. It has to be fourth level or higher.” Mo Lin said. He has already attained sixth Heavenly Layer in Pivot’s soul. He can be considered as quite researched about this particular soul’s power. However, perception and linking up are two completely different realms. What Lu Ping just accomplished, not even a perceiver of Pivot’s soul sixth Heavenly Layer can achieve, it only be done by a Linked One.

Not only a Linked One, a Linked One who possesses an ability of fourth level or higher. Mo Sen’s face was beginning to become even more astonished. Because this implies, Lu Ping is an existence even stronger than himself.

“Unimaginable, I must clarify.” Mo Lin said

“What do you want to do now?” Mo Sen asked. After this moment, he wasn’t worried for Lu Ping, he was worried for Mo Lin.

“I will join Zhai Feng institute and closely observe Lu Ping.” Mo Lin said.

“What kind of joke is this!” Mo Sen involuntarily cried out. In a short day, Lu Ping has already gone through numerous transformations in his heart. From garbage to not so simple, then hard to believe, then inconceivable, and at present; is a mystery, is danger.

“Certainly, I will not use these kinds of methods again.” Mo Sen said. Two times, or perhaps three times, methods he thought to be as brilliant, methods that would never fail, all of them were easily ‘neutralized’ by the

other guy.

Poison needle? Mo Lin still doesn't know about its whereabouts.

Swamp made by earthworm grass, the guy just raised his leg and walked away.

Sesame Wood, to start of leniently let's just say it is enough to kill three people. And the guy seemed to have drunk it without any problems, but the poison remained at the bottom of the bowl. However, Mo Lin felt that what remained after the 'neutralization' is, Gold. What he considered as his killer moves, to the other guy it was not even worth taking action. If one is still unable to realize that there is a huge gap in the strength, then he would be an utter fool.

In the end, Lu Ping turned out to be way too strong. How did he become this strong, this question caused Mo Lin to be extremely interested.

Zhai Feng institute's building, sixth floor.

Inside the Dean's room, from where the entire institute could be monitored like flying vision, Dean Godou was watching a strange guy in a straw hat.

"You wish to join our institute?" Now definitely isn't the time of admitting new students, if it was any ordinary student, then that student would have already sent on his way back. Why would Dean personally handle this matter? But the guy in front of the Dean, his total soul's power is fourteen Heavenly Layers with Pivot's soul already at sixth Heavenly Layer. Such a realm is even more outstanding than many graduates of Zhai Feng institute. However in front of his eyes, this guy is saying that he wish to become a member of Zhai Feng institute.

"That's right!" Mo Lin confirmed his intentions. The thirst in eyes seemed to be genuine.

"For what?" Godou thought this person ought to have some special reasons.

"To study!" was Mo Lin's reply.

Silence.

A student with outstanding talent will obviously receive courtyard's welcome. However, Mo Lin's strength was already above what institute could offer to teach him. This feeling was just like as if some graduate from four big academies has come to Zhai Feng institute for advanced learning. The only difference is that degree of exaggeration is way too high.

“ Which teacher do you wish to follow?” Godou said

Mo Lin's situation, Godou can only think of one possibility, that is Mo Lin wants to learn a certain ability, and that ability is by chance in possession of some teacher of Zhai Feng institute.

“ Teacher?” Mo Lin was surprised for a moment but then immediately recovered himself and answered a name without slightest hesitation “ Mo Sen.”

Mo Sen?

Godou originally thought that Mo Lin certainly desires to learn an ability of a threader of Pivot's soul. Who could have imagined, he wishes to learn the ability of Mo Sen, a Linked One of Infusion's soul. At this moment this guy's Infusion soul is only at third Heavenly Layer, this difference is too big!

But it doesn't matter. Clarification of the purpose can't be justified as a reason to decline such a powerful student. Such a student can even be accepted regardless of admission times. Zhai Feng institute's rules have always been very lenient.

“ I approve your admission. Follow teacher Mo Sen. Take guidance from him.” Godou said.

“ Thank you, can I also go to any lecture?”

“ Of course, is it important to you?”

“ In my opinion, it is better to have it.” Mo Lin seriously said.

Chapter 9: Honour Exceeds Everything

Obtaining the special permission of Dean, Mo Lin was able to become a student of Zhai Feng institute at a time when the year was just about to end. After leaving Dean's room, Mo Lin impatiently arrived on the first floor of Zhai Feng building.

Time of classes were forty minutes followed by a rest of ten minutes. The arrangement which has always been strictly followed by Zhai Feng institute is said to have come from the teaching style of Big four institute. When Mo Lin entered a classroom, it was the time of rest for that class.

A strange face again. Students were unable to stop themselves from giving him a second look.

Although this kind of matter in Zhai Feng institute is not strange, but the first-grade is different from higher grades. Some curious students would go to high-grade classrooms to hear, this is normal. However, a high-grade student coming to a first-grade lecture to hear, this is beyond reasoning. So apart from a student like Lu Ping who would attend the classes so seldom that no one knows him, normally there would be only one cause: A high-grade student coming to first-grade class in order to get close to a girl student. Although Mo Lin's style while wearing that straw hat seemed a little weird, he still managed to embarrass the young female students. Secretly, a feeling of expectation also began to spread inside the class. However, after sweeping a glance in the classroom, Mo Lin's expression displayed a disappointed look. At this point, he originally wished to leave at once, however classroom bell suddenly rang up and the teacher timely entered the classroom. Mo Lin being an assassin didn't want to attract too much attention. He quietly selected an empty seat in the corner and sat down.

It was the end of the year, teachers didn't have anything new to teach. For the most part, it was just revision and consolidation of everything that had been taught during the year.

"So, yesterday's discussion, anyone has any questions?" The teacher

didn't pay any attention to the new strange face and continued on with his usual rhythm. Some students raised their hand to present their doubts in front of the teacher. After some of them were finished, students realized that the new strange face was also raising his hand.

“ You.” The teacher pointed towards Mo Lin.

“ I want to ask a question.” Mo Lin stood up and said. “ Why is Lu Ping not in the class?”

Lu Ping?

“He never comes to class.” Some individuals blurted out the truth without holding anything back.

“Huh?” Mo Li was astonished, This guy is also bad at this? Mo Sen uncle didn't tell me anything about this!

“ Who are you?” The teacher was also starting to get suspicious. Is there an individual in Zhai Feng institute who is not aware of the matter about Lu Ping not attending lectures?

“ I....I have joined the institute just today. I am called Lin Mo.” Mo Lin introduced himself to everybody. Naturally, he used a false name. He can't possibly forget about his identity. He is an assassin, how can he casually give away his information?

Just entered the courtyard?

Everyone stared blankly. It's the end of the year right now. For a student to be admitted at this time? It is only possible through breaking the rules. This straw hat, exactly what is extraordinary about him?

Students were unable to make out. Fortunately, the teacher present also was unable to determine the realm of his soul's power precisely. By basic perception, Teacher was only able to feel that his soul's power is definitely not simple. There is no way that he could be a first-year student.

“ If you are trying to find Lu Ping, then you have come to the wrong place.” Teacher said

“ In that case, can I leave?” Mo Lin asked.

“ As you wish.” The teacher also knew that contents of first-grade classroom wouldn't have a single use for Mo Lin.

Mo Lin departed with a lightning fast speed. After coming out of the classroom, he slapped his head and gloomily cursed at his own stupidity. In Zhai Feng institute, even Dean himself thinks that attending classes is not important. Lu Ping who is much stronger than him, attending classes? How senseless does that sound. Of course that guy wouldn't feel necessary to attend classes every day. In that case, what does he do every day? And how does he cultivate his Perception and Linking Up of souls?

Mo Lin wanted to know it as soon as possible. He searched inside the institute but was unable to discover any trace of Lu Ping. This made him depressed. This institute is only so much big and it is taking me this much effort to find one person? I even had to use “ Ask Someone” kind of low method. I am an assassin yo, what kind of assassin would ask about whereabouts of his own target in the middle of a street. Wouldn't it just be attracting attention to the self?

Entire early morning, Mo Lin had no gains. As the noon arrived, he immediately ran towards the dining hall in order to stand guard there. Eventually, he was able to spot Lu Ping.

Mo Lin thought that he could at least be considered as familiar with Lu Ping. He grabbed a bread and moved closer. As he saw Lu Ping and Su tang are about to line up to get food, he quickly found himself an opening.

“ Wanna eat cake?” Mo said while waving the half bread in his hand.

Lu Ping didn't reply, however, he carefully observed that bread.

“ Don't worry, it ain't poisoned this time.” Mo Lin said.

Immediately all the surrounding looks converged on them. Using the word 'poison' at the place of eating is really too much.

“ Joke, Joke.” Mo Lin explained at once. Feigning innocence, he immediately snapped the bread in two, then ate one of the parts and handed over the other one to Lu Ping.

“ How come you are still here?” Lu Ping asked while accepting the cake.

“ I am now a student of Zhai Feng institute.” Mo Lin said.

Before Lu Ping was able to say anything, dressed in black, having a golden insignia with silver boundary, the Discipline Squadron who is always present in the shadows of Lu Ping, immediately appeared without wasting a single moment. Everybody put their current affairs aside and quietly watched the scene.

Xi Fan’s expression was extremely serious, however he didn’t even glanced at Lu Ping. He walked straight towards Mo Lin.

“ You are that new student?” Xi Fan stated.

“ That’s right. I am called Lin Mo.” Mo Lin again fakely introduced himself.

“ I heard you are trying to look for Lu Ping since early morning. What is the matter?” Xi Fan said. Regarding the matter of Pavilion yesterday morning, he was finally unable to find any clues pointing towards Lu Ping. But how could he give up like this? Today’s morning, he heard a new student was asking about Lu Ping all over the place starting from the First Grade Classroom.

Who would try to look for a garbage in such a manner?

The first impression is last instinct of Xi Fan made him convinced that Lu Ping has once again invited some disaster which he could look into. This kind of opportunity? Of course, he wouldn’t miss that. As a result, as Mo Lin was trying to look for Lu Ping, Xi Fan was also trying to look for Mo Lin. In the end, all of them bumped into each other here.

“ Huh?” Mo Lin looked puzzled. “ Me trying to find him, what doest that has to do with you? who are you?”

“ Xi Fan, Discipline Squadron.” Xi Fan briefly introduced himself in clear words. The caption of Discipline Squadron, he doesn’t like to introduce himself with this identity.

“ So what?”

“ Whatever issue you have, you can speak with us.”

“ Issue is, you are trying to find me for what business?” Mo Lin said.

Xi Fan remained silent. This new guy truly didn't understand anything. If it was any other student, he would have immediately realized what to do. He decided that he needed to put more effort. Xi Fan was about to open his mouth to explain, but this time, Lu Ping was faster “ You two take your time.” After saying these words, he began to walk away.

“Halt!”

“Wait!”

Xi Fan and Mo Lin spoke the same thing with different mouths. However, their wordings were different. Xi Fan thought that he was successful in forming a mutual understanding with Mo Lin this time. However, he didn't expect that Mo Lin wouldn't pay any attention to him. Mo Lin instantly caught up with Lu Ping. The expression on his face somehow looked like trouble, it even looked like he wanted to worm his way.....into becoming friends?

Unexpectedly he is showing goodwill towards Lu Ping?

Xi Fan was immediately scared of Mo Lin as if he was an otherworldly being. During his three years in Zhai Feng institute, such an individual has never ever appeared. There was only Su Tang, who has been close with Lu Ping from an earlier time.

“ Where did this new guy come from?” Xi Fan felt that his brain was somewhat lacking.

“ Currently unclear!” Two members of Discipline Squadron who often followed him were also somewhat at a loss. Such a matter, where someone displays good intentions towards Lu Ping, it really was a little too hard to comprehend.

“ Go immediately find out.” Xi Fan instructed and decided that he himself will also turn the focus point of his attention towards Mo Lin.

For entire three years, he was unable to find anything that could be used

against Lu Ping. These past few days, although he was determined, he was not genuinely optimistic. After he was unable to pin the matter of Observing Pavilion on Lu Ping, he didn't know whether he would even get another opportunity to investigate Lu Ping.

And then Mo Lin appeared like this.

Hearing about Mo Lin, Xi Fan arrived as fast as he could to seize the opportunity. But the difference between the reality and what he considered being the case was a little too much. This guy was definitely not someone whom they could use as a pretext to create trouble for Lu Ping.

However, the appearance of this person is still very strange.

Becoming a member of Zhai Feng institute when the year is about to be finished. As soon as entered the institute, asking about Lu Ping, going by his manner, he seems completely unfamiliar with Lu Ping and yet trying to get close. What is the reason?

This is possibly an opening for a breakthrough. It's possible to hear a few things about Lu Ping from this.

On the afternoon of that day, Xi Fan obtained some information about where did the guy originate from.

Information was simple: Specific origins unclear, however realm very high. Pivot's soul has already attained sixth Heavenly Layer. Reason to come at Zhai Feng institute is reported as to follow teacher Mo Sen. However the truth, he is asking about Lu Ping all the time. No one ever heard 'Mo Sen' coming out from his mouth.

"This is a pretense." Xi Fan immediately concluded after hearing the report. "It's quite clear, this guy has rushed over in institute to find Lu Ping. What kind of attitude is this towards the institute?"

"The integrity of courtyard allows us even more to pay attention to this Lin Mo. However, because that guy's realm is incomparably high, it would be unwise to dispatch a team that has individuals below sixth Heavenly Layer to engage him." A squadron member reported.

“ In other words it would be just me!” Within Discipline Squadron, the sole individual who possesses the realm of sixth Heavenly layer of soul’s power is Xi Fan. In an unknown tiny institute like Zhai Feng institute, an individual able to attain sixth Heavenly Layer realm within four years is truly an extremely rare spectacle.

“ All the rest of you keep working on the history of this guy. And also don’t relax on the side of Lu Ping. From hereon, hand over the direct surveillance of Lin Mo to me.”

“ Yes!” All squadron members received the orders.

Four more days to go!

Xi Fan was looking at the calendar posted on the wall of Discipline Squadron room.

There were less than four days remaining in the yearly Annual Assessment. Every single student was sweating on this matter.

However from the perspective of Xi Fan, how to expel Lu Ping from the institute within four days was the most important matter.

Absolutely can’t let the Discipline Squadron tied up on the pillar of disgrace together with that guy.

This was Xi Fan’s resolve. Maybe others don’t care, but he cares.

Honor exceeds everything!

Chapter 10: Everyone's Determination

“Hey, you are still not going?” As Lu Ping looked at Mo Lin, he truly felt somewhat helpless.

At the time of eating in the dining hall, this guy was beside him.

At the time of leaving the dining hall, he followed.

Now, Lu Ping was already preparing to go back to his quarter and this guy seemed to have come with the intention of ‘never leaving never betraying’, thus was eventually questioned by Lu Ping.

“Say something.” Mo Lin said.

“ There is nothing to say.” Lu Ping said

Mo Lin conveniently tossed out four questions in between casual conversation after he wormed his way into being friends together with Lu Ping and Su Tang.

“ How are you so formidable?”

“What is your realm?”

“ Where did you learn from?”

“Do you have some special blood vessels?”

Four questions, but he still didn’t get a single word worth of an answer. However, Mo Lin was not particularly angry. He continued to follow even after Su Tang left. And then, eventually, the fifth question also followed.

“ That night, what kind of person did you take me as?”

Mo Lin asked. When he carefully recalled the events that occurred on the night of his fight with Lu Ping; words said by Lu Ping while being stuck in the swamp region pretty much felt like a kind of probing. And Lu Ping was able to get some kind of message from his words. After that, he didn’t bother with him anymore. He just calmly left without doing anything even after Mo Lin sincerely attempted to take his life.

That hidden something was clearly extremely important. It could be

even said that it saved Mo Lin's little life.

However, he still didn't manage to get the answer of this question.

"Don't feel like telling you." As Lu Ping was saying this, he had already slammed the door and cut off Mo Lin outside.

"Hey! Hey!" Mo Lin was knocking the door, but Lu Ping turned a deaf ear to the sound coming from outside and went to lie down on the bed the right away.

"Hey! Hey!" This time, the sound was coming from outside the window. But, the window's height was a bit too much. Mo Lin was only able to raise half of his head to the level of the window even after placing various supports under his legs.

"My yesterday's bricks?" Mo Lin muttered. Yesterday he brought two bricks with him to act as supports for his feet. At the time of running away, naturally he didn't consider carrying them back. At present, who knows where did those ended up. He looked all around him but wasn't able to find them.

"Get up! So many questions, at least answer me one of them!" Mo Lin was speaking from outside the window but his sound was not loud. His thinking was, I'd better watch out the gravity of the situation. Lu Ping, a person as formidable as him is seen as a garbage at such an ordinary courtyard. It must be for a reason, or, it might even be trouble. He can't just casually leak out the things which Lu Ping wants to hide. He is an assassin, it's his nature to defend secrets.

"Hey! Hey!" Mo Lin was still shouting, but Lu Ping who was inside refused to pay any attention to it. Mo Lin intended to climb and enter inside. But there was no one to help or no bricks to serve as support. It was impossible!

Mo Lin was anxious. Not far away, there was someone who was even more anxious than him.

Xi Fan, he had come all alone to monitor Mo Lin. He didn't dare to get too close. Because from the information he obtained, this Lin Mo has not

only attained sixth Heavenly Layer in Pivot's soul, but his Sound's soul is also at third Heavenly Layer. With such an exceptionally keen hearing sense of the other individual, Xi Fan was unable to get too close.

However, this was making things difficult for him. Sound's soul, this is what Xi Fan lacks in most. He hasn't even attained the first Heavenly Layer. Thus, his hearing sense was not much better than the ordinary people. At this moment, although he was able to watch distant Mo Lin saying something to Lu Ping, but was unable to hear a single word. It was making him indescribably anxious. He had no choice other than to carefully observe Mo Lin's movements and expressions. Being at third Heavenly Layer in Infusion's soul, he was able to see Mo Lin's every moment and expression as clearly as if all of it was happening right in front of his eyes.

He was very pressing and his expression was full of curiosity. He seemed to have extreme expectations....

The third layer of Infusion's soul coupled with the sixth layer of Essence's soul allowed him to determine Mo Lin's frame of mind through his movements and expressions to an extremely precise extent.

Xi Fan, who always looks dead serious, who seems like might snap at someone at any movement, not many people would expect that he is actually a proficient Perceiver of Essence's soul. Essence's soul is the sixth soul and is also the most complex soul. It includes an individual's mentality, attitude, state of mind and whatnot things. The individuals who are proficient in Essence's soul are generally the individuals with an exquisitely dextrous frame of mind. And Xi Fan's first impression definitely won't allow people to think that way.

But the facts speak louder than the words.

Xi Fan's Essence's soul truly is in the realm of sixth Heavenly Layer. Moreover, he has even combined the sixth Heavenly Layer of Vitality's soul with the third Heavenly Layer of Infusion's soul to a fairly good extent. Such a fine skill to use one's perception, everybody in Zhai Feng institute is quite optimistic towards him. The only regret is that Xi Fan in

using sound's soul is too mediocre. If this wasn't the case, if he was able to make good use of Sound's soul, then by his skill in making use of perception, he might have been able to train into "Mind Reading" ability at the time of Linking up of his Essence's soul. It is evaluated as fifth level ability. However, many people believe that practical use of this ability is even above sixth level abilities.

It's truly a pity....

Teacher's in Zhai Feng institute would often lament due to this fact. However, Xi Fan's future is still something that people would look forward to.

However, Xi Fan doesn't feel like this, because everything he has learned has never been useful in front of Lu Ping. His so called talent is completely useless on the body of an individual who is referred as rubbish by everybody. It is so bad that at present, he has to stoop as low as to watch over other people in order to dig out some information about him.

After analyzing the frame of mind of Mo Lin, Xi Fan was completely sure that there definitely is something between Lu Ping and him that could be unearthed.

Continue to observe!

Xi Fan quietly concealed himself and continued to observe.

And Mo Lin, after he was unable to get any sort of response even after putting in a great effort, he had to eventually get down. However he didn't leave at this point, rather he decided to wait for his opportunity outside Lu Ping's quarter.

Thus as a result, Mo Lin under the ledge of the building enduring scorching sun and Xi Fan inside the lush constantly watching out for mosquito bites, decided to wait. Both individuals didn't have any thoughts to give up easily.

One hour, Two hours, Three hours....

Sun gradually turned towards west. After enduring scorching sun for the entire afternoon, Mo Lin was drenched with sweat. Inside the grove, there

were a lot of swelled up places on the body of Xi Fan. There wasn't a single movement from inside the quarter, Lu Ping unexpectedly didn't come out for the entire afternoon. Actually, he was just like a corpse lying on the bed. Many times Mo Lin even suspected, if he is actually dead due to being stabbed by the poison needle from yesterday. However after checking from outside the window, everything would turn out to be normal. .

However, in the end, he realized that Lu Ping is trying to wear down his patience by remaining silent. Making him give up.

“ Hey, Hey. I will definitely not give up. I am an assassin.” There was no response to his words from inside. Not far away, Xi Fan was also observing Mo Lin. Although he couldn't make out Mo Lin's words, but from Mo Lin's expression, he was able to see his determination to not give up.

Again two hours passed in a flash.

Blazing sun has already turned into the evening sun.

“ Hey, you are not gonna eat?” Mo Lin leaned forward at the window's edge and shouted.

“Should I go and buy you a cake?”

“ Oh! Su Tang brought you food.”

Still no response. The only thing that Mo Lin was sure about was, Lu Ping is not dead, he is still living.

Mo Lin didn't know what to say anymore. He continued to sit under window's ledge.

Eventually, the sun completely set behind the mountains and moon came into being above the trees. But it was quickly covered up by black clouds. Today's night was a little blacker than even yesterday's night. However, there were still a few rays of light shining below from behind the clouds. From the perspective of Mo Lin who is at the second layer of Infusion's soul and Xi Fan who is at the third layer of Infusion's soul, this little bit of light was sufficient nonetheless.

Xi Fan had already begun preparations for a night shift. However, Mo Lin decided to give up after keeping watch for another three hours.

He wasn't lacking willpower, but he didn't possess the body to go with it. At this moment, Mo family's blood vessels were dragging him down.

"Hey Hey!" He shouted one more time from window's edge. "I am going back to sleep. Can't continue anymore. I was up whole night yesterday." He truly was up yesterday night. The first half of night, he was up so as to kill Lu Ping and the latter half he couldn't lie down since he was unable to do so.

"I will come again tomorrow." Mo Lin conveyed his determination through words this time.

Going?

Xi Fan inside the grove was surprised. Although Mo Lin seems very tired, he doesn't look like having any intentions to give up. It was hard to imagine that this time he truly stood up to leave.

Could it be Lu Ping said something to him?

Since his hearing is lacking, Xi Fan was afraid that he missed out on something important. Up to now, his gains were truly lacking. He was only able to conclude that Mo Lin is truly determined. This made him much more desirous to know the cause. After all, what he finally wants to grasp is information related to Lu Ping.

Follow again. Should observe a little more.....

Not daring to follow too close, Xi Fan only watched Mo Lin's position clearly. Only after he walked away quite far, did Xi Fan slowly came out from the grove and followed him.

Once again a night without single gain.

Mo Lin was sighing and shaking his head. But he was still very carefully and cautiously avoiding the plants and flowers which were grown by his uncle Mo Sen with his utmost care.

A soft sound echoed in Mo Lin's ears. He was tired, but his exhausted

state didn't cause his Sound's soul to lose its sharpness.

It was the sound of footsteps, deliberately concealed footsteps, however still managed to step on a small patch of dried leaves.

The third layer of Sound's soul can decipher the details present in the sound up to a fairly good extent.

“ Who is it?”

Mo Lin was already on alert. He doesn't believe it to be Lu Ping. Because, Lu Ping wouldn't need to sneak around like this.

“ Hehe, third Heavenly Layer of Sound's soul is not be underestimated. Just one individual was not careful and we got detected by you.” A gloomy voice sounded and changed the complexion of Mo Lin. He was already aware who did this voice belong to.

“ Heh! Never expected you to run to an institute like this. Only, you even more didn't expect us to chase after you up to here, huh?” As the gloomy voice was speaking, silhouettes were already gradually emerging out of darkness.

Us....

When Mo Lin heard this word, his complexion turned even more unsightly.

Because he was clear who was the owner of the gloomy voice, even more clear that if it was 'Us' then his chance of survival has turned much more grim.

But he won't just give up like this.

Mo Lin was carefully perceiving the whereabouts of other individuals and at the same time he was also moving his fingers.

“ Don't move!” This tiny bit of movement was already detected by the opposition. Another voice sounded to warn him.

“ Although your body is nothing, we are completely aware that your methods are very troublesome. You'd better not move.” The previous voice continued.

Better?

What better? Life is hanging by a thread. What better result will not moving produce? Live for another minute?

Naive!

Of course, I am going to move. Not just move, I will even yell!

He moved his left hand towards leather bag inside his clothes and thrust it inside at a lightning fast speed. As he did, blood splattered. This move as expected didn't turn out to be good. The dark dart thrown by the other person struck him right in the middle of his left arm. In an instant, splattered blood soaked the poison powder he was about to grab and turned it into a paste.

Mo Lin screamed, and within the scream he was able to add two words: "Help me!"

His 'help me' was very quick. It didn't felt like he was shouting in order to alleviate his pain, rather it felt like it was a precaution. As if this yell in itself was a sneak attack carried out in order to avert the attention of attackers.

However, he still failed in the end. His yell was just about to spread out, then as if knocked against something, it got distorted then it's magnitude was brought down and finally it completely disappeared.

His voice got shattered.

This was not a kind of new experience, though. Mo Lin knew that there is a person among his attackers, a Linked One of Sound's soul. Although his ability is only considered to be of the second level, in some specific situations, it is extremely useful.

For example now, Mo Lin's final attempt, his cry for help was eliminated by him.

He was pretty hopeless. In fact, this glossed over cry for help was one of his major moves.

However at present, he completely failed.

“Go Die!” Other person didn’t intend to chat much with him, this was clear from the positions of both the parties involved. Mo Lin is an assassin, so are they. Both of their parties always linger about kill and get killed.

It’s just that, today they get to live and the one dying is Mo Lin. They firmly believed this point. A cold ray flashed and went straight for Mo Lin’s head.

Mo Lin wished to dodge but he was just not good at making movements. Moreover, he was dead tired. Right now he wished to sleep, who could have imagined that this time he would be sleeping so thoroughly.

Mo Lin sighed, he didn’t give in. He is an assassin, he needed to comprehend the feeling of getting killed. However at this moment, a shadow rushed in at a very fast speed.. By the wave of a hand, the cold light that was aiming for the head of Mo Lin was knocked aside.

The shadow was defending the front of Mo Lin, allowing him to feel a burst of excitement.

“Who is it?” The other person softly shouted.

“Discipline Squadron, Xi Fan.” The shadow said.

“I am leaving!” Mo Lin was extremely disappointed.

“What’s with your attitude?” Shadow didn’t turn its head, but it was clearly dissatisfied with Mo Lin.

Chapter 11: Formidable Linked One

“ Where did you come from?”

“ I was present all along.”

While the two youngsters were talking with each other, three individuals of the opposition were already out of darkness.

“ Who are you people?” Xi Fan was talking while faintly turning his body in an attempt to cover the separate positions of all three individuals into the Visual Angle.

The power of Infusion’s soul is closely related to the visual capabilities of an individual.

First Heavenly layer allows to see much far and much clearer as compared with ordinary people.

Second Heavenly layer allows seeing anything even under an extremely faint light.

However, the third Heavenly layer allows making complete use of Visual Angle.

A human’s single eye Visual Angle can be attained up to 156 degrees at most. However within it, what could be clearly seen is actually only within 60 degrees. The realm of Infusion’s soul being at third Heavenly Layer precisely bring about the biggest possible visual angle of 156 degrees. Combining it with the both eyes, it allows to clearly see anything within the visual angle of 188 degrees.

At this moment, Xi Fan was faintly adjusting his posture. At an instant, he was able to clearly see each and every moment of the three individuals on the opposite side. Three people, two male and one female, every single one’s expression cold and detached and carefully observing his movements.

“ Essence’s soul sixth Heavenly Layer, Infusion’s soul third Heavenly layer, Strength’s soul third Heavenly Layer.” Xi Fan’s realm was seen through within a moment of observation. The woman standing in the

middle enumerated his three most high level souls one by one. Other souls although not mentioned, even the Sound's soul in which he hasn't even broken through, were seen through.

“What's with that bamboo blade in your hands?” The guy on the most right said.

“Because he is a child.” Woman said.

“So it's a toy?” Individual on the left said.

“That toy just now blocked your Yin Luo blade, though.” The guy on right laughed. “Hehe.”

The guy on the left grimly laughed. He didn't mind the teasing words of the individual on the same side. They were chatting without a care in the world. There was only one explanation of this, they completely disregarded Xi Fan.

It indeed was the case.

Xi Fan was carefully paying attention to their movements, words and their facial expressions. Their relaxed look wasn't just for show. They truly felt that he was beneath their level.

The more important thing is....Yin Luo blade. It was a sufficient proof to disclose their identities.

“You are Xing Luo.” Xi Fan's vision was now beginning to not just being limited to three individuals. Because Xing Luo is a four member assassin group. And at present, only three people could be seen.

“That's right, it is Xing Luo. Luo Yin, Luo Xing and Luo Chong.” Mo Lin from behind introduced the three individuals one by one. “Originally, there were four individuals. But now there are only three. It's precisely the reason they are willing to chase me even until here here so as to kill me.”

“Oh.” Xi Fan said.

“Oh? Just Oh? Now you know, you are still not getting out of here? What does this have to do with you?” Mo Lin said.

“Although it has only been one day, but you can be considered as a student of Zhai Feng institute. It’s the duty as well as the obligation of Discipline Squadron to well protect every student of the institute.” Xi Fan indifferently said.

“Just by yourself?” Luo Xing who was directly in front of Xi Fan laughed. However he wasn’t paying attention towards Xi Fan at all, rather he turned towards his two companions:

“Zhai Feng institute. I had recently heard the name of this institute! Is it famous?”

“Never heard of it before.” Luo Chong said.

“Don’t waste time.”

Luo Yin was somewhat impatient. He raised his hands a little. Yin Luo blade in his hand was already shining. Cold light flashed once again. It was extremely quick. In a flash it swept past Xi Fan’s body. Luo Yin’s hand was chopping down straight towards the head of Mo Lin behind Xi Fan’s body. This truly was the greatest insult. This kind of a swing, it seemed like, will Xi Fan block or would he able to block, Luo Yin never even thought about these kinds of things.

Because they have already seen through Xi Fan’s realm. Although he has very rarely seen sixth realm of Essence’s soul, but in the end he is only a Perceiver. Compared with a Linked One, it’s not even in the same league. Only a Linked One is able to thoroughly display the might of Soul’s power. It is possible to perceive soul’s power by using six intellects. However if one thinks that soul’s power is just this, then that would be limiting oneself. Only after attaining the realm of Linking, would one be able to appreciate the variations of soul’s power.

Luo Yin is a Linked One of Sound’s soul. The previous ‘Silence’ was originated from his ability produced by the Linking of his Sound’s soul. And this ability mastered by him is not merely ‘Silence’.

Sonic Chop!

The reason he completely disregarded Xi Fan was due to the fact that

this time's chop struck by him was the real deal. A third level ability that can be only grasped by a Linked One of sound's soul, how can a Perceiver resist against it. Most probably just a glance would be enough to terrify him.

So, the cold light once again was aimed straight towards the head of Mo Lin. Relying on basic qualities of Mo Lin's body, there won't be any delusional fantasies of him dodging such a third level attacking skill. However at this moment, Xi Fan moved.

Once again there was the sound of whimpering.

There was no bright light or shrilling sound produced. Bamboo sword rubbed against the air. The sound produced by it seemed like both clumsy and simple. And then it clashed against that cold light.

You want to obstruct the attacking skill evaluated as a third level ability, the 'Sonic Chop' like this?

Luo Xing and Luo Chong were both laughing. They had absolutely no intention of going forward to help. The expression of Luo Yin however changed.

Resisting this strike was impossible. The insignificant bamboo sword upon clashing with the sonic chop employed through his Yin Luo blade, twisted and shattered within a moment of coming into contact with soul's power. Xi Fan's right hand also turned into a bloody mess due to injuries.

Obstructing it was impossible, absolutely impossible.

The cold light was still coming down.

However, it deviated!

Xi Fan's slash didn't had much strength, neither was it too quick, but it was extremely accurate and precisely timed. It was timed such that if Luo Yin wished to again change the trajectory of Sonic chop, then it was already too late. And so the cold light brushed past his body at an unimaginably close distance, causing his sleeves to flutter in the air. Flower petals and green leaves fluttered everywhere in the Flower garden.

After slashing once, he didn't stop his movements but continued on to rush ahead and firmly locked onto Luo Yin's body, then he raised his leg and kicked Mo Lin in the side. "Go!".

"Ah!...." Mo Lin heaved a sigh. "Trust me, I would have run away if had strength."

Mo Lin didn't escape. He is not a kind of person who doesn't bear responsibility. Only unfortunate thing was Xi Fan, he truly has nothing to do with it.

Let him go.....

Mo Lin was thinking to try and negotiate it with Yin Luo's three guys. However before he could say anything, Xi Fan who was glaring at him, urging to leave, his entire face revealed a painful expression.

"Fuck!" Luo Yin cursed and freed himself from Xi Fan's arms. Then he waved his elbow to smash it on Xi Fan's body.

Xi Fan fell down sideways, however Luo Chong who was behind him was faster. He had already jumped three steps back with his hands poised forward. The dagger which was piercing Xi Fan's back was also casually pulled out by him. Blood was blooming in the flower garden.

"Bah!" Luo Yin spat towards Xi Fan. He absolutely didn't pay any attention towards the life or death of Xi Fan. He faced towards Mo Lin, the purpose of this visit of theirs. However, he barely took a step forward and immediately felt his body being restricted by something.

He bowed his head to take a look. Xi Fan's right hand which was turned into a bloody mess earlier was struggling to hold his feet.

"Truly annoying!" Luo Yin turned his face away in contempt. He lifted his blade up and was just about to chop down.

However, blade remained suspended in the air.

"Behind you!"

Luo Xing and Luo Chong both were shouting.

Luo Yin was aware of it. His wrist was being grabbed by somebody, he

couldn't even budge it the slightest, of course, he would know that there is a person behind him. However, what's much more frightening is, he was unable to detect anything prior to it. He is a Linked One of Sound's soul, although he doesn't possess scrying capability, however being able to come up right behind his body while remaining concealed from his ears, it is already pretty scary.

“ Who is it?” He shouted.

Compared with the previous questioning shout aimed at Xi Fan, this time, his voice was much more anxious.

Xi Fan was lying on the ground. His right hand was seriously hurt, back was gravely pierced and after getting hit by Luo Yin's elbow, his whole face was covered with flowing blood. His consciousness and his vision both were a little fuzzy. Infusion's soul at third Heavenly Layer was also unable to let him clearly look behind Luo Yin's body for the moment.

He had felt a huge current of power aimed towards his right hand.

Previously, he made a firm determination that whatever happens he absolutely won't release his right hand. But when he felt the force behind that current, his determination instantly wavered. Because the force was so tyrannical, it made him feel like he was going to fly. His right hand absolutely couldn't be considered as an obstacle in front of a such a force.

Xi Fan sensibly released his grip. Just after that, he saw Luo Yin being suddenly disappeared from his vision with a rustling sound.

Everybody watched as a figure was sent flying in the sky. The figure was floating in an arc, then it heavily crashed on the ground.

Linked One of Sound's soul, an undefeatable existence in the minds of Perceivers, who can casually throw him around like a garbage?

Who is it? Xi Fan felt that he was about to lose consciousness, however, he tried hard not to. He must take a look, who is this person in the end?

Finally, he was able to clearly look.

Fuck....

Xi Fan was thinking that he has tangled himself a little too much with Lu Ping. Even at a time like dying, he has managed to see this guy in some other individual amidst dizziness.

Wrong.....

Wait.....

Looks like, it truly is Lu Ping?

After taking quite a few looks, Xi Fan confirmed he is not hallucinating.

Xi Fan who was originally on the verge of losing consciousness, who thought himself to be on the verge of death, suddenly gained spirit and strength from somewhere and sprang up.

“Fallback.” Xi Fan blocked Lu Ping from going forward.

“What?” Lu Ping didn’t understand.

“Although you are worthless, but you are still a member of Zhai Feng institute. And it’s the responsibility and obligation of Discipline Squadron to ensure the safety of every student.” Then looking in all the directions, he said. “Just a moment ago there was another person, where is he?”

“Was this man truly about to die? What nonsense is he spouting? Drag him away, drag him away.” Lu Ping said to Mo Sen besides him.

Chapter 12: Who Is The Most Frightening Individual

“ Hey hey, don’t just create trouble here!”

Mo Lin rushed ahead to drag Xi Fan away. The sudden appearance of Lu Ping produced a burst of excitement in him. As he once again looked at Lu Ping effortlessly taking care of Luo Yin, a Liked One, he almost jumped up. At the moment, he was even more curious and full of expectations towards Lu Ping. As for Xi Fan, he couldn’t bother to be emotionally moved because of his attempts in saving his life, on the contrary, he was actually a little bit annoyed by him for being a hindrance in Lu Ping’s actions.

“ Where is that other person?”

Even in death, Xi Fan won’t be able to convince himself that the ‘other person’ is Lu Ping. He was again looking around himself in an attempt to find that another person. However, he truly was at his limit. Although his Strength’s soul was at third Heavenly Layer, it was still not enough to resist from being foolishly dragged around to the side. After being dragged to the side, he once again lost his strength and collapsed on the ground.

“ Don’t move around on your own. I just stopped your bleeding.” Mo Lin said as he fiddled inside his bag, but eighty percent of his vision was still concentrating on Lu Ping. What is the real strength of Lu Ping, he doesn’t wish to miss a single moment.

“ Who are you?” Luo Chong’s dagger was poised in front of his body. At this moment, he didn’t felt like laughing and chatting as he was doing just a moment ago.

“ Garbage...” Xi Fan was spitting blood and trying to say something towards Lu Ping. It seems like, in the end, he was still unable to find that ‘the other person’ in his mind.

“ Hehe.” Lu Ping laughed, he didn’t mind Xi Fan’s way of addressing

him. He also didn't introduce himself to Luo Chong. Without bothering to put up any kind of defense, he just walked towards Luo Chong.

Luo Chong didn't immediately move forward to face him. He was waiting, waiting for the intel perceived by Luo Xing behind his body.

Luo Xing is a Linked One of Infusion's soul. Fourth level ability "True Detection" is an extremely precise kind of perceiving skill. Employing it to perceive the realm of an individual is basically same as using a sledgehammer to crack a nut. A faint radiance flashed in both of Luo Xing's eyes, she thought this should suffice.

But, she was unable to gain anything.

"There is no realm....". She very shakily forced out these words from her mouth.

"What?"

Luo Chong heard her but he asked for confirmation, believing that he had misheard.

"I will look one more time..." Luo Xing herself was absolutely unable to believe this answer. She intensified the radiance her eyes, she wanted to obtain the results of intensified "True Detection" but Lu Ping had already arrived in their front.

He was still not in any kind of stance, he just raised his hand and punched.

As he did, Luo Chong bent down with an incredulous expression in his eyes.

Right from the first step Lu Ping took till he waved his hand, he was unblinkingly concentrating all of his attention on the movements of Lu Ping. There wasn't any sort of unusual rhythm or aggression in his movements.

Then, he raised his hand and waved his fist.

But right after that, his clenched fist suddenly disappeared followed by a sharp pain in stomach.

Intolerable pain. Luo Chong didn't know what words he could use to describe this kind of pain. A single fist's pain was causing him to feel as if his whole body is withering, as if his five visceras and six bowels are exploding.

The dagger in his hand fell down, he couldn't be bothered with such a thing. There was only one thought in his mind, that was pain!

He wildly bent down his waist and then vomited severely.

Luo Chong started at an age of nine years. He carried out a total of two hundred and forty-seven assassinations. One hundred and ninety-nine times were smooth, forty-eight times he messed up, seventy times he suffered serious injuries and seventeen times he survived by the skin of his teeth.

People killed by him had been countless, injuries sustained by him were also countless. Enduring a brief assault is even more like having a meal at home. But never ever had been a time when he had vomited due to being hit, vomited due to pain.

Not only did he vomited, he is even crying!

He is crying due to pain.

He is a kind of man who would prefer to shed blood rather than to shed tears. Just by a frown or clenching his teeth, he would be able to pull through the pain inflicted by serious injuries.

But at this moment, he was crying due to pain. Tears and snivel both were flowing uncontrollably. Within a moment, it turned into sobbing. Surface of the ground turned into a mess due to his vomit. And all of this was due to a single punch.

Luo Xing's complexion had already turned different. She couldn't bother to investigate opponents realm through intensified " True Detection" now.

She moved.

Luo Xing is definitely not weak. Xing Luo, unexpectedly, the name of their organization is actually named after her. She is not just an analyst

in this four member organization. The people who know Xing Luo in depth are hundred percent aware of the fact that when Luo Xing is on the move, Xing Luo's fighting strength is at maximum.

Stary Needle!

Without holding back anything, Luo Xing employed her ultimate move.

A person who can casually toss out Luo Yin, a person who can cause Luo Chong to shed tears through just one fist, she can't afford to have any reservations against such an opponent.

She threw the needle. One needle divided itself into two, two into four, four into eight.....

Third level skill.....Enveloping Starlight!

Countless Stary Needles fluttered about the body of Lu Ping. These all were only illusionary light rays. Their dazzling would cause people to be confused and have blurry vision. However, among these illusionary rays, one was real. It was aimed straight towards Lu Ping's throat. In such a blur, this one ray of light was not the least bit eye catching. In this exact way, without a breath or sound, who knows how many people's life were claimed by this one ray of light.

Just because of this one move, Xing Luo was named after Luo Xing.

Just because of this one move, Luo Xing was the elder sister of Xing Luo.

Sure enough, Lu Ping had to exert himself in order to deal with this move. Compared with Luo Yin and Luo Chong, at least, he used both of his hands in order to deal with Enveloping Starlight.

Lu Ping slapped both of his hands, producing a sound like that of opening of a switch. Enveloping Starlight disappeared all at once, leaving behind just one ray of light fluttering between the palm of his hands.

Lu Ping revealed a bit of satisfied expression as if he has taken care of a mosquito just now.

Then he casually tossed Luo Xing's cherished Stary Needle to the side.

Luo Chong was still vomiting, still crying.

Within a moment, Stary Needle was rinsed with tears, snivel and vomit.

But, Luo Xing couldn't pay much attention to it, Lu Ping was approaching her step by step. All of her tricks were completely employed. Ultimately, she had only one weapon left.

She was a very good looking woman. Quite a few times, because her opponent had tender feelings for the opposite gender, she was able to turn defeat into victory.

So what about this time?

Although the other person just looks like a child, at least, he is a boy of fifteen or sixteen years.

Luo Xing was just preparing to give a smile, but Lu Ping's hand was already up.

It clenched into a fist, afterwards, she was also unable to see anything. Right after her face went askew and she bumped into Luo Chong.

In an instant, her beautiful face was not so beautiful anymore. Her chin was crooked, her perfect teeth, seven of them fell down, five were sent flying and two were swallowed....

Mo Lin was foolishly looking at it.

He knew Lu Ping is very strong, extremely strong. But being strong ought to have a limit, right? Now, he is already incapable of thinking about what realm is Lu Ping in. Three Linked one's, one was casually grabbed and tossed, one was punched to vomit and the last one was given a makeover by just a punch.

It's three Linked One's Oi!

Xing Luo Oi!

When he got that writ for the assassination of Luo Ming, one of the members of Xing Luo, he hesitated for three days whether to continue or not. Then he took another twenty-four days to study the four members of Xing Luo. Another eight days for daily habits and routine of Luo Ming. Then he waited for what seemed like a suitable opportunity, then bracing

himself for death, he eventually managed to kill Luo Ming by poison. Even after this, he was found out and chased to death by Xing Luo.

And what about now?

Frightening Xing Luo while facing Lu ping, even twenty seconds haven't passed and all three members got completely destroyed.

Luo Yin?

How was Luo Yin?

Mo Lin has already seen the appearances of Luo Chong and Luo Xing. But what about Luo Yin who was thrown away? Mo Lin raised his body up and looked in the direction where Luo Yin was thrown. He eventually managed to found Luo Yin who was.....already planted inside the Flower Garden.

That region was the swamp created due to Earthworm grass. Surprisingly, Luo Yin was planted into the ground by just a throw, the Strength's soul Lu Ping used behind that throw, Mo Lin was unable to imagine its intensity.

“ Finally, who is.....this?” Xi Fan who was collapsed on the ground was also muttering to himself. Too much have occurred. He still hasn't recovered from dizziness. And after all this, it would be even more difficult to recover.

“ This is what you call Garbage.”

As Mo Lin was speaking, he bent down to take a look at Xi Fan's condition again. Even his speed in stopping the bleeding of Xi Fan was less than the speed at which Lu Ping took care of Luo Chong and Luo Xing.

Although Xi Fan wished otherwise, but he couldn't do anything other than accepting the reality in front of his eyes. He was foolishly staring at what he considered to be Garbage, for whom he was racking his brain, wishing to drive him out of the courtyard. At present, he didn't know what to say.

“ You say, why did this person come?” However, Mo Lin still wished to chat with him.

“ I don’t know.”

Xi Fan said. He only knew that Lu Ping and Su Tang were brought back by the Dean when he returned three years ago. It was said that both of them were completely orphan, and from thereafter, the institute became their family. Soon after, Su Tang began to display outstanding talent, whereas Lu Ping had been called as Garbage for three years. He was treated with indifference everywhere. However, he continued on being the same as he always was, regardless of what others said. All kinds of mock and ridicule, all kinds of suppression, he silently endured all of it. As a result, it never led to any kind of conflict.

Due to it, it further let everybody think that he is without any future prospects, without any courage, just a useless kind of person.

However now....

Xi Fan only feels that everyone should rejoice like him that Lu Ping is like this, ‘without any future prospects’, ‘without any courage’ and ‘a useless kind of person’.

Chapter 13: Outstanding Students

The ‘Garbage’ of Zhai Feng institute Lu Ping returned besides the two individuals. Xi Fan immediately felt even more ill. He was at a loss for words. Fortunately, the realm of sixth Heavenly Layer of Essence’s soul does have some remarkable features of its own. He quickly began to control his spiritual essence. He crooked his head to one side and forcibly suppressed his dizziness.

“ Amazing!” Mo Lin gasped in admiration. Xi Fan is just a Perceiver and yet is able to make use of soul’s power to such an extent. He truly is outstanding in this regard.

“ Heavy blood loss. Injuries are not light. But he will be able to live.” Mo Lin stated the condition of Xi Fan to Lu Ping.

“ Let’s first move him into my room.” Lu Ping moved forward, although he used the word ‘move’, what he truly did was just casually lifting up Xi Fan by his clothes.

“ Hey, how to take care of those three?” Mo Lin hurriedly asked as he saw Lu Ping was about to leave with Xi Fan.

“ They were trying to find you. You can do as you please!” The unspoken meaning was, Mo Lin had to deal it himself.

“ You are not afraid that I will let them go and you will be disclosed?”

Mo Lin was suspicious. He has always believed that Lu Ping’s low profile was in order to evade from something. For three years, he had been undetected by institute’s people. If you think about how cautious he has been for these years, then silencing these three individuals would seem his way. However at present, apart from the Luo Yin who is planted lifelessly into the ground, both Luo Chong and Luo Yin are painfully **ing on the ground.

Lu Ping didn’t reply him, he just pretended to be indifferent.

“Uh.” Mo Lin didn’t ask him again anything further.

Killing a person, destroying the corpse.

As an assassin, he is very nimble in such affairs. Although, he is usually quite selective in taking on assignments, but since it was possible for him to take on the assignment to kill one of the members of Xing Luo: Luo Ming, taking care of the other three won't create any kind of psychological burden for him.

In some sense, Mo Lin doesn't consider himself to be a professional assassin. Professional assassins take missions, kill the target, dispose the corpse and collect the reward. They absolutely don't care about the circumstances. And him? Perhaps it could be said that he was interested in assassins but he doesn't wish to act as an assassin, rather he wish to act as a hero who punishes the wicked and purges the evil. The only difference is heroes act based on their sense of duty and he borrows the way of the hero to earn some money along the way. He feels that this is quite understandable and appropriate. However, for other people, he is just an assassin.

Assassin is just an Assassin! Mo Lin also doesn't care about it much. The feel from this name is also quite cool.

After swiftly taking care of three individuals of Xing Luo, Mo Lin also returned to Lu Ping's quarter. Xi Fan was casually thrown on the ground. And Lu Ping? Completely opposite to his expectations, Lu Ping was very comfortably lying on the bed. It seemed like he was almost asleep.

"Hey, Hey!" He madly shouted. This is how you treat an injured person? He truly couldn't bear to look anymore. Not to mention, Xi Fan also tried to save him.

"Sleeping." Lu Ping said.

"You are sleeping and he is just thrown on the ground like this?" Mo Lin shouted

"Ground is clean, though." Lu Ping said.

"That is not the problem!" Mo Lin shouted.

Thus, Lu Ping casually tore a piece of cloth from somewhere and threw it, covering the entire body of Xi Fan as if covering the body of a corpse.

“ He will also not catch a cold”

“ Like hell, he will not!” Mo Lin helplessly shouted and placed his buttocks on the ground underneath window’s ledge. In fact, he also knows, Xi Fan’s breath was even and his temperature was normal. There weren’t any major issues. Moreover, he himself didn’t has any strength remaining to support himself.

“ It’s no big deal, I will just sleep on the ground.” Mo Lin mumbled and bluntly slept in the flower garden that was outside the window.

“Hey, there is nothing with which I can cover myself.” Mo Lin abruptly yelled. He felt a little cold.

Bang!

Some unknown thing was thrown through the window. It crashingly came down and covered him. He also didn’t felt like checking. He wrapped himself and slept the entire night in the Flower Garden.

“ What’s going on? What happened?”

Next day’s morning, Su Tang’s shout woke the three individuals altogether. She arrived early morning to find Lu Ping. The first thing which caught her eye was Mo Lin sleeping under the window’s ledge.

Yesterday when Mo Lin stuck to Lu Ping, she was present. However, she didn’t expect this guy would be so devoted that he would guard outside the window all the time. She couldn’t help but gasp in surprise. However, as soon as she entered the room, she saw the some unknown thing covered in a blanket. And as she lifted the blanket and found Xi Fan, she was somewhat at a loss.

The first thing she did was to check Xi Fan’s breath. According to her, there is only one way for Lu Ping and Xi Fan to coexist under the same roof for a large amount of time and that is if either of them is dead.

After she verified that Xi Fan is alive, she couldn’t help but tense a little. However, after she quickly determined that Lu Ping is also alive, she couldn’t stop herself from waking up all three of them.

Mo Lin and Lu Ping were thoroughly awakened from the deep sleep. As for Xi Fan, he woke up in a semi-unconscious state. After he clearly looked at the surroundings, blankness in his eyes was much more than what was felt by Su Tang.

“How are you doing?” Lu Ping was the first one to ask.

Xi Fan tried to move and immediately felt pain from his injuries.

“Still living.” He said.

“Did you guys fight?” Su Tang asked.

If it was one day prior, Xi Fan would have very much liked to have a scuffle with Lu Ping. That way, he could have beat up this garbage into a pulp. However at present, fight with Lu Ping? Xi Fan took in a mouthful of cold air which caused his wounds to hurt again. He tried to stand up but failed.

Then, Su Tang was able to discover that injuries of Xi Fan are not as simple as just his face being covered with blood.

“What is going on?” She took a look at Xi Fan’s wound on his back as she supported him to stand up. Blood was stopped long ago but she couldn’t guess how was the wound managed, for it to turn out the way it did.

“Three assassins came here.” Lu Ping said as he got down from the bed.

“Xing Luo, heard of them?” Mo Lin also revealed his forehead through window’s opening.

“Xing Luo?” Su Tang looked towards Lu Ping.

“To look for him.” Lu Ping pointed towards the forehead.

“True, to look for me.” Mo Lin exerted all his strength and pushed himself up. He eventually managed to reveal his eyes and the portion below forehead.

“Have you seen my straw hat?” After being woken up by Su Tang, the first thing he cared about was his missing straw hat

“ No.” Lu Ping said.

“ When you found us yesterday, was I wearing it?”

“ I think not.”

“ Can you talk about important things?”

Su Tang was speechless. She was eagerly waiting to know what happened and these two just won't have enough of their discussions about the missing straw hat.

“ Three individuals of Xing Luo came to find him. After that.....after that what's their condition?” Lu Ping asked Mo Lin.

“ Turned into fertilizers.” Mo Lin said.

“ That's how it is.” Lu Ping said looking towards Su Tang.

After getting a general idea, Su Tang also didn't ask much afterwards. The important matter of its conclusion was obviously Xi Fan's injury. Soon after, institute's doctor was called. Discipline Squadron also received the news of their Captain's injury. And then the whole institute became aware of it. Then, even the Dean personally came to pay a visit. After all, Xi Fan is an outstanding student of the institute. Since he came, he also asked a few questions about yesterday's affairs. It was pretty much unavoidable.

However, the name Xing Luo made the people on the scene, which were not a few, suck in a mouthful of cold air. Mo Lin was very happy to have so many people who were like him. They clearly think that Xing Luo is a very frightening existence.

A bunch of frogs at the bottom of well! Mo Lin rejoiced at other people's misfortune.

However, the person who can get rid of Xing Luo is obviously more frightening. Some people sighed in admiration. One after another, people turned their shocked gazes towards Xi Fan. Everybody was completely convinced that it was done by Xi Fan by putting his life on the line. By sustaining heavy injuries, he was able to kill Xing Luo. And that Lin Mo's

realm is also not bad. Surely, he might have also helped quite a bit. As far as Lu Ping goes.....how come he wasn't killed by Xing Luo? Everybody displayed a disappointed look because of this reason.

"Not bad, not bad at all." However, Dean Godou didn't show different expressions for the three individuals.

"Future of Zhai Feng institute will rely on all of you outstanding students!" Godou sighed.

"Dean." Xi Fan reminded in a weak voice. "I am going to graduate in a few days."

"Dean." Mo Lin also raised his hand to speak. "I am just passing by."

"Dean." Lu Ping also spoke his mind, but this time, some people snatched his spot.

"He will be expelled in three more days." An explosion of laughter burst out.

Everyone felt that taking over his words like this was indeed very beautifully done. In fact, it was perfectly done.

Lu Ping smiled. He didn't say anything. However, Xi Fan and Mo Lin quietly exchanged a glance. They felt, after three days, there would be quite a show worth watching during the Annual Assessment.

Chapter 14: Joint Major Assessment

Discipline Squadron arranged a stretcher. They were preparing to carry Xi Fan back towards his residence to let him recover. Xi Fan looked towards Lu Ping several times. From his appearance, it looked like he wished to say something to Lu Ping. However, the word 'thanks' couldn't manage to escape from his mouth. In the end, his emotions towards Lu Ping couldn't transform this quickly.

Xi Fan was carried away and the group of people who had come to express their condolences immediately dispersed. Mo Lin, the new student who had joined the courtyard just a day ago, there were some people who expressed their concern for him. However, for Lu Ping, there wasn't even a single greeting. No one paid attention to whether he had sustained injuries or not. No one asked what role did he play in this time's incident.

"Is that even worth to be asked? He certainly would have just been a burden." Everyone presumed it to be the case.

Quarter resumed its quietness, leaving behind only Su Tang.

For three years, Su Tang was the sole individual who would come to this quarter.

She was silently sorting out the much messed up Quarter which no one ever visits. She was standing by the window.

The weather was nice once again but the Flower Garden outside the window wasn't as rich and diverse as it looked on any other day. Due to yesterday's fierce battle, the situation of Flower Garden was even more critical than Lu Ping's quarter.

"You still haven't left for the class?" Lu Ping asked from behind her body.

"I am just about to leave." Su Tang's vision returned from outside of the window. She pointed towards the small table "Breakfast is over there."

"Ok." Lu Ping nodded.

"Then I will go. That Xing Luo something, will it still have some

aftermath?”

“That’s not very likely.” Lu Ping said.

“ Be a little careful.”

“ Don’t worry.”

Su Tang left. Lu Ping went over to the small table and took hold of the breakfast.

Steamed buns were already cold. Lu Ping didn’t mind it, though. He was silently eating it by the window. He was already habitual of being alone while Su Tang was at classes to cultivate. Outside the window, Mo Lin was taking a scolding from Mo Sen with a helpless face. Lu Ping looked at it for some time. In the end, he couldn’t help himself from smiling.

This scene, in his view, was actually very warm. If love is deep, then the duties corresponding to it are absolute! Even though he disgusts Mo Sen Laoshi, even though the times when he had been scolded were not a few, but every time after saying two or three harsh words, Mo Sen Laoshi didn’t bother with him anymore. When did there ever was such a lengthy discussion of Mo Sen Laoshi patiently advising him of his shortcomings?

This guy’s relation with Mo Sen Loashi should be a little deeper than he expected it to be!

As he was thinking, over that side, Mo Sen was finally over with his reprimand. Afterwards, he immediately went to examine the plants and flowers spoiled yesterday to see if they could still be saved. And Mo Lin? He somehow managed to find the straw hat which was missing since he woke up early morning. Putting it on his head, he once again arrived at the Quarter’s window.

This time, Lu Ping didn’t avoid him. He handed over the two steamed buns he had saved for him.

Mo Lin accepted them.

“ Only two?” He mumbled to himself.

“ Completely cold. ” He complained again.

“Eating cold is not good for your stomach.” Mo Lin stuffed one of them in his mouth and spoke.

“What is your relation with Mo Sen Laoshi?” Lu Ping asked.

“He is my second uncle.” Mo Lin said.

“Your surname is also Mo.”

“Correct, Actually I am called Mo Lin. Don’t speak it outside!” Mo Lin said.

“Is it necessary?”

“Of course, I am but an Assassin. Moreover, I am avoiding from being chased to ..huff(gasps)...death?

As he spoke more, more faint his voice became. While speaking, he eventually recalled that people who were chasing him had already into nutrients for this Flower Garden.

“It looks like it’s not that necessary after all.” Mo Lin said. “It’s just that, being an Assassin, concealing the name is always good. Is your name alias or not?”

“It’s not.” Lu Ping said.

“Can you be my teacher?” Mo Lin said.

“What?” Lu Ping jumped frightenedly due to being suddenly asked such a question by Mo Lin. Originally, Lu Ping believed that Mo Lin would ask him all those questions filled with curiosity next, as he did yesterday.

“When I joined the institute yesterday, Dean asked me which teacher do I wish to follow. At that time, without giving it much thought, I randomly gave my uncle’s name. However, at this moment, I think you are the most suitable.” Mo Lin said extremely seriously. In terms of age, he should be bigger than Lu Ping by two or three years. However, he didn’t feel that this is something embarrassing. He was looking at Lu Ping with a look filled with anticipation.

“I can’t teach you anything.” Lu Ping said.

“ Don’t decline so quickly. Carefully think about it again.” Mo Lin said.

“ I truly can’t teach you anything.” After saying this, Lu Ping once again returned to lie on the bed.

“Pretending to be a corpse again. Hey Hey! ” Mo Lin madly shouted, but he was once again refused outside the window.

Three days of time flashed past in an instant. At last, the time for Annual Yearly Assessment has arrived.

Within these three days, nothing happened inside Zhai Feng institute. Only, a bad news was spreading. Discipline Squadron’s captain Xi Fan is recovering from heavy injuries and thus won’t be able to participate in Annual Assessment.

After this news spread around, new student Mo Lin immediately sought out Dean Godou.

“ Can I substitute?” He seriously asked. He feels himself to be heavily responsible for Xi Fan’s injuries. If it was not for his existence, Xing Luo definitely wouldn’t have shown up at Zhai Feng institute. Similarly, if it was not for trying to save him, Xi Fan wouldn’t be injured like this. Therefore, he feels he should substitute for Xi Fan. It was pretty reasonable.

However, although Zhai Feng institute’s rules are very relaxed, even though this time the circumstances are special, it is still not possible to allow something such as substituting in Annual Assessment

The result, at that time Mo Lin was kicked out of Dean’s room.

Soon after, Dean decided to provide special compensation for Xi Fan. After his body recovers, he would have one more chance to take the major test.

Even though it was like this, many people still felt regret for Xi Fan.

An institute’s Major Assessment, people who take notice of it are not just limited to teachers and students. Every country, every major power on the continent pay attention to it.

Although Zhai Feng is not like four major institutes whose reputation soars in the entire continent, but in a desolate province such as Xia Feng region, it is one of the only two institutes. However, when compared with the other institute in the region, the Xia Feng institute, its influence is quite lacking. Xia Feng institute as of now already has a history of two hundred years. It was jointly established with Xia Feng region and has developed alongside with it. It has a deep background and profound resources. Moreover, it has always been revered in the Xia Feng region. Relying on the famous identity of the Dean Godou, Zhai Feng institute quickly strengthened despite being established after it. However, it still cannot compare to the two hundred years worth of accumulation of Xia Feng institute.

Yearly Annual Assessment is conducted collaboratively by the two institutes, thus, it was natural to have a desire to compete. The amount of students in Xia Feng institute is much more as compared to Zhai Feng institute. Till now, Xia Feng had always been the leading institute. However, in the few most recent years, Xia Feng institute's prestige has turned somewhat lightless because of some exceedingly outstanding students appearing in Zhai Feng institute.

And Xi Fan had been in the limelight for the last two consecutive Major Assessments. In this time's fourth grade Assessment, he was originally a major headache for Xia Feng institutes. However, as the news of him being seriously injured arrived, they immediately felt that the gates of fortunes have opened up for them.

“ Such a pity! How could Xi Fan possibly be so careless? “ Sitting in the middle of the Monitoring platform naturally are the Dean's of two institutes. Xia Feng institute's Dean Baliyan was conveying his regret and sympathy to Godou with a foxy smile.

“ It's all good as long as he is ok.” Godou indifferently said.

“ Haha. Of course, that's most important.” As Baliyan was laughing, the row of Xia Feng courtyard's teachers besides him also immediately joined the fray.

As soon as they were over with it, a few people approached them:
“Dean, it’s almost time.”

“ Oh, that’s fine. Then, prepare to begin right away! Do it just like always. Begin with the first years and let students of Zhai Feng institute come first. They are quite less. It would be much quicker.”

The sound of the clock rang up. It indicated to begin the preparations for the test. First-grade students of both the institutes positioned themselves in formations under the tower.

Soul’s Tower.

This is the place used for examination by all the institutes to assess their students under normal conditions. Different institutes have different designing criteria. The Soul’s Tower used by Zhai Feng and Xia Feng institutes consist a total of twelve floors. Students enter the tower with the objective to ascend. Each floor is of eight fen(Tl: 3fen=1 cm), twelve floors add it up to a total of ninety-six fen. However, if it seemed like even the twelve floors would be crossed, then there is an additional four fen required to be crossed in order to obtain a perfect score of hundred.

Although it is just four fen, it’s still the most difficult part. Throughout the twenty Annual Assessments of Zhai Feng institute, there had been only four individuals who hold the record of obtaining full marks. And all of these four individuals eventually being absorbed by the Four Major Academies for advanced learning has been the biggest pride of Zhai Feng institute.

“ Zhai Feng’s new students of this year seems full of spirit!” Baliyan said with feigned courtesy as he swept his gaze over the first-grade students of Zhai Feng institute. As a matter of fact, he was completely aware of Zhai Feng institute’s first-grade students’ level.

“ Oh, five kinds of soul’s power. Not bad at all!” Baliyan pretended that it was astonishing. He had known all along that there is only a single individual like this in the entire first graders. As for the name, he didn’t remember it. The reason is, he absolutely didn’t feel that such an accomplishment is worth remembering.

It was not surprising, though. In this year's first graders of Xia Feng institute, there were so many students being able to perceive five kinds of souls that he couldn't even completely remember them all. Students being able to perceive all six kinds of souls were no less than twelve. Among them, three even managed to break through into the realm of first Heavenly Layer. In front of such first graders, Zhai Feng institute was bound to leave defeated. Baliyan didn't mind throwing in a few lines of praise. More one is raised up through praise, more severe would be the fall!

He continued to sweep every student individually through his gaze. However, when he saw an individual wearing a straw hat at the second last position of the line, his gaze lingered a bit. Then, he increased his soul's power a bit to confirm if he had mistakenly observed.

Baliyan's complexion changed in an instant.

"Dean Guo(Tl: Godou= Guo You Dao, he ain't acting cozy!), isn't one of the students in your first grade a bit too good? Sixth Heavenly layer in Pivot's soul? Is this a first-grade student? Dean Guo truly spares no effort on his part. However, isn't this a bit bad to look at?" Baliyan's complexion changed but he wasn't flustered. A student with such a realm is in first grade? It would be absolutely impossible to convince people about it. This kind of student lined up in the row of Zhai Feng's first graders to strengthen their competitive power seems rather stupid.

"Dean Bai, are you talking about that individual wearing the straw hat? You misunderstood. He is here just to see a little liveliness. He won't be participating in the Assessment. He is an Advanced Learning Student." Godou calmly and unhurriedly said.

"Advanced.....Advanced Learning Student?" This time, Baliyan was unable to conceal his shock. Advanced Learning Student, as the Dean of an institute, he is only too clear about what this implies. This is a kind of an acknowledgment. This is because, only when an institute is exceedingly outstanding, would it be possible to gain the consent of other people to come for Advanced Learning. Although, Xia Feng institute possess a history of two hundred years, but since it is situated at such a

widespread desolate region, it's reputation is not much better than Zhai Feng institute considering the whole continent. Never ever had been a person who had come to their courtyard with Advanced Learning in mind. However, at the moment, there seems to be an Advanced Learning Student in Zhai Feng institute?

Baliyan deeply suspected the authenticity of this fact. However, Godou already told him that this student won't be taking part in the Assessment. As for whether the student has truly come for Advanced Learning, Godou didn't feel any need to explain it to him.

Without any choice, Baliyan continued to move his gaze backwards. Behind the body of the straw hat male, was the last student of Zhai Feng institute's first grade.

Huh? Huh?

Baliyan once again confirmed his observations twice before he could be certain. Then, he let out a smile: " Dean Guo is able to let such a student remain here. This truly is praiseworthy. Is he also here to see the liveliness?".

Chapter 15: Internal Trouble Outside

Aggression

This time, Baliyan has finally struck the crucial point. Although, Godou's expression was still same as ever, but rest of Zhai Feng teachers had unnatural expressions.

The students of first grade have just barely made contact with Soul's Power. Considering the level of Soul's Power of these teachers present on the Invigilating platform, the disparity in the level of first graders of Zhai Feng and the first graders of Xia Feng was obvious at just a glance.

Zhai Feng institute was bound to loose. Moreover, would loose quite miserably. What's more was, they had an individual called Lu Ping among them. This garbage's level would be the final blow for them.

At this moment, teacher beside Baliyan moved closer and said a few words to him. After that, his smile became much more unrestrained.

"So, it turns out, he is Lu Ping. I have heard about him. He is a repeater who had failed two consecutive Major Assessments. How come I didn't see him before?" Baliyan smilingly said.

"It's because, he didn't fail the previous two Assessments, rather he didn't come to take the test." Godou said.

"Ha ha." Baliyan was further delighted. "From your words, it seemed like he would have been able to pass if he happened to come. Oh old Guo, I am not saying about you. Your institute's rules are truly a bit too lenient. For a student like this, you are allowing to spare three chances? At our Xia Feng institute, I would have kicked him out within a month. The Assessment wouldn't even have mattered!"

"Dean, Dean....." The teacher beside him immediately yanked him twice. Their Dean was too pleased and was overstepping a little. It was too inelegant.

Baliyan immediately coughed twice. He also realized that he wasn't being too modest. He adjusted his mood for a short moment. Then using

an 'everything steady and stable' voice, he said:

"Shall we begin?"

"Begin!" The invigilator standing beside the Soul's Tower officially began the Major Assessment.

"We will first begin with Zhai Feng institute. The student whose name is called, enter the Soul's Tower to carry out the examination. Ascend the tower. Use whatever means you can. First to fourth floor, every floor's time limit is half minutes;

Fifth to eighth floor, every floor's time limit is one minute. Ninth to eleventh floor, every floor's time limit is two minutes. Twelfth floor, the time limit is four minutes. Arriving on the seventh floor would be considered as passing the test. And the amount of overall time taken would influence the final evaluation. Are my words clear?" The Invigilator declared the rules of the test.

"Clear!" Students replied in unison. Actually, everybody had already heard about it through teachers and senior classmates.

"Very well. In that case, begin now. The first candidate, Se Nan."

"Go."

Upon hearing the called out name, student Se Nan separated himself from the line. Two Invigilators immediately sent out their soul's power to perform a quick inspection. It was not to examine the student's realm, rather it was to inspect whether the student is carrying any articles prohibited articles during Major Assessment such as weapons, drugs etc.

"No problem." Only after gaining the approval from the two Invigilators, student Se Nan was permitted to proceed towards the Soul's Tower.

Towers gate was tightly closed. On the door, there was a hollow impression to receive the palm print. Se Nan very slowly pressed his palm inside. Although, he had heard Seniors saying that 'this obstacle is very simple, as long as one has perceived soul's power, he would be possible to pass through', but he was still having butterflies in his stomach due to

nervousness.

However, soon after, he heard a voice resembling the voice produced when a key is clicked inside the lock. Entrance door of Soul's tower quietly and unhurriedly opened.

It was too simple!

The student wasn't required to make any effort other than placing his palm inside the depression on the door. Soul's Tower automatically perceived the Soul's Power possessed by the student.

As the door opened, Se Nan was able to calm down his butterflies by quite a bit. He turned his body and waved towards his fellow students. Then, he entered the Soul's Tower. The gate behind his body was gently closed.

"Se Nan. Add oil!" (Tl: It's a kind of cheering) First graders of Zhai Feng institute loudly cheered.

"Ha ha ha ha." However, they immediately heard voices with a lot of sneers mixed within.

"For the first-grade test, you need to 'add oil'. Isn't this a bit too disappointing?"

At a side, the first graders of Xia Feng institute were waiting for Zhai Feng institute's first graders to finish their test. They disdained that 'Add oil' yell of Zhai Feng institute's students. According to them, the first-grade test is too simple. How could you even want to cheer 'Add oil' for a feat like this.

"Truly a group of country bumpkins." Xia Feng commented while pointing their fingers.

Students of Zhai Feng institute were obviously not happy with it. Some individuals immediately responded with harsh words of their own. Without waiting for the mockery of both sides to escalate, Invigilators immediately came over to put it to an end.

"Honestly saying...." At the tail of the line, Mo Lin said to Lu Ping in a

low voice ” I think they are actually right. Is there a need to yell ‘Add oil’ for such a simple test? I am a little bit ashamed to stand in this line. I am not blushing, am I?”

” No.” Lu Ping was actually very calm.

And at this moment, Se Nan inside the Soul’s Tower was as like a ‘hot knife through butter’. First floor....Second floor.....Third floor...As soon as a floor was crossed, a ring would shine on the Soul’s Tower. The achievements of the student going through the test were obvious at a glance.

Same as before, fourth floor, fifth floor and sixth floor were also crossed rapidly. Barely a minute had passed and he was able to rush up to the sixth floor. It seemed extremely easy.

Students of Zhai Feng institute straightened themselves, feeling very proud. They couldn’t resist throwing a few provocative glances towards the students of Xia Feng institute. However, at the end of the line, some people have cold water poured over them.

Mo Lin was wearing an unbearable expression and holding onto his head: “Ah! This is too bad.....In a moment, they will have their face painted with red.”

Although, Mo Lin’s realm was not the realm of Linking Up of souls, but it was sufficient to perceive the levels of these first graders. Just like the teachers, he was only too clear about the disparity between the first graders of Zhai Feng institute the first graders of Xia Feng institute. However, these first graders are not aware of it. Their confrontational spirit is too strong.

” They are courting their own disaster...” Mo Lin lamented. Meanwhile, looking over to the side of Xia Feng students, with regards to Zhai Feng institute’s provocation, their attitude was once again that of disdain. You are not high enough to even be our opponent. But the unfortunate thing was, Mo Lin clearly knew that they had the qualifications to act like this.

” Ah! My heart hurts too much.” Mo Lin said while holding his chest. ” Only a few days have passed since I entered the institute, how could I

have such a strong feeling for the belonging. I will leave early to roam somewhere else. I will return at your turn. Only you can redeem a little bit of our face. It's just that, a test of this kind.....”

Mo Lin looked towards Soul's tower and shook his head. The test for first graders truly is too simple. Even if someone is able to go through all of it, people would not consider him as a freak. He can make out at least three individuals at the side of Xia Feng institute who have broken through into the first Heavenly Layer. This is sufficient to have a crack at scoring full marks in this test. Going by this way, it will all rely on Lu Ping alone. And ultimately due to his performance, members of Zhai Feng institute themselves would be slapped on the face.

Pitiable students of Zhai Feng institute were completely unaware of all this. They were still enthusiastically discussing the performance of Se Nan while maintaining their distance from Lu Ping. And if by mistake, their vision somehow found him, it would turn into a despising look at once.

After leaving, Mo Lin wandered everywhere aimlessly. Eventually, over the side of fourth graders, his vision found Xi Fan who was unexpectedly not resting at home. A member of Discipline Squadron was managing his wheelchair. Although, he was not able to participate, but he was concerned about the performance of his institute.

” The future of Zhai Feng institute would rely on all you outstanding students.” Mo Lin was imitating the tone of Godou, standing behind the body of Xi Fan.

” What are you doing here?” Xi Fan knew, Mo Lin doesn't need to take the Major Assessment.

” Just casually strolling.” Mo Lin said.

” Over that side.....how is it going?” Xi Fan was asking about first graders.

” Internal Trouble Outside Aggression.” Mo Lin said.

“What?” Xi Fan didn't understand.

” From the outside, they are about to be crushed by Xia Feng. And from the inside, they are about to be slapped by Lu Ping’s performance. You tell me, it’s miserable or not?”

Xi Fan went deep into thought without saying anything. This truly is such a matter, he didn’t know what could be said about it.

” Who knows how would that guy perform. He is too calm and collected. It’s only been a few days since I joined the institute, but I really wish to kill those arrogant bastards of Xia Feng courtyard by poison. Say, why do I feel such a strong sense of belonging.” Mo Lin said.

Xi Fan completely ignored the nonsense spouted by him. Suddenly, he heard bursts of cheering coming from the side of first graders.

” What’s happening?” Xi Fan’s Sound’s Soul don’t possess any realm. He wasn’t able to hear most of the details.

” An individual named Ba Yong is currently discussed.” Mo Lin’s Sound’s soul is at third Heavenly Layer. He was able to obtain the information as soon as he employed it.

“Oh.” Xi Fan knew Ba Yong. He is the most remarkable individual in the current batch of first graders. He has already perceived up to five kinds of soul’s power.

“Ba Yong, Ba Yong!” First graders of Zhai Feng were cheering in the chorus.

Ba Yong was even quicker up to the sixth floor. However, what made the first graders excited was that even the sixth floor was crossed by him like a hot knife cutting through butter.

For the previous student, first to sixth floor went without a hitch. He crossed all the floors with an imposing manner. However, he wasted a time span of one minute on the sixth floor. Clearly, from the beginning of sixth floor, difficulty is not like that of previous floors. In the end, if one wishes to burst in the seventh floor, an effort different than previous one’s is required.

Although it was so, every student still managed to clear it. For the time

being, a student not being able to clear the passing requirement, the seventh floor, hasn't appeared.

However, after the seventh floor, the students won't be imposing like before. Some would stop at seventh, some at eighth and the most remarkable individual till now is also merely at the ninth floor.

And at present, it's Ba Yong.

The most outstanding student among the first-grade students of Zhai Feng has easily stepped upon the seventh floor.

There was envy. There was admiration. However, for this examination, in which both Zhai Feng and Xia Feng are placed on either side of spear's edge, everyone spared their wrath for a single enemy.

Amidst of shouts, Ba Yong has already rushed up to the eight floor. The sudden rise in difficulty increased his time consumption. However, regardless of words; Eighth floor, ninth floor, tenth floor....nothing was able to stop him. It lasted till the eleventh floor.

One minute.....Two minutes.....Two and a half.....Three

Time was over. Finally, Ba Yong was stopped at the eleventh floor. His face was filled with regret when he was sent out of the tower.

" Ah! Just a bit more!" He said to other students.

"Don't mind. It was already pretty outstanding." Students who got along well with him consoled. After that, they again became agitated. They sent out provocative looks towards Xia Feng one more time.

" You bunch of frogs at the bottom of the well truly are unbearable." An individual walked out from the line of Xia Feng.

" Are you called Ba Yong?" The individual said to Ba Yong. Then, he stretched his hand and pointed towards the north-east direction with his fingers. " Two hundred meters away, the bird on the tree top, what is it?"

" What?" Ba Yong was surprised for a moment. He followed former's finger and saw the tree. Is there a bird at the top of the tree?

" Can't see? So, now you realize the difference?" That student

disdainfully said.

” Anyone could spout nonsense. Eight kilometres away, what is that bird? Can I trouble you to tell me?” Some Zhai Feng students shouted.

” Hehe. You can ask the teacher to confirm whether it’s Pinguinus Impennis(a flightless bird) standing on the branch.” The student spoke with complete confidence. And the teacher he talked about was precisely of Zhai Feng’s, so as to free himself from any suspicions of collaboration.

That teacher had also heard the arguments between the two sides. He exclaimed ” It is Pinguinus Impennis. If one has first Heavenly Layer in Infusion’s soul, then he might be able to clearly see it.”

“Infusion’s Soul.....First Heavenly Layer? ” The complexion of all Zhai Feng’s first graders turned completely different.

Chapter 16: Soul's Tower Flunked

"Hehe." All the first-grade students of Xia Feng were laughing. Their laugh seemed very modest. Even a single bit of it wasn't leaking out. However, compared with the aggressive display of Zhai Feng's first-grade students after the explosive performance of Ba Yong, such modest and calm attitude of Xia Feng's students immediately turned into the biggest possible ridicule.

Every student of Zhai Feng felt thoroughly ashamed. Ba Yong was even more dumbstruck. He was unable to say anything for a long time.

At Zhai Feng, his fellow students praised him as a genius. Teachers would also frequently use him as an example. Such things allowed him to slowly set his preferences as such. Although teachers also frequently warned him that there are people beside him, but he always believed that this was done by teachers to not let him become arrogant.

He wasn't arrogant, but it also wasn't possible for him to be overly humble.

He is a genius. However, he is a genius who is also willing to strive.

Ba Yong always thought as such and acted according to it. However, at present, it seems like perceiving five kinds of souls absolutely doesn't count as anything? Among the first grade students of Xia Feng, there are some individuals who have even broken through into first the Heavenly Layer.

"Cheer up. You are just in first grade. The realm is not important at all." Teachers of Zhai Feng specifically came over and began to explain Ba Yong.

Ba Yong showed his approval with a sound. However, his heart had already begun to waver. Was he truly not outstanding enough or is it.....Xia Feng educating manner is more outstanding?

First Heavenly Layer of Infusion's soul. For Zhai Feng, it was the first show of strength by Xia Feng. Everyone looked completely dispirited.

There was no more mutual encouragement. Furthermore, they no longer dared to provoke the side of Xia Feng courtyard. They were afraid to even look at the other side.

” Add oil!”

“Cheer up!”

Opposite to what one might expect, students of Xia Feng seemed pretty concerned about the vigor of Zhai Feng’s students. However, when to you take that that smirking appearance and deliberately dragging the end tune after every line, it was clearly akin to throwing stones at a drowning person.

It made Zhai Feng students further depressed. But, then again, what could be done about it? First Heavenly Layer! Who amongst them could compete against it? Even Ba Yong was brought down.

And on the examination stage, Baliyan perhaps would be dancing right now, if not for taking modesty and demeanor into consideration.

This year’s first graders are really good at venting off!

Of course, he can only say these words in his mind. Truly saying it would sound too shameless.

” Zhai Feng students are completing lacking their spirit!” He stated it this way.

That was true, though. After such a huge setback, they were completely spiritless. In accordance with the order, as their name was called, they would enter the Soul’s Tower to take the test like a complete machine. It seemed like they wanted to be over with this Assessment as soon as possible.

No new student after entering the Soul’s Tower showed any sort of brilliant performance. The majority of them were only able to reach up to the seventh floor. Two students even failed to step on the seventh floor. This was definitely not normal. It also made the concerned two students even more disheartened.

Eventually, it was almost finished.

As Zhai Feng students watched their line getting continuously shortened, every one of them breathed a sigh of relief. It lasted till Lu Ping was preparing to enter the tower after his name was called.

The dropped heads of Zhai Feng dropped even more.

Truly unfortunate! They were already ashamed to show their faces in front of Xia Feng. On top of it, this guy is here to drag down the limit even more. For this guy, who completely lacks Soul's Power, even entering the tower would be impossible!

Many students already began to cover their faces. Not only them, even a few teachers on the stage also displayed weird expressions on their faces.

The reason was; instances of students being unsuccessful to enter the seventh floor of Soul's Tower due to inadequate soul's power or not being able to perform as usual, would happen now and then. But if one is unable to even enter the door of Soul's Tower, if one is unable to prevail over the eight fen of the first floor, that would be the greatest humiliation possible. What is this? You don't even possess the capability to teach a single bit of Soul's Power to the student? Teachers don't care about Lu Ping's face. They care about Zhai Feng's face and even more about their own face.

"It looks like everyone is really looking forward to this guy?" Baliyan took notice of completely hard pressed Zhai Feng and struck an appetizing ironic remark towards Godou. Looking forward to Lu Ping's performance, obviously, these words were meant for Xia Feng.

Godou smiled and didn't comment on it. At this moment, two invigilators had also conducted their checking. Both of them displayed strange looks. After exchanging a glance with each other, they increased the power of their abilities to perceive one more time.

"What happened?" Head Invigilator walked over.

"He doesn't possess soul's power." Actually, this couldn't be blamed on two Invigilators. They only discovered it during the first inspection in

passing. Mildly curious, they decided to perceive it one more time. And the result was that he truly doesn't possess soul's power.

"What?" Head Invigilator also did the same. As expected, it was true.

Right! Don't allow him to take the test!

Hope was ignited in all the students of Zhai Feng students simultaneously. If Lu Ping is stopped here, how much better it would be as compared to when he won't be able to even open the door of Soul's Tower?

But....

"You want to take the test?" Head Invigilator left the decision to Lu Ping.

Don't! Everyone's heart simultaneously cried. However, Lu Pin's answer was "Yes. Or else I am going to get expelled."

Final Struggle! was the thought in everyone's mind. As they thought about the huge humiliation they are just about to face because of this Garbage, they couldn't help but choke a little.

"That's ok. Go next." Head invigilator didn't prevent Lu Ping again.

"Just confirming it one more time, as long as I can rush at the top of the Tower, it would suffice, right?" Lu Ping suddenly said.

Head Invigilator glanced at him, then nodded his head "That's right."

Is he trying to play some petty mind games?

A lot of people who heard Lu Ping's words were thinking such things. However, the Head Invigilator didn't bother to pay attention if there was some kind of trap in Lu Ping's words. Wishing to bend the rules of Major Assessment through some cheap mind games, are all these personnel acting as Invigilators morons without a brain?

Ding!

The sound of the clock could be heard from Soul's Tower. The Zhai Feng's candidate stopped somewhere on the seventh floor. He wasn't able to cross the seventh floor, but it was sufficient to pass the test.

Thereupon, he was immediately delivered out of the tower.

" Passed!" Head Invigilator immediately declared. Immediately after, he called the name of the final student of Zhai Feng courtyard: " Lu Ping."

" Yes." Lu Ping responded.

Head Invigilator didn't say anything, he just signaled him to begin.

There was moaning and groaning all around on the side of Zhai Feng. Only two individuals...

Mo Lin had returned with Xi Fan at the scene of the first-grade examinations to watch the performance of Lu Ping. Mo Lin's entire face was filled with expectations. Xi Fan, however, was in a dilemma. Although, he was not willing to see such a depressed Zhai Feng, but he was also not willing to see Lu Ping, the guy who has always been considered as Garbage to shock everybody upside down. Because he himself has gone through that very feeling. It isn't the least bit beautiful.

What would be good then?

Xi Fan was unable to figure it out. At this moment, Lu Ping has already arrived at the door of Soul's Tower. He raised his right hand and pressed it for the hand print.

Tower's gate didn't respond at all.

See that, I knew it!

All of the Zhai Feng was struck with tearless grief. Over that side, the first-grade students of Xia Feng students didn't possess high enough realm to tell that Lu Ping doesn't possess soul's power. For a short duration they were blanked, then they realized what does Soul's Tower's loss of reaction implies. Actually, this kind of situation has never ever happened before. They had no concept of it!

Surprisingly, there was such a disappointing student yet to go? Can't even open the Tower's gate?

" Ha ha ha ha." This time, Xia Feng students couldn't manage their false modesty. They laughed like a madman. Many individuals held their

stomachs. They laughed until tears appeared in their eyes.

The sound of the laughter felt like a sharp sword, piercing inside out of Zhai Feng's heart.

Head Invigilator had already anticipated such an outcome. He was just about to move forward to conclude the test of Lu Ping. You haven't even entered the tower, why don't you save your Movement Skills.

Who could have anticipated that at this moment, a loud sound of an explosion would rang out.

Gate opened.

No. In precise terms, one should say: The gate flew.

By the time everybody responded, Lu Ping's right hand which was pressed inside the door had already disappeared.

After that, everybody saw him entering the Tower. However, the Tower's Gate behind his body didn't close. The back of his body was burned in the eyes of everyone who was present.

Then, immediately afterward, it shifted into their minds.

Because the figure had already disappeared.

On the second floor?

Everyone raised their head to look. Sure enough, a halo was illuminated at a lightning fast speed. However.....isnt it shining a bit high? This doesn't seem to be second floor.....it's the seventh floor?

One step....seven floors?

What is this?

Everyone was stupefied. The halos of lower floors; second floor, third floor, fourth floor, fifth floor and sixth floor haven't shined at all. In this one step, Lu Ping has reached the seventh floor!

" What is happening?" The Dean of Xia Feng, Baliyan involuntarily cried out. All of a sudden, he stood up from his seat, with his big belly sticking out. As he did, thick soul's power was involuntarily discharged. Table at

the front of him was sent flying due to it.

Hua!

The table broke down and scattered in all four directions. At this moment, the halo of the tenth floor also shined.

First step Seventh floor. The second step, Tenth floor!

The height which most of the first graders were incapable of reaching even after sparing no effort on their part, Lu Ping only used a blink of eye. Only used Two Steps.

After that, Third step.

Twelfth floor!

The eleventh floor was also skipped. This was Zhai Feng's former best achievement obtained by Ba Yong. However, at present, it didn't even possess the qualifications to cause Lu Ping to halt temporarily.

" This...." Baliyan finally recovered from the rare instance of being in shock and state of absent-mindedness. In a split second, his gaze turned harsh. He swept his glance through the Xia Feng's teacher sitting beside him.

The teacher immediately got the meaning.

They had some special arrangements at the twelve floor. However, they never anticipated that these special arrangements would be used on a first-grade student. These special arrangements are too much for a first-grade student. If not handled properly, it would be huge trouble.

However, the Dean has already hinted. This guy also doesn't seem like an ordinary first-grade student.

Initiate!

The teacher was preparing to use his ability right away.

Explosion!

Huge Explosion!

Twelfth floor was already destroyed and a figure of man could be seen

standing at the apex of the Tower. People possessing realms of Infusion's soul were able to clearly see, it was Lu Ping. A very calm Lu Ping.

Rumble Rumble Rumble Rumble Rumble Rumble!

Before any person could respond, sounds of successive of explosions could be heard coming from Soul's Tower. From every floor, dust began to fly all around. Tower began to tilt and collapse.

"Run for it!" Head Invigilator shouted in a loud voice.

Invigilators and the students of the two institutes who were gathered under the Soul's Tower immediately dispersed in all four directions to evade.

Soul's Tower collapsed and turned into ruins within a short duration of time. From within the thick dust, ascending towards the sky, a figure was walking out. He was getting more and more clear.

Lu Ping.

"This Soul's Tower flunked." Lu Ping said.

Chapter 17: Tower has collapsed, what now

The time seemed to have stopped.

Dean on the Invigilating Platform, teachers, personnel responsible for the discipline who were near the scene of fourth-grade examination, furthermore, the students of both the courtyards from first grade to fourth grade and excluding both courtyards, the members of powers from all directions who have specifically come to observe the Major Assessment. All of them were in the same posture: Motionless. Only their eyeballs were rotating in accordance with a certain figure.

Originally, it was impossible for the Major Assessment of the first grade to be the focus of attention of everybody. Second, third and fourth grades were more likely to display the level of the students of the corresponding institutes.

However, at this moment, Major Assessment of the first grade was everybody's center of attention, even though it didn't attract that much attention at first. For a short while, it was still unclear what had just occurred. The only thing that they felt important was the collapse of the Soul's Tower. However, when they get their hands on the whole story, everybody, in the exact same way, opened their eyes wide and stared at that figure.

The figure was calmly and unhurriedly walking. The pace of the steps wasn't too quick, but it wasn't too slow either. It resembled like an ordinary walk on the road. Then, that figure returned back to the side of Zhai Feng's first-grade students.

The students subconsciously pulled open space for him. At present, everybody's vision wasn't ignoring him rather it instinctively avoided him as if avoiding some inconceivably frightening monster.

Lu Ping's vision was same as ever. It was same as when he was despised for three years. As tranquil as ever.

Students looked at each other in dismay. Invigilators were also at their wits' end. Head Invigilator was holding achievement table in his hands.

However, he didn't know what to record.

Ascending to the Tower's apex is full marks, 100.

Collapsing the entire Soul's Tower, what marks does this correspond to? This kind of affair has never happened before. Not in the entire continent.

Head Invigilator thought over and over. It isn't his place to make the decision in such a matter. Thereupon, he was preparing to go to the higher ups of the two institutes. However, as soon as the first-grade students of Xia Feng saw that he was about to leave, they immediately flocked towards him.

"Teacher, what about our Assessment?" They asked in succession.

Head Invigilator suddenly had a much bigger headache coming for him. That's true! Xia Feng's students still haven't taken the test but there is no Soul's Tower anymore. Soul's Tower are designed specifically. Soul's Towers of second, third or fourth grade would be unsuitable. Saying that it would be life threatening for the first-grade students would be an understatement.

"Everyone, wait for a moment. I will go ask..." Head Invigilator also didn't dare to make any promises. After pacifying a little bit, he hurriedly left.

At this moment, was it possible for Xia Feng to be enthusiastic as before? In the end, Lu Ping turned out to be too frightening. However, for the time being, they don't care about it. At present, the important problem is that there is no Soul's Tower for the first grade. Then, how will they take the test? This was the sole Soul's Tower of its kind in the entire Xia Feng. The main reason of Xia Feng and Zhai Feng institutes conducting the Major Assessment together is that Zhai Feng doesn't possess its own Soul's Tower.

"Perhaps some other approximate method will be used?"

"I haven't heard any method for Major Assessment other than Soul's Tower. Especially, for first-grade students. Do You want to take the tests like those of fourth graders? You won't even realize how you died!"

” Isn’t it possible to wait till a new Soul’s Tower is constructed?”

“How much time would that require?”

” Wouldn’t it be same as repeating a year?”

All the first-grade students of Xia Feng were chattering hysterically. Be it the students who have perceived five kinds of souls, be it the students who have six kinds of souls or be it the students who have broken through into the first Heavenly Layer realm, the face of every single one of them was filled with concern. They didn’t know whether the collapse of Soul’s Tower will cause something bad to them or not.

When Zhai Feng students saw the distressed appearances of Xia Feng, it allowed them to let out their grievances. And towards Lu Ping? It wasn’t as difficult for them to change their frame of mind as it was for Xi Fan. After all, Xi Fan schemed and closely watched Lu Ping for complete three years. It doesn’t need words to explain, just how deep his frame of mind towards Lu Ping was. As far as these first graders are concerned? Most of the people among them only heard rumors about Lu Ping, nothing more. They didn’t have any direct impression. They only followed after everybody. As soon as they saw his stunning performance, their previous impression immediately turned dim.

” Too formidable. How did you do it?” Eventually, some students took the initiative to come over and struck a conversation with Lu Ping.

” It’s nothing.” Lu Ping said.

“You are so formidable. How could you fail the previous two Major Assessments?”

” Eh, that’s because I didn’t go to take the test.” Lu Ping said.

” Why didn’t you go?”

” Because, it didn’t feel necessary.”

” Then, what about this time?”

” If I haven’t taken the test for this time, I would have been expelled.” Lu Ping seriously explained.

This conversation was also heard by Xi Fan and Mo Lin who were present at a side.

" The grand truth!" Mo Lin lamented. Lu Ping's strength was completely above the level of Zhai Feng institute. The main question should be, why is Lu Ping at Zhai Feng, instead of questions like why you failed the Major Assessment or why you didn't participate in the Assessment.

There was no doubt about the authenticity of these words. These words were the absolute truth. Even Xi Fan had no other choice other than to nod his head and show his approval.

" If it was known earlier that it would turn out this way, then was there even any need for him to take the test! It's quite unfortunate, uh, this tower.....it must have cost quite a bit huh?" Mo Lin said.

After remaining silent for a brief period, Xi Fan eventually decided to say one line: " Soul's Tower was of Xia Feng's."

" Oh! Oh!." Mo Lin's face suddenly flashed in realization. " That's fortunate. Quite fortunate."

Strictly speaking, the first-grade examination still hasn't concluded yet. So, Mo Lin and Xi Fan weren't allowed to get too close to examination scene. They were looking from the sidelines. They saw Lu Ping raising his hand towards the Invigilators.

" What's the matter?" One of the Invigilators came over.

" After finishing the exam, is it possible to leave?" Lu Ping said.

" Uh..." Invigilator was at a loss for words. He turned his head around and looked at the ruins. Even the dust has yet to completely disperse. They haven't even entered Lu Ping's final achievements in the grade book yet. Because they had no idea what does such a performance corresponds to.

" Wait for a little while. Let the Head Invigilator return." Invigilator said.

" OK, Whatever." Lu Ping was forced to wait. His vision swept over the

Assessment of third graders. However, at present, everyone's center of attention was, in fact, their first grade. Countless perceptions of Soul's Power were floating over the body of Lu Ping, trying to perceive....

Meanwhile, on the Invigilating Platform, Head Instructor arrived in front of the two Deans. Zhai Feng institute's Dean Godou's expression was still relatively normal. As for the Dean of Xia Feng institute Baliyan, the table originally laid out in front of him, which was blasted away in pieces due to his belly, hasn't been replaced yet. At this moment, he was sitting in his seat, paralyzed. As he looked at the ruins which once was Soul's Tower, the corner of his mouth was involuntarily twitching.

Head Invigilator looked both sides, then felt it would be better to seek Godou's words first.

"Dean Guo, student Lu Ping's score. Sir, What do you feel? I am unable to decide."

Godou faintly smiled: "Does it still need words. Obviously, it's full marks."

"Ok." Head Invigilator didn't raise any objections whatsoever. Originally, assigning the marks was the work of Soul's Tower. His job was just to note it down. Currently, there is no Soul's Tower. So, naturally it was important for him to find the people who have the authority to assign marks. Him noting it down just as before was good enough.

Lu Ping full marks.

After getting this reply, Head Invigilator again shifted his vision towards Baliyan. It seemed like he still hasn't recovered a bit from the shock. But there was no other choice. Head Invigilator braced himself and asked.

"Dean Ba, for the first grade Xia Feng students, what are the following arrangements?"

Baliyan still looked blanked out. It lasted till the teacher present beside him called him two times. Then, after his spirit returned, he once again processed the recent question of Head Invigilator. As he did, he suddenly

felt much more vexed.

For the concern of his beloved Soul's Tower, he completely forgot about the other problem. Even a single student of Xia Feng hasn't taken the test yet? So what are the following arrangements?

"It wouldn't be as good. But, how about I write a recommendation letter and they can go to Tian Zhao institute to take the test?"

"That won't do!" Baliyan firmly declined. He was naturally aware that Tian Zhao is one of the institutes in the closest region from their Xia Feng courtyard, the Zhi Ling region. And considering Tian Zhao's close relationship with Godou, having a recommendation letter would indeed save a lot of trouble.

But how could Baliyan even think about owing Godou in such a situation. This guy thinks he can bestow a recommendation letter to settle the matter of Zhai Feng collapsing the Soul's Tower? It won't be that convenient! It's nothing more than looking for a institute to make temporary arrangements for the Major Assessment. It's not like I myself don't have any contacts.

"These students, make arrangements to take them to BiPolar institute. In a moment, I will arrange people to take care of this matter." Baliyan instructed.

"Ok." Head Invigilator doesn't do anything more than accepting orders. Although the two institutes conduct joint examinations, they don't interfere in their respective individual affairs. Head Invigilator began to carry out the respective arrangements at once.

Upon the Invigilating Platform, Baliyan didn't feel like that this matter is over, though.

"Dean Guo. For this matter, what is to be done next, according to you?" Baliyan started.

"Eh? What next?" Godou said.

"Don't pretend as if you don't know!" At this moment, Baliyan was really edgy. He doesn't have the patience to beat about the bush with

Godou, nor he could care about elegance or manners.

” This Soul’s Tower is destroyed by a student of Zhai Feng institute. I am not asking for complete repayment. However, you should have at least something in your mind, right?”

” Eh? Could it be you wish me to compensate with a tower?”

Baliyan was naturally very willing. But he aware of the fact that it was nothing more than wishful thinking. This kind of event has never happened in the entire continent before. Therefore, during the negotiations of Zhai Feng borrowing Soul’s Tower, nothing was agreed for such a situation. Nothing could be done about it at this moment.

” Forget about compensating the Tower. Nobody expected this kind of matter. Just leave behind that student of yours which destroyed the Tower!” When Baliyan was saying ” that student”, he was gnashing his teeth. It looked like an expression of extreme hatred.

” Oh, Lu Ping.” Godou nodded and delightedly said: ” That’s possible!”

” Huh?” Baliyan was surprised. For this problem, he was still thinking about how to go about it. He never expected Godou would actually agree without the slightest hesitation. From Godou’s such an overjoyed manner, let alone Baliyan, even teachers and students of Zhai Feng who were startled were not just a few. If this had happened before, they would very willingly send off Lu Ping. But now, even a blind person can see that Lu Ping is extremely important. What kind of institute would allow such an individual to leave? However, Godou has agreed to it in a very carefree manner.

” I will count on your words.” Baliyan didn’t dare to think too much and agreed at once.

” I will keep my word. It’s just that, it would depend on student’s own wish. This matter is beyond my control.” Godou said.

” Eh?” As Baliyan heard these words, he immediately felt that something is fishy. Student’s own wish, there is nothing wrong with it. However, from the manner of Godou, it felt like he is completely

confident that Lu Ping would never leave Zhai Feng institute.

Chapter 18: Major Assessment Continues.

Although Baliyan had some misgivings, but Godou had already given his word. Moreover, the logic behind his words also had no flaw. After all, both of them were running institutes. They have their identities, have their status, they couldn't possibly act like a shameless mob on the street.

Head Invigilator brought back the decisions of the two institutes along with him at the scene of the first-grade exam. Over the side of Zhai Feng, Major Assessment seemed to have concluded. In the end, Lu Ping obtained full marks. What about the side of Xia Feng? Finally, their problem was solved, but in order to participate in Major Assessment, they need to tread over land and water and hurry over to the Bi-Polar institute, which was definitely not an exciting news. Every student of Xia Feng had anxious expression. Because now, they had to sort out their luggage and depart at once. In their hatred, they wished to have one more look at the cause of this everything. But, Lu Ping was nowhere to be seen.

Once he knew that the Major Assessment is over and he had made it through, he immediately left. After circling around half of the Assessment region, he finally arrived at the site of third grade Major Assessment.

"Here!" Su Tang had seen him from a distance. She waved her hands towards him.

Lu Ping also waved once, indicating that he had also seen her. However, according to the rules of Major Assessment, a student participating in the Assessment must not come in contact with an outsider. Non-candidate students and Invigilating personnel are also not allowed to casually enter the range of examination scene. Lu Ping can only look from afar. Hence, the two individuals commenced their long range conversation.

"What's going on that side?" Su Tang yelled.

"Tower collapsed." Lu Ping yelled.

"Did anything happen to you?" Su Tang asked.

“Nothing happened to me.” Lu Ping replied.

” Then that’s fine.” Su Tang yelled.

Going by the volume of their voices, their conversation was heard by almost every single person on the scene considering the realm of their Sound’s soul. Baliyan wasn’t the only one with an aching heart due to the collapse of Soul’s Tower. The people of Xia Feng were furious! Constructing a Soul’s Tower is no joke. As they heard, the ‘Tower doesn’t matter as long as the guy is not hurt’ tone in Su Tang and Lu Ping’s dialogues, they were feeling extremely ill. Of course you don’t care, the tower wasn’t from your home!

” How long will you take?” This time, it was Lu Ping’s turn to shout.

” Still quite early. It’s too slow. Why don’t you go back first?”

” It’s ok. I will wait for you.” Lu Ping yelled.

“Then, ok. Wait together with me.” Su Tang yelled. ” You two! That’s enough!” One of the Invigilators couldn’t take it any longer. A candidate student is prohibited from coming in contact with an external person. This also includes talking. However, everyone usually turns a blind eye towards useless conversations. But, these two just won’t stop.

The duo immediately stopped talking. Su Tang once again waved her hand towards Lu Ping, indicating that he should relax. Lu Ping nodded and casually found himself a location outside the scene of Examination.

” She would be fine.” At this moment, Mo Lin arrived at his side with Xi Fan. But it was Xi Fan, who was speaking. He had begun to suppress his previous state of mind towards Lu Ping and started to establish contact with Lu Ping anew.

” Of course.” Lu Ping said.

” Having the realm of sixth Heavenly Layer in the third grade, it’s extremely outstanding.” Xi Fan said.

” Then, what about you in the third grade?” Mo Lin asked. He has clearly matured in the wild outside. He lacks any sort of understanding

about the speed of cultivation in the institutes.

" Essence's Soul third Heavenly Layer." Xi Fan told the strength of his most outstanding soul. Usually, everybody carefully studies about one certain Soul's Power and other souls are taken to be as auxiliary.

The cultivation in Zhai Feng institute is precisely arranged in this way. In the first grade, students are allowed to perceive soul's power and get used to its existence. Second grade is the beginning of breaking through into the realms. In this grade, students search for the Soul's power that they can cultivate most smoothly and most proficiently. From third grade, there are clear subdivisions among students according to their corresponding Soul's Power. Finally, in the fourth year, students will hone their Soul's Power and take it one step further.

" In average terms, what is the realm in third grade?" Mo Lin said.

" Uh! third layer or fourth layer." Xi Fan replied

" Eh! Then don't you suck a bit?" Mo Lin said in a fast tone.

" That's because Zhai Feng doesn't have a good teacher of Essence's Soul." Surprisingly, Lu Ping decided to speak at this moment.

" Oh, then does that make you a self-made genius?" Mo Lin said.

" Teacher Zhi Ye helped me quite a bit." Xi Fan said.

"Helped you in washing clothes?" Mo Lin asked.

Xi Fan looked distracted. Then, unexpectedly, he started to blush.

" Oh no....I guessed right? Is this even possible? I was just spouting nonsense!."

Mo Lin was astonished. He was truly just casually throwing remarks without thinking. Since Lu Ping is strong, he was convinced about Lu Ping's judgement. As Xi Fan said that some teacher greatly helped, he immediately felt that it was just for the modesty and hence added a quick remark. How could he have ever believed that it would turn out to be true. Since this Zhi Ye teacher wasn't able to teach Xi Fan anything about Essence's Soul, he frequently visited Xi Fan to assist him some trifling

daily life matters, in hopes that this will allow Xi Fan to devote more time for experimentation. Washing clothes is indeed one of such matters. Although Xi Fan declined many times, but in the end, he had no other choice than to silently accept as such. And now at present, Mo Lin's nonsense had actually hit the nail.

" So, you have basically self-studied. And and present, have attained sixth Heavenly Layer. Amazing." Mo Lin returned back to the original topic and praised Xi Fan.

" Perhaps!" Xi Fan didn't say modest words but also didn't decline and just ambiguously said one word of agreement.

After that, the three individuals began to silently watch the third grade Major Assessment. It was similar to the test of first graders. There was a twelve storied tower and rushing through the floors will determine the score. The only difference was that the time limit for individual floors was much more and the time taken by the students was also much more as compared to the first-grade exam. Furthermore, it could be clearly seen that the failure rate was also much more.

Zhai Feng was once again first to carry out the test. At the moment, fourteen students had already concluded, of which four were not able to reach the seventh floor. Among them, there was even an individual whose Qi's soul was at the fifth Heavenly Layer. Such a realm can be considered as outstanding among the third graders. However, the end result was, even that student was delivered out of the tower from the fifth floor. It could be clearly seen that in the third-grade Assessment, performing at the scene becomes even more significant.

The queue was slowly moving forward. Su Tang and Lu Ping had originally entered the courtyard several days late after the classes had started. So her number was naturally behind everybody, which at this moment means to be at the end of the line.

The situation inside the tower can't be seen from outside. Therefore, the Major Assessment can't be seen. There is only wait, wait for the final result of every student.

The tempo of the first-grade assessment was very quick. Compared to it, third-grade assessment seemed endless. After looking for a few moments, Mo Lin got bored and began to get sleepy. First, he sat on the ground, then bluntly lied down flat, and then just fell asleep.

Major Assessment continued.

Over the side of second grade, the pace of exam was still somewhat faster than the third grade. Zhai Feng's exam had concluded. Best result obtained was, breaking through into the eleventh floor. It was the same as Ba Yong's best performance within the first grade.

This kind of achievement caused the second-grade students of Zhai Feng to maintain a cautious low profile. They were not like the first graders. They possessed realm in Soul's Power and were aware of the opponent's strength. Although they were not too clear about it, but it was enough for them to not feel superior by just an achievement of reaching the eleventh floor. They were vaguely aware that Xia Feng courtyard should be stronger somewhat.

As expected. Xia Feng began the exam and the fourth number student reached the eleventh-floor and tied with the Zhai Feng's best score. Afterward, number seventh student reached the twelveth floor, accomplishing the lead. After that, achievements of entering the eleventh floor and the twelveth floor would frequently appear once in a while. Although, nobody was able to reach the apex of the tower and obtain full marks, but it was enough to inflict injuries all over on the body of Zhai Fen. Then again, the past glory of Zhai Feng institute was due to those brilliant students who had reached the apex of the tower. Hence, this eleventh floor or twelfth-floor performance of Xia Feng would be clearly overshadowed.

However, this time, second-grade assessment turned into a suffering for Zhai Feng, helping Xia Feng to alleviate their recent gloominess from the side of the first grade.

Situation was not looking hopeful at the side of third grade as well. Although, the students able to reach the eleventh floor were not a few,

but there wasn't any outstanding student achieving higher than that. This would be clearly submerged by the Xia Feng due to their advantage in numbers. However, third-grade students didn't get dispirited so quickly. Because, amongst them, there was an individual who was bearing their hope.

Su Tang.

Third grade and a realm of sixth Heavenly Layer. This kind of level which is too distant from the students of the same grade might allow Su Tang to reach the top of the tower. It will completely overshadow the Xia Feng!

All the third-grade students who were over with the exam would cast a hopeful glance towards Su Tang.

"I am going!" At last, it was Su Tang's turn. However, before going, she first turned her head towards Lu Ping and yelled.

"Hey!" An invigilator immediately came over and interrupted the duo from chatting and yelling again.

Su Tang stuck out her tongue, then waved her hand towards Lu Ping and began to walk towards the Soul's Tower.

She pressed her palm for the palm print and effortlessly entered the tower.

After that; first floor, second floor, third floor....

Her speed was obviously a lot quicker than the rest of the students. Students of Zhai Feng were getting more and more expectant while the students of Xia Feng students were still not ready to be convinced. It lasted till she easily reached the twelfth floor. Then, their complexion finally changed.

This means....she would reach the apex of the tower. Who amongst them could do such a feat?

"Don't worry, I am here." As if feeling the concern of everyone, an individual who was surrounded by the lot of Xia Feng's crowd, dressed in

an attire that stood out and had a special identity, confidently said.

” Qi’s soul...sixth Heavenly Layer.” Xi Fan perceived the individual’s realm. However during this process, his sixth Heavenly Layer Essence’s soul find a trace of some peculiarities. It seemed like a Soul’s Power was being continuously guided towards here and going to thethe Twelveth floor of the Soul’s Tower?”

” It seems like something is not right?” Xi Fan unconsciously said.

” Huh? What?” Mo Lin rolled over and raised his body. As soon as he looked towards Xi Fan who was beside him, he had a different suspicion.

“Hey, Where is Lu Ping?” Mo Lin asked.

Chapter 19: Shalom Ping

Lu Ping had disappeared.

And if Mo Lin hadn't raised his suspicion, Xi Fan definitely wouldn't have realized. Given his soul didn't have any realm, but Lu Ping was just a meter beside his body and he was still not able to feel his disappearance.

"Where did he go?" Mo Lin looked all around.

Xi Fan didn't know, but he did have a kind of premonition. Recently detected Soul's Power, could it be...Lu Ping?

"Right, you were recently saying about something being not right?" Mo Lin asked.

No. It's not Lu Ping.

Xi Fan very quickly determined. Although he was unable to perceive that Soul's Power at this moment, but during that split second of perceiving that Soul's Power, the direction from which it was coming was definitely different.

"There was a Soul's Power...." As Xi Fan was speaking, his vision turned towards the direction he had determined. At that side, there were only teachers and Deans of the two courtyards, sitting on the Invigilating Platform.

Who was it?

Xi Fan was unable to give a more precise description to Mo Lin. He only felt that departure of Lu Ping has some connection with it.

Third Grade Soul's Tower. Twelveth floor.

Su Tang, relying on her sixth Heavenly Layer Strength's soul, smoothly rushed up to this floor. It was just as Xi Fan said; For the third grade, third Heavenly Layer and fourth Heavenly Layer were in the majority, fifth Heavenly Layer was considered to be outstanding and sixth Heavenly Layer would surmount outstanding capability, sufficient to crush this

third grade Soul's Tower with ease. Only this twelveth floor could be considered to be as troublesome.

The twelveth floor can't be crushed just by relying on the realm. At this floor, the capability of employing Soul's Power begins to play a very significant role. During his third year, Xi Fan didn't cross the twelveth floor on the basis of his realm. At that time, his most powerful Essence's soul was not even at the fourth Heavenly Layer. Let alone twelveth floor, just from above the ninth floor, only relying on the realm is not enough. He precisely relied on his capabilities in employing the Soul's Power. And not only just Essence's soul, he is proficient in employing all kinds of Soul's Power grasped by him.

Su Tang is vastly above Xi Fan in terms of the realm. Surely, she won't be bad in employing Soul's Power either. Entire Zhai Feng's expectations on her were not without a cause. As expected, she didn't let people down either. After tangling with the illusionary lion guarding the twelfth floor for a few moments, she was finally able to grasp the lion's attack pattern and style. Third Heavenly Layer of Infusion's soul precisely seized the movements of the lion.

Ha!

After a relaxed shout, Su Tang quickly moved her right hand and accurately grabbed the head of the lion which had pounced on her. Her left hand followed right after, then her both hands abruptly pushed downwards.

The delusional lion roared, but it was unable to contend against the sudden outburst of the Strength's soul sixth Heavenly Layer's power. Its skull heavily smashed against the ground and produced a huge hole. However, the latter half of its body was being raised in mid-air due to the excessive momentum produced by the collision.

Bang!

The illusionary lion fell and flipped over the ground. Its head which was inside the hole, suddenly stopped struggling.

Su Tang let go of her hands, then very cautiously and slowly retreated

two steps back. This Delusional Lion was truly somewhat difficult to deal with. Her breathing had become rather hard. However, she didn't immediately relax her guard. She was still watching the imaginary lion on the ground. It lasted till it completely disappeared. Only then did she relax.

Su Tang let out a huge sigh. On one side she was checking a little flesh wound on her left shoulder inflicted in recent confrontation, on the other side she was walking towards the apex of the tower. Suddenly a strong wind attacked her!

Not over yet!

Su Tang was extremely perceptive. She immediately jumped towards her right and dodged the attack. She once again looked back, the lion had truly disappeared. This time, an individual had appeared. It looked like, it was also condensed by the Soul's Tower, just like the lion. As its attack had missed, it looked a little astonished and hesitant.

Not easy to deal with!

Su Tang immediately determined this. Although the previous lion was fierce, but it was just fearlessly attacking. But this time, the image was expressing emotions after its attack missed. This kind of opponent would always be a lot more formidable than a beast which only carries out machine like attacks. Sure enough, the difficulty of the twelfth floor is too much compared with the floors below! Su Tang was a little bit regretfully thinking.

She was already somewhat exhausted after defeating the lion. She was not at all confident that she would be able to defeat an opponent which is much more formidable than it.

However, can't possibly cower back just like this!

Su Tang quickly regained her calm. She mobilized her Infusion's soul and Sound's soul, and began to closely observe each and every moment of her opponent.

Opponent moved!

Or, he didn't move but had already disappeared.

Su Tang was astonished. Her watch was already strict enough, being exhausted hadn't reduced her attention. However she was unable to see opponent making any kind of move, he just disappeared like this without any basis.

Within the visual angle of 180 degrees, there wasn't a trace of the opponent.

Behind body, it was the only possibility!

Although her Sound's soul didn't hear any noise, but Su Tang had already made such a determination.

She turned her body and swept her leg.

Su Tang's reaction was pretty quick, but not quick enough against such an opponent. At this moment, opponent appeared behind her body and furthermore caught the leg which she had just swung.

The Image displayed a smile and swung his arms to throw out Su Tang. However, strength was not sufficient!

His fingers met the strong resistance produced by the sixth Heavenly Layer Strength's soul. The toughness of this girl was above his expectations.

"Who are you?" He heard Su Tang speaking. Because that smile of his, Su Tang felt very unnatural.

That astonished and hesitating feeling from before can be understood as the Image plotting its next move. It could be counted as a high level and complex operation. But, what's up with such a smile? An image produced through the Soul's Power of the tower is also capable of showing moods like genuine humans?

Su Tang immediately felt something amiss. She realized that perhaps this image is not being controlled by the tower, rather is controlled by someone. Or, it just might be an individual in itself

The Image didn't reply. He is aware that, for a moment, he had revealed

a flaw in the arrangements. This was because he never considered to take precautions for such a situation from the very start. He never believed that he would have to reveal himself. He thought that just the first sneak attack would be enough to conclude this test.

He didn't expect that the first sneak attack would fail, nor did he expect that Su Tang would react so quickly and throw a kick behind her body, and even more didn't expect that his hands would be unable to throw Su Tang out.

He didn't wish for another such a mishap. So, he decided to speed things up.

At this moment he was at 'Spiritual Journey', thus comparing strengths wouldn't be advantageous at all. He decided not to entangle with Su Tang and was about to let go of Su Tang's leg.

However, after this time's confrontation, Su Tang had discovered where her superiority lies.

Strength!

Her strength was not something that this weird Image could rashly confront.

Thereupon, from her left leg on the ground, she conveyed force with her entire strength.

Her captured right leg suddenly flew out in the forward direction. Originally, the Image was holding a bit firmly, but at this moment, he was thinking about releasing her leg. He never anticipated that Su Tang would suddenly kick with captured leg in such a fierce manner.

The actual distance between their bodies was not much. Su Tang's kick resolutely landed on the Image's chest. The kick caused his body to distort and fluctuate.

It looks like it truly is just a Delusional Image. However, it is different from the previous one. When that imaginary beast was hit, it didn't distort like this one.

Finally, what is it?

No matter. First hit then talk!

Su Tang didn't miss to grab such a hard to come by opportunity. She closed in extremely quick, waved her fist and extended her leg.

The Wrestling technique naturally is most easily exhibited through Strength's Soul. Image unexpectedly didn't recover from distortion and fluctuation as it was being continuously hit. It continued to maintain its half manufactured article like appearance.

If it's like this, then it doesn't seem to have the methods to do anything about it?

Su Tang deducted as such and further decreased the time duration between consecutive hits.

The Image was complaining in his mind. He truly wasn't an illusion birthed from the Soul's Tower. In reality, twelveth floor's test was over with the defeat of the illusionary beast.

He is a teacher of Xia Feng institute: Yuan Yi. A Linked One of Essence's Soul. At this moment, he is sitting beside Baliyan. The illusion on the twelveth floor of Soul's Tower is his fourth level ability obtained after his Linking of Essence's Soul: Spiritual Journey.

The illusion was originated from his control. Xia Feng was using this kind of method to obstruct Zhai Feng from breaking through the twelveth floor. He originally believed that one sneak attack would be enough to complete the job. He never anticipated to tangle for so long, and even being in a disadvantageous position at present.

This is looking bad, looking too bad!

The way this is going, forget about obstructing, I myself would suffer injuries due to the destruction of the Illusion.

In that case, don't care anymore!

Originally, Yuan Yi also didn't wish to hurt a student of Zhai Feng. He merely wanted to obstruct the student's achievements. However, at the

moment, let alone preventing the student from passing the twelveth floor, he himself is about to get injured. Since it is like this, then he couldn't be lenient.

Fourth-grade ability Spiritual Journey is not limited to just this.

He concentrated his spiritual essence and began to guide all the power of the Essence's soul in an unending flow, and fully employed the Spiritual Journey with all his might.

Soul's Tower. Twelveth floor. The fist thrown out by Su Tang suddenly struck the empty air.

The Image which was about to perish by her strikes suddenly disappeared.

Essence's soul is not Su Tang's expertise. After she barely broke through into the first Heavenly Layer when she was in the second grade, she didn't pay further attention to it.

However, just relying on this first Heavenly Layer realm, she was able to perceive a rich power of Essence's soul approaching from behind her body, bringing along danger with it.

Turn around and attack!

Su Tang's movements and agility are still as quick as before. But this time, the opponent was much quicker! The Image which was almost smashed to pieces by her has once again resumed the shape of a man. It was even clearer by some amount. However, without allowing her to clearly see anything, the Image had already struck.

The power of Strength's Soul inside her body which was being employed at the moment got disorganized in an instant. She lost her strength and even lost her consciousness. The Soul's Power released by the opponent's attack had injured her in an unrestrained manner.

Argh! Might as well have done it like this from the start. After concluding the battle with one strike, Yuan Yi was thinking as such and was just about to end the Spiritual Journey. However, he suddenly felt something strange behind the body.

He unconsciously turned around but the throat of the Image was firmly held in position by a hand.

Who is it?

Yuan Yi was astonished but the other person didn't insist on having any sort of exchange with him. Without any warning, a huge burst of strength rushed forth in a unimaginably small time period. It didn't give any sort of reaction time to Yuan Yi. There wasn't even enough time to see the face of the other person clearly.

Explosion.....

Once again, there was a loud sound. This kind of loud sound was not for the first time today.

Once again, everybody's vision went towards the same direction. All the people were watching with dumbstruck expressions, seems like this third year tower.....is also going to collapse?

" Run for it!" The invigilator under the tower shouted in a loud voice. Everybody dispersed at once.

However, the collapse of third-grade Soul's Tower was much more abrupt than that of the first-grade. There was suddenly a loud sound and then the entire tower collapsed altogether.

" What is this?" All people were blanked out.

First-grade tower was destroyed. Now, the third-grade tower has also been destroyed.

The people from Zhai Feng wished to laugh, whereas the people from Xia Feng wished to cry. However, this time, Baliyan was unable to flare-up. Because, during the instant when the tower collapsed, Yaun Yi who was beside him, suddenly covered a groan while spouting a mouthful of blood up to three meters.

From within the collapsed ruins, a figure gradually emerged.

Boy carrying girl, resolutely walking out step by step. It was just like that year's snow when he was carrying the small girl.

He is called Lu Ping. Shalom Ping.

(Tl: Shalom isn't supposed to be his first name here. Shalom= calm, at peace...)

Chapter 20: A Road Forward.

Step by step, carrying Su Tang, Lu Ping was walking onward. Neither he looked left nor glanced right, from the very start, his eyes were staring in a fixed direction.

All the people blankly stared for quite a while before they managed to regain their spirits.

” What’s going on?” ” What happened to Su Tang?”

” Why did Lu Ping show up?”

Zhai Feng students were puzzled. They were originally rejoicing and smiling because they had always believed that Su Tang is too formidable and she had directly caused the tower to collapse. Although, it was a repetition of the previous incident, but they were still extremely happy and were delightedly appreciating the expressions of Xia Feng students.

However, in the blink of an eye, they saw Lu Ping walking out from within the ruins while carrying Su Tang on his back.

The situation was completely different from what they had assumed. They were thinking to go and ask, but after seeing Lu Ping’s expression, not a single one of them moved in the end.

Zhai Feng students didn’t move, but Xia Feng students were unable to endure.

“What is going on? What is this?”

“Who is this youngster? Why was he inside the soul’s tower?”

They knew that first year Soul’s Tower had collapsed due to a repeater student, but what they didn’t know was, the student in front of there eyes at this moment was the same as that one.

“What is this? Is this cheating?” Xia Feng students were loudly shouting. Though, this doubt was certainly fair. Simultaneously two people inside the tower, this was against the rules of the test.

Therefore, many individual instantly came over and rudely blocked the

path in front of Lu Ping. Leading them was precisely that youngster possessing sixth Heavenly Layer Qi's soul.

"Step aside." Lu Ping's vision didn't stay over that youngster even for an instant, neither did it rest over any other individuals that were blocking his path; his vision, still as before, was pointed in a single direction.

"Pal, you are very arrogant huh?" The youngster was furious. He took a step forward, wishing to shove Lu Ping. He was very confident because he was a Perceiver of Qi's soul sixth Heavenly Layer, an existence that was able to reach the apex of the tower. And this guy in his front? The youngster was unable to perceive any kind of Soul's Power from Lu Ping's body.

He shoved forward without the slightest hesitation.

Lu Ping hadn't stopped his steps. He was still walking forward like before. Youngster had closed in and shoved towards him, therefore, he also mercilessly extended his hand forward and shoved towards the youngster.

It looked like this was a very casual shove. Some struggle would follow it and the teachers will immediately break it off.

However, immediately afterwards, the youngster was sent flying.

It was just an ordinary shove; no one saw Lu Ping exerting any strength, however, the youngster was sent flying as if he was suddenly slammed by some object. He was mid-air for twenty meters, somersaulted four times after collapsing on the ground, then further rashly slid six meters on the ground.

Everything happened in a split second.

When the two individuals had faced each other, it felt like they will shove each other, then some teachers will immediately come over to end the fight, but even before the step could be completed, the youngster was already knocked away. The two individuals who were originally face to face, got separated by thirty meters in a blink of an eye.

Lu Ping's steps didn't stop, neither did his gaze buzzed, and he was still

walking onward like before.

The Xia Feng students who were behind that youngster were still shouting and making a big fuss when that youngster had been sent flying. However, when Lu Ping arrived walking in such a manner, they involuntarily sidestepped to either of the sides and their shouting voices involuntarily kept getting low and low.

Lu Ping emerged out of the through the path opened by the students. He was walking perfectly straight and was getting closer to that youngster.

“Not good!” The Invigilators accelerated their speed. Outside the wide range of the examination scene, two individuals rushed in from the non-institute personnel who were only allowed to watch and were forbidden from entering the examination scene. Discipline crew was about to stop these two people, however, as soon as they saw the twin mountain peaked emblem on their clothes, they didn’t stop them and quietly allowed them to pass.

Xia Feng emblem is the emblem of Xia Feng City Master’s family. The youngster who was just sent flying by Lu Ping had precisely come from the City Master’s family. He was the Xia Feng City Master Wei Zhong’s only son Wei Tianqi.

However, the first one to approach the body of Wei Tianqi was Lu Ping nonetheless.

Wei Tianqi was completely stunned. He was sitting on the ground in a daze; it lasted until Lu Ping arrived at his front.

Wei Tianqi lost his head due to fear. He was continuously dragging himself backward, trying to evade. Invigilators were shouting ‘stop’, two individuals from Wei family had furthermore anxiously pulled out their weapons, and Soul Killing bow in hands of one of them was being pulled up, ready to shoot towards Lu Ping.

However, Lu Ping didn’t take notice of any of it.

Including Wei Tianqi on the ground, he didn’t spare them a single glance. He was still walking step by step onward. He walked past Wei

Tianqi and continued to move forward.

Soul Killing bow was lowered. Every person who had charged inside let out a sigh and lowered their pace.

Where is he still going?

Everyone was still looking, but just looking. Invigilating Personnel had originally thought about asking about the cause, but at this moment, every single one of them was hesitating. Everyone was looking at each other in dismay. There wasn't an individual who stepped forward again. They all cleverly went towards Wei Tianqi to express their concern.

Rumbling sound....

A sound of wheels rolling on the ground broke the tranquil scene of everyone being stunned. Mo Lin was displaying a completely opposite kind of excitement than all the other people. He was fiercely pushing Xi Fan and chasing after the steps of Lu Ping.

When Xi Fan finally saw Lu Ping came out carrying Su Tang, he'd already guessed the most of it. That strand of the power of Essence's soul, although he still didn't it belong to whom, but looking at the present scene, it must have been directed against Su Tang. He had barely perceived it, however, Lu Ping had obviously determined it much more clearly than him and had rushed into the Soul's Tower. As for how did he reach the twelfth floor, no one saw it. In short, the tower collapsed, and Su Tang being unconscious must have been due to the plot of the other side.

Did Xia Feng institute want to obstruct our students from climbing the apex of the tower?

Xi Fan was not sure if some people had a private grudge against Su Tang, therefore, he didn't dare to say with certainty if this was an evil plot of Xia Feng institute or not. He also wished to know the bottom of the matter, therefore, even when he felt that his wounds might split open due to the jolts produced by the fierce pushing of Mo Lin, he bit his teeth and unexpectedly didn't utter a sound. However, the one who ultimately dropped the chain(screwed up) was still Mo Lin. At the beginning, he was pushing very fast. Just after running a few distance, his breathing turned

heavy and he started to slow down. Fortunately, Lu Ping was not too quick and they were still able to keep up with the former. Lu Ping's direction was exactly the Invigilating Platform. As he approached, his direction and his line of sight were getting more and more distinct.

Besides Baliyan, Yuan Yi.

When Yuan Yi had spurted blood, the people managing the side of Xia Feng institute had been flustered. They couldn't decide if they should first clarify the matter of the collapse of the tower, or attend to him. Only Baliyan had guessed the approximate circumstances of the situation and his complexion had been turning increasingly unsightly since then. Afterwards, they saw Lu Ping carrying Su Tang, walking straight in their direction. In a few moments, he'd already arrived at the front of the Invigilating Platform.

"What are you going to do?"

In charge of Xia Feng's security and also teaching some courses at the same time, Bi Ge, a Linked One of Strength's Soul, was blocking the front of Lu Ping as the purpose of the latter's visit seemed unclear.

"Step aside." Lu Ping, still as before, only said these two words.

Bi Ge didn't move.

He had seen how Lu Ping had sent Wei Tianqi flying with just a lift of his hand. He also knew that perhaps this student was not simple. However, being a Linked One, moreover, a Linked One completely different than the other teachers, who had gone through real combat experience and killing on the battlefield, he didn't believe that he would be able to justify him being afraid of this youngster.

He didn't move and also didn't say anything else; he would very much like to see just what would Lu Ping do.

Lu Ping continued to walk forward. His vision was blocked by the tall and burly figure of Bi Ge, but the former's expression didn't change. His line of sight was still the exact same direction he had first set his eyes on. It seemed like his vision was completely penetrating through the body of

Bi Ge that was in front of him.

This complete disregard and this expression in his eyes caused Bi Ge to be somewhat angry. Originally, he didn't intend to take the initiative; he was intending to observe what would Lu Ping do.

However, at present, he had changed his decision. He decided to make this youngster suffer for his actions; 'No one should even think about blocking him' this youngster doesn't care about the face of anyone.

" Stop right there..." One one side, Bi Ge was fiercely shouting, on the other side, he was moving his hands. However, he was only able to speak three words.

Because, Lu Ping carrying Su Tang, had arrived right next to him. If he didn't step aside, Lu Ping will not be able to take another step forward.

Thereupon, Lu Ping extended his and pushed him.

Bi Ge had only shouted three words and his hand had only extended one-third when Lu Ping had already pushed him, before he was blasted away.

Mid-air for twenty meters, somersaulted four times after collapsing on the ground, then further slid six meters on the ground.

He received the exact same treatment as that of Wei Tianqi without the slightest difference. This seemed like a unified warning prepared by Lu Ping for anyone who intended to block his path. Everyone will get this exact same treatment, no one would be lucky or unlucky.

Thereupon, he continued to walk forward. Stepping on that patch of blood spurted by Yuan Yi, carrying Su Tang on his back, he looked at the pale-faced Yuan Yi behind the table.

"What do you think you are doing?" Lu Ping asked. His expression was very grave.

Chapter 21: Unstoppable Force

Everything stilled.

In the row of teachers on the Invigilating platform, every single individual was a Linked One. However, at this moment, surprisingly no one said anything.

Not only the teachers of Xia Feng were surprised, teachers of Zhai Feng were also the same. Moreover, the extent of their shock was way more than the Xia Feng's. This happened to be the most useless student in their eyes. However, at present....

Still as before, not a single person perceived any kind of Soul's Power from the body of Lu Ping, however, everyone had personally witnessed his strength. Bi Ge, the most formidable fighter of Xia Feng was sent flying in a single confrontation without even being able to exchange blows.

Flying straight for twenty meters, tumbling four times and furthermore sliding flat on the ground for six meters. The exact same treatment as that of Wei Tianqi, a Perceiver of Qi's soul sixth Heavenly Layer. Does this imply that Bi Ge, a Linked One of Strength's soul isn't any different than a Perceiver of sixth Heavenly Layer in front of this youngster?

All people were silent, but Lu Ping wasn't paying attention to anybody. This included Baliyan, whose words should have held the highest authority among the people at the scene, but Lu Ping didn't spare him even a single glance.

His gaze was only concentrated on Yuan Yi at his front. Yuan Yi's complexion was pale and even the blood on his corner of mouth hadn't been completely wiped off. Next to Yuan Yi, the doctor of Xia Feng, who was treating him was also at a loss under such a gaze. He was unable to decide whether he should continue or not.

Yuan Yi was in a kind of semi-unconscious state. With great difficulty, he raised his eyelids, before his eyes was a youngster who seemed to be questioning him. On the twelfth floor, when he was crushingly defeated, he didn't have enough time to clearly see opponent's face. However, he

remembers that split second feeling, it was the exact same oppressive feeling which he is feeling right now.

Yuan Yi opened his mouth a little. It looked like he wished to say something. However, he had barely made any sound and his throat was once again choked up with blood.

Ah!

Yuan Yi once again spurted out blood. However, this time, blood wasn't distantly spurted out, like it did previously. It drenched the table at his front and splashed in every direction. Many people cried out in surprise and dodged to their either side including the Dean of Xia Feng institute Baliyan; He also subconsciously ducked to evade the blood. Only Lu Ping didn't move, he allowed the droplets of blood to splash on his body.

"Don't go too far!" Suddenly a fierce shout came through.

After being single-handedly sent flying by Lu Ping, Bi Ge was also terrified. He was hesitating, but as he saw such an overbearing manner of Lu Ping, as he saw Yuan Yi once again spurting out blood, hot blood rushed forth in him and caused his heroic spirit to increase by many folds. Bi Ge ferociously leapt up from the ground, being thirty meters apart from Lu Ping, he murderously dashed forward. He had already employed his Linked Up Strength Soul at its peak.

Strength's Soul. What it comprises is not just the power.

Velocity, endurance, keenness, flexibility....etc. all kinds of functions of the human body can be improved by cultivating the Strength's Soul.

Bi Ge took a big stride forward and leapt up in the air. He placed one of his foot on the table which was dyed red with the blood of Yuan Yi.

Crash!

Under such a force of Bi Ge's foot, table collapsed and shattered into small pieces. At this moment, Bi Ge had already thrown out his fist.

Strength's Soul certainly is the soul possessing most destructive capabilities among six major souls. It is an indispensable soul in terms of

fighting and killing. Commonly seen abilities acquired by the Linked Ones of Strength's Soul are also various kinds of martial skills that enhance the destructive power of killing moves.

Bi Ge also trains in such a skill. It had repeatedly helped him to kill enemies and preserve his life on the battlefield in the former times. From those days till in Xia Feng institute, he had never used it again.

Because it wasn't required.

By no means does a serene institute require the use of such a human slaughterer kind of martial skill.

However, this time, Bi Ge didn't hold back.

It was not just because he had suffered humiliation at the hands of Lu Ping, a much more important point was, he felt threat from Lu Ping.

Habits and intuition tempered on the battlefield had caused him to not hold back anything while facing against a threat. Just being in an institute at this moment won't be enough to overlook such experiences of Corpse Mountain Bloody Ocean.

Fourth-grade ability: Successive Power Fist.

Ordinary name, extraordinary might.

Fourth grade evaluation is this fact's biggest proof.

Once Bi Ge waved his first, he himself was unable to stop the continuous unending force from rushing forth. Once during those days on the battlefield, the force of this one fist had violently killed three people and then further seriously injured four people. And at this moment, all of this force was rushing towards a single individual.

Successive Power Fist. Once the fist is waved, its force cannot be halted. This is a killing move which leaves no room to retreat.

The destructive power emitted by it is far above the illusion produced by Yi Yuan's Mental Journey. Although both of them are Linked Ones and both possess fourth-grade abilities, but in terms of fighting and killing, Strength's soul is, after all, the sovereign.

However, Lu Ping still like before, didn't retreat. He was still carrying Su Tang. When Bi Ge's fist arrived, he welcomed it. It looked like shattered table actually allowed Bi Ge to preserve in the air while moving forward.

Lu Ping neither sidestepped nor retreated. Bi Ge also couldn't hold back his strength at this moment even if he wanted to.

Through his fist, Strength's soul rushed forth.

However, at this moment, Lu Ping also waved his clenched fist.

Fist vs Fist. Strength vs Strength.

Bang!

Loud sound.

The explosion was fiercer even if the previous two explosions were to be added together. Two soul's powers collided. At the centre of the collision of the two fists, a stream of air which could be seen by the naked eye was formed. It was rapidly rising and spreading out.

Lu Ping doesn't have Soul's Power?

No!

At this moment, everyone was able to clearly perceive that this is indeed Soul's Power. What rushed forth from Lu Ping's fist and also collided with Bi Ge's Successive Power Fist was really Soul's Power.

However, what kind of Soul's Power is this?

No one was able to discern it for the time being. In order to resist the shock waves spreading out due to the collision of the power of the two souls, people had no choice but to raise the defence of their own Soul's Power.

Successive Power Fist's force cannot be stopped.

Bi Ge's fist was constantly emitting out violently surging soul's power.

However, Bi Ge's complexion had already changed.

His soul's power had merely not stopped, that's all. However, the opponent's soul's power was continuously getting more and more strong.

The radiance created due to the concentration of the Soul's Power at the offset of the two fists seemed to be getting more and more big from the side of the opponent. It seemed like he was going to be gradually swallowed by it very soon.

What realm's Soul's Power is this, huh?

Bi Ge's face was already covered with a fearful look, however, his.....force cannot be stopped.

Explosion!

Once again there was a sound of an explosion. But this time, it wasn't a sound of a collision, rather it was the sound of the soul's power at the end of Bi Ge's fist being thoroughly smashed.

Going to die....

The intuition developed in Corpse Mountain Bloody Ocean was telling him that he was going to die. Bi Ge was not extremely fearful of death, but he was having a hard time actually believing it.

What kind of strength is this?

What kind of person is this?

Clank, clank....

At this moment, a clanking sound suddenly entered the ears of Bi Ge. The sound was somewhat ear-piercing but extremely clear amidst the berserk collision of Soul's Power.

He wasn't the only one to hear it. Not only did some people hear, they even saw.

Lu Ping was carrying Su Tang and from both of his hands, shackles were being suspended in an awe-inspiring manner. Subjected to the illumination produced by the radiance of Soul's Power, shackles were sometimes indistinct while sometimes clear

"What is that?" Some people couldn't resist asking each other. These chains were not visible previously, however, they seemed to have suddenly appeared at present. What kind of ability is this?

No one knew.

Except the Dean of Xia Feng institute Baliyan. His realm was somewhat higher compared to the rest of the teachers and his knowledge as well as experiences were far above that of an ordinary person. When he saw those shackles, his complexion completely transformed, being the most terrible of the complexions ever since he heard that Zhai Feng institute had an Advanced Learning student. The extent of his shock was so much that he couldn't help but involuntarily retreat a few steps as if to stay away from something.

Filled with astonishment, he swept his vision all around, as if looking for something to comfort himself. Ultimately, he saw Godou. Godou wasn't astonished like everybody else. Moreover, he was also looking towards him.

" This is....." Baliyan forced out words with great difficulty.

" That's right." Godou nodded a bit.

" Intense Locked Soul...." Baliyan sucked in a deep breath.

(Tl: Pardon my poor naming sense, but it was the best I could come up for the time being. It is most probably some sort of heavy seal on the soul.)

At this moment, both the soul's powers suddenly disappeared. Lu Ping was still standing at the same spot, carrying Su Tang on his back. As of now, there were no chains on his hands. As for his opponent; Bi Ge dropped from mid-air and crashed into Yi Yuan, causing both of them to collapse on the ground.

Chapter 22: Heaven Awakeners.

Intense Locked Soul.

If it was to be assumed that Baliyan, being the Dean, a superior person, had maintained his composure all along, then after speaking these words out loud, the expression on his face had also finally become identical to all the other people.

His composure was replaced with fear.

His vision was alternating from Godou to Lu Ping.

Lu Ping's Soul's Power was completely dispersed, moreover, was dispersed unusually thoroughly.

Actually, the fight between Lu Ping and Bi Ge was over in an instant. The only thing these two managed to accomplish was an explosion due to the collision of Soul's Power.

Bi Ge had collapsed and was smashed into Yuan Yi. However, at this moment, surprisingly no one cared about these two individuals. Everyone had their eyes on Lu Ping. The doctor from Xia Feng who was previously treating Yuan Yi, being scared of the fight between Lu Ping and Bi Ge, bluntly dropped down to the ground

Lu Ping's expression had already resumed its tranquility. At this moment, Su Tang had fortunately awakened.

As she was lying on Lu Ping's back, it could be said, she was also being stared at by everybody. However, she didn't feel any sort of abnormality. She saw the two individuals collapsed on the ground in front of her, with their condition of life and death being ambiguous; she saw the doctor sitting on the ground who was so scared that he was shivering uncontrollably and she also saw everyone's apprehensive and fearful expressions, and the first words which escaped her mouth were:

"How much did I score?"

"Don't know. Tower collapsed once again." Lu Ping immediately replied her.

The vision of the two individuals instantly turned towards Godou, possibly the only individual among all the other people who had a relaxed expression. However, this was not the reason because of which the two individuals were looking towards him; they were looking towards him because he was the person whose words hold the most authority concerning Su Tang's marks.

"Full marks." Godou smiled and issued full marks.

"Excellent." Su Tang expressed her heartfelt excitement.

"Awesome." Lu Ping also gasped once, then asked: "Then, can we return?"

"You can." Godou nodded.

Thereupon, Lu Ping turned around and departed. He was still carrying Su Tang.

The scene was that of silence; No one said anything. Then.....

Gulululululu.....

Once again, breaking apart the silence were the sounds of rotating wheels grinding against the ground. Mo Lin, pushing Xi Fan's wheelchair, immediately caught up with the two, and they gradually began to turn distant with seemingly strange figures.

All the people on the Invigilating Platform looked at each other in dismay and continued to maintain silence.

"Ah...." Suddenly someone shouted.

Hearing the shout, everybody turned around and found that Bi Ge had recovered consciousness, and had involuntarily cried out in pain after he tried to move a little.

Only after that did people remembered the existence of these two dead or alive individuals. Some people moved forward, encircling the two, and the doctor next to them also moved forward to examine their condition.

"Fracture..." The doctor said after he examined the slouched right hand of Bi Ge. However, he immediately felt that this description is not too

precise.

“In precise terms, the bones have shattered. Quickly, send him for medical treatment.” His words were clearly indicating that the injuries on Bi Ge’s right arm were not under his capabilities. Immediately afterward, he again quickly perceived the rest of his condition and his expression relaxed quite a bit:

“He doesn’t have any other problems.”

Everybody let out a relaxed sigh. At that moment, everybody had felt that Bi Ge was going to be killed by that exceedingly strong Soul’s Power. Surprisingly, just an arm was injured in the end; Everybody subconsciously thought that it was simply a huge gain.

Bi Ge is a tough man; Holding his injury with the other arm and enduring the pain, he raised his body, and just like everybody else, he turned his vision towards that figure.

Immediately afterward, the doctor shifted to examine Yuan Yi. First of all, he verified that Yuan Yi was still alive and spread this good news to all the surrounding people. However, after he examined further, his expression didn’t relax at all.

“What’s the matter?” After seeing that he was being too slow with the words, some people approached him and asked.

The doctor raised his head and swept his gaze through the surrounding people, however, he was unable to find Dean Baliyan.

“Possibly....crippled...” Doctor hesitatingly spoke. It looked like he still wasn’t too sure.

“What do you mean crippled?” The surrounding people asked.

“His longevity is not obstructed too much, but his Essence’s Soul is completely disordered and has turned very faint....” The doctor said.

All the people became silent.

Yuan Yi is a Linked One of Essence’s soul; if this realm is destroyed, then it is truly being crippled.

Doctor arranged some people to take Bi Ge and Yuan Yi for further examination and medical treatment then began to look for the figure of the Dean. Eventually, he saw that Baliyan was surprisingly discussing something with Godou in a muffled voice as if avoiding all the other people.

“Intense Locked Soul? You are certain?” Baliyan was still nagging Godou with this question.

“I am certain.” Godou said.

Baliyan was incessantly panting.

“Who would use such a method against a child? Don’t tell me he is...” Baliyan again thought of a possibility. Compared to this possibility, Intense Locked soul, the confinement skill produced by the use of a six level ability plus six level artifacts, doesn’t seem so frightening.

“Heaven Awakener.” Godou named the possibility which Baliyan had in mind.

Baliyan once again began to incessantly pant.

Those who can naturally perceive Soul’s Power are called as Awakeners, and are known as Not One In Ten Thousand existence. Whether it is Zhai Feng or Xia Feng, neither of them has such an existence at present. Such kind of people will also not be satisfied with living in such ordinary institutes after realizing their talent and worth. What’s more, people with such innate skills are most likely to be born in families with special blood vessels.

However, there is a more innately gifted kind of existence above Awakeners. It is said to be an existence which might not be found even in a million of people, and is also a kind of existence which is treated as a mere legend. Some people even believe that it is nothing more than the result of senseless imaginations of people with high reputations. After all, this kind of innate skill is extremely extraordinary; Such an existence will certainly be much more famous in the continent than an Awakener, but when was it ever heard ‘that person is a Heaven Awakener’?

Heaven Awakener; Innately Linked One of Soul's Power.

The possibility which came through the legends, or rather should say the result of senseless imaginations, is explained in such words.

"How is this possible." Baliyan laughed after he was over with panting. "It is nothing more than a fabrication. Some kind of Heaven Awakener he is; What I saw was just a youngster; an outstandingly talented Awakener whose soul was locked up after reaching the realm of Linking of Souls."

"Perhaps..." Godou said. His vision was following that distant figure; Gradually, it disappeared completely.

"But....Intense Locked Soul. How can he still pull out such a strong Soul's Power?" Baliyan once again doubted.

"I don't know much more than you." Godou said.

"Don't forget, you promised that this student will stay with me." Baliyan once again raised this topic.

"If he is willing." Godou still repeated his words.

Following this, Baliyan didn't have much to talk about. Without wasting much time, he went to see his two teachers. Additionally; the collapse of two towers, Assessment of third graders and a pile of matters sufficient to cause his scalp go numb were waiting for him.

Godou also returned to his position. Major Assessment was still not completely over yet. However, no one was paying attention to the performance of the students. Everyone had their thoughts completely occupied with Lu Ping who had already left carrying Su Tang.

"Dean, Heaven Awakener?" On the side of Zhai Feng, some teachers who had heard the conversation between Godou and Baliyan rushed over and asked. Among them, some had heard about this theory while some had not; but even those who had heard also only treated it as a joke. After all, people with this kind of innate skill have never actually appeared. The possibility of fabrication is really too high.

"Heaven Awakeners..." As Godou was speaking, his eyes watched the

students on the examination scene who were still striving. “No matter how hard you try, no matter how much sweat you shed; in the end, you won’t even be able to see the rear of such an existence .”

“But, it is only a fabrication. Is it not?” Some people said.

“Perhaps...” Godou said indifferently.

Chapter 23: Six Souls Linked Up.

The sound of wheels rolling could be heard once again...

Mo Lin, while pushing Xi Fan, was walking next to Lu Ping. After preserving silence for some time, he couldn't endure anymore: "Don't always act cool. Say something." Mo Lin said.

"Huh?" Lu Ping gave him a quick look.

"Is Su Tang all right?" Mo Lin was trying to find a topic.

"Luckily, I don't feel any problem." Su Tang replied Mo Lin herself.

"One can never be too careful. Quickly come down and let me take a look." Mo Lin seriously said.

"What, are you unable to walk anymore?" Su Tang laughed. While carrying her, Lu Ping didn't seem to be tired at all. On the other hand, Mo Lin was already gasping as he was pushing Xi Fan's wheelchair.

"That's only one of the reasons. Just set her down!" Mo Lin said to Lu Ping.

"You will take a look?" Lu Ping's gaze was filled with suspicion.

"A person who can poison somebody also knows a bit of medicine; You can't understand this reasoning?" Mo Lin said.

"Your poison is very ordinary, though!" Even if Lu Ping was still not too convinced, he helped Su Tang to sit under a big tree: "Then, are you to ** good? Xi Fan, you know...." Mo Lin recounted his bitter experiences of those three times when he tried to make a move against Lu Ping, in order to gain sympathy. However, after a while, Xi Fan only disapprovingly said one line: "Three times, that's all."

That's right. Without a doubt, Xi Fan being discontent was justified by all means. Although his objective was not Lu Ping's life, when it comes to the tricks directed against Lu Ping, he had been going on for three years. How many times had he tried? He couldn't even remember, and he wasn't able to succeed once in those three years. So, did Mo Lin truly have the

qualifications to cry about it to him? Xi Fan conveyed the exact same message to Mo Lin.

Mo Lin's face darkened. He no longer paid attention to Xi Fan, and crouched in front of Su Tang.

"Give me your hand." Mo Lin said. He accepted the right hand extended by Su Tang and took her pulse.

"You are taking her pulse?". Lu Ping said: "Can you do it?"

"Right. You don't possess strength's soul. Your sense of touch should be very weak. Right?" Xi Fan said.

"You two are too noisy!" Mo Lin was very angry. "My Pivot's soul is sixth Heavenly Layer, don't tell me I should go and lick her face?" (Tl: I am not too sure, but pivot's soul must be related to taste) "He He." Su Tang chuckled and casually picked up a fist-sized rock in her left hand from the side, and pressed it.

Puff!

The stone immediately turned into dust due to her grasp and dispersed in all directions.

"So much vigor. Surely there is no problem." As expected, Mo Lin was unable to feel the pulse. He immediately threw her hand away.

"However, I still don't have the strength to raise my body up." Su Tang said.

"Lots of rest and lots of water." Mo Lin said.

The doubtful expression on everybody's face intensified much more.

"We'd better find teacher Lin Zhu after returning!" Lu Ping once again began carrying Su Tang on his back.

Lin Zhu is Zhai Feng institute's doctor.

"Whatever." Mo Lin also didn't care much. The important point is; After this much rest, he felt that he would be able to push Xi Fan for a large distance once again.

However, at this moment, Xi Fan took the initiative to speak.

“What about the shackles on your hands?” Xi Fan asked. He didn’t beat around the bush or talk about senseless things, and just directly asked Lu Ping.

“They have been here all along. You just can’t see them, that’s all.” Lu Ping.

“Can they be touched?” Mo Lin reached out with his hand, trying to probe.

“This thing is confining your Soul’s Power?” Xi Fan deduced.

“That’s right.” Lu Ping confirmed.

“However, you are still able to employ Soul’s Power. Isn’t that so?” Mo Lin asked.

“After a long time, I was able to break a little bit out of its confinement.”

“Only a little bit?” Mo Lin and Xi Fan looked at each other in dismay. This is only a little bit? If there happened to be no seal at all, then how much stronger would this guy be?

“When can you completely remove it?” Mo Lin asked.

“I don’t know.”

“Who would place such a stuff on you.....hiccup....if it was placed.....” Mo Lin said “Organization.”

“Which organization?”

“I only know that it is an organization. I don’t know its name.” Lu Ping.

“So that’s why. On that evening, did you think that I was a man from this organization of yours?”

“That’s right.”

“So, you have escaped. Are they looking for you?”

“Maybe!” Lu Ping said.

“Why would you say ‘maybe’?”

“I have no idea if they are looking for us or not.” Lu Ping said.

“Us?” Mo Lin glanced at Su Tang who was on Lu Ping’s back. “Su Tang is also from the Organization?”

Lu Ping nodded.

Mo Lin scratched his head. He had a belly full of questions, but he didn’t know where to start.

“So what you know about this organization is very limited. Is that so?” Thereupon, Xi Fan started the questions. His approach was; First obtain explicit information, and then once again try to confirm whether the organization is chasing after them or not.

“That’s right.”

“When you were at the organization, what did you do every day?” Xi Fan said.

“Eat all kinds of strange things and participate in various kinds of tests.” Lu Ping said.

“When did you begin to have these shackles?” Xi Fan asked.

“I don’t remember.” Lu Ping said.

The meaning behind ‘don’t remember’ clearly indicates that as far as he could remember, his soul’s power had been confined by the shackles.

“So, you don’t know anything about your origins. All you remember is that organization?” Xi Fan asked.

“That’s right.” Lu Ping said.

“And Su Tang?” Xi Fan turned his questions towards Su Tang.

“I grew up in the organization. My parents were perhaps someone from the organization. However, I never saw them or heard about them.” Su Tang said.

“You also ate all kinds of strange things and performed in a variety of tests like Lu Ping?” Xi Fan asked.

“No.” Su Tang shook her head.

“I am also not sure what kind of existence I could be considered as. Perhaps, I was for the mundane jobs.”

“Lu Ping, what do you feel you are?” Xi Fan asked.

“A product of experiments.” Lu Ping said. It was a very cruel and very frightening conjecture, but it actually came out in a very simple manner from his mouth. It looked like such a frightening possibility didn’t give rise to any kind of unusual feeling in him at all.

“So, this unnamed organization is carrying out some sort of experiment about Soul’s Power. It looks like your Soul’s Power has been confined from the very start. You must have possessed a frightening Soul’s Power since birth. This is also possibly the reason you were turned into an experimental subject.” Xi Fan was elaborating his deductions and analysis.

“Possessing a frightening Soul’s Power since birth, don’t tell me he is...” Although Mo Lin’s age is not much, but after all, he had traveled a lot in outside world and had heard a lot of things. At this moment, he immediately recalled what is said to be, a legend. Or, perhaps a made-up existence of senseless people.

“Heaven Awakener.” But Xi Fan was one step ahead of him in saying it out loud.

“Innately Linked Ones on Soul’s Power. About this point, can you perceive anything about yourself?”

“Maybe I can!” Lu Ping said.

“Maybe once again?” Mo Lin said.

“If this thing wasn’t present, then perhaps I could have spoken with some certainty.” Lu Ping was shaking that seemingly empty object, which in reality, possessed frighteningly strong confinement ability.

“Based on the fighting strength you’d shown, it is the realm of Linking of Souls without a doubt. But, linking of how many souls? Can you

perceive this on your own?" Xi Fan said.

This time, Lu Ping didn't reply immediately, rather after a brief silence, he opened his mouth: "Linking of six souls." He said.

"I am leaving!" Mo Lin alarmedly shouted. "You truly should be carefully researched!"

Chapter 24: Six Heavy Words.

Linking of six souls; Just like the Heaven Awakeners, this is also a concept which only exists in imagination. Just like there has never been any Heaven Awakeners, a strong Linked One of six souls has also never appeared in the continent.

It's just that the linking of the six souls is much more believable to people than the Heaven Awakeners. People believe that after a period of long and bitter training, there will be a day when this realm could be attained. The upper bounds of the strength are always being transcended.

Six hundred years ago, a strong individual broke through into the realm of Linking of three souls, and was feared as a heavenly being.

Two hundred and forty years ago, some people attained the realm of Linking of four souls, hence once again refreshing the upper bound of the strength.

Finally, as of today, there are five well-reputed strong people in the continent who have attained the realm of the Linking of five souls. People are eagerly expecting that the completion of the big circle of the Linking of six souls would be accomplished in this generation.

However, on this very day.

The Heaven Awakener of the legends, possessing the true realm of Linking of six souls, the realm which would require the apex of the continent's strong people to strive once more, was actually standing very much alive in front of Xi Fan and Mo Lin.

You are saying, you are a Heaven Awakener. I can endure this.

You are saying, you have already attained the realm of Linking of six souls. I can also endure this.

However, you are saying that you are a Heaven Awakener with six souls Linked up? What kind of concept is this? It implies that as soon as Lu Ping was born, he was already in possession of the realm for which every strong person on the continent has been continuously and painstakingly

trying. He has been on the very apex of the pyramid ever since he was born.

Era is created by the people?

People who create era are still striving. However, there are some people who transform the era as soon as they are born.

Xi Fan and Mo Lin couldn't find appropriate words or questions.

Lu Ping's 'Organization' situation was clearly very tragic. However, Xi Fan and Mo Lin were unable to sympathize with him at the moment. After learning that this guy might be a Heaven Awakener with six souls Linked up, both of them had the exact same thought in their minds.

Why is it not me?

Such an unfathomable innate skill, allowing one to be the strongest from the very birth....why is not me?

Why does it have to be the other guy?

"Aaaaaaaaaa!" Mo Lin, with hands on Xi Fan's wheelchair, suddenly roared towards the sky.

However, Xi Fan remained silent instead. Originally, he was looking to ask some more questions about this organization from Lu Ping and Su Tang, but at this moment, he no longer possessed the spirit to do so.

Heaven Awakener with six souls linked.

These six words were truly too heavy. The people who wouldn't go crazy after hearing these six words can already be considered as people possessing pretty good mental fortitude.

One was silent while the other was rudely shouting. Xi Fan and Mo Lin were respectively digesting the significance of these six words. Su Tang clearly already knew this all. She was incessantly laughing as she saw the two of them who made no attempt to cover up their envy, jealousy, and regret.

"You have certainly made a mistake somewhere in your perception." Mo Lin was still struggling, he was eagerly awaiting to hear some sort of

misunderstanding, otherwise, wouldn't this guy's birth be too unfair.

The other guy is innately a Linked One of the six souls. And himself? A person who had inherited the Mo family blood vessels, being incapable of perceiving the Strength's soul.

"That maybe so!" Lu Ping was also not too certain. The confinement and restrictions of Intense Locked Soul were causing him to be not able to carry out the most precise judgment towards his own Soul's Power.

Xi Fan's assessment that he is certainly above the realm of Linking of Soul is also only due to the fact that he'd burst forth with a fighting strength equivalent to that of the realm of Linking of Souls. (Tl: This might be a bit confusing. It basically means that his realm is above linking of one soul.)

Taking a deep breath, Xi Fan adjusted his state of mind. As he was preparing to ask about his previous doubts, the sound of a shout came from behind his body.

The voice wasn't employed with Soul's Power, it was a cry produced on the spot. Even Xi Fan who had no realm in Sound's soul could clearly hear it. All four of them turned around simultaneously and saw a fat old man with huge protruding belly hurriedly rushing towards them.

The four of them looked towards him as if they were merely observing something, however, if this scene was to be played at Xia Feng institute, nobody knows how many people would have their eyeballs popped out. When did their Dean ever ran with such an effort while not caring about his appearance in the slightest? He had a genuine and extreme dislike for the fat accumulated over his chin and belly, and at this moment due to his running, the shaking of this fat was extremely eye-catching.

"Baliyan?" Xi Fan was the first individual to recognize the other person.

"Huh? Who is that?" Lu Ping was asking. Mo Lin's face was also covered with puzzlement.

"Xia Feng institute's Dean." Xi Fan said.

"Is he shouting for us?" Mo Lin said.

“Apart from us, it doesn’t seem like there is anybody else.” Lu Ping was looking all around him. Only the four of them were present on the road at this moment.

In a blink of an eye, Baliyan arrived at their side, and his fat finally settled down. Baliyan wasn’t sweating or gasping after this mad journey; clearly, his realm of Soul’s Power was not ordinary.

“Dean Ba is calling for us?” Xi Fan who had recognized Baliyan asked the question on the behalf of everybody.

Baliyan also recognized Xi Fan. For two consecutive years, Xi Fan had swept Xia Feng’s face in Major Assessment. Before Lu Ping had collapsed those two towers, this was precisely the most intolerable matter in Baliyan’s mind. This time, since Xi Fan had sustained injuries and was thus unable to participate, Baliyan was very cheerful, otherwise, there would have been similar arrangements like the ones made for Su Tang waiting for Xi Fan at the twelveth floor of the fourth grade Tower.

“Oh, it’s Xi Fan.” However, at this moment, Baliyan was assuming a kind look as he was expressing his care while beaming with smiles: “I heard you’d sustained injuries. How is it? Are you okay?”

“It’s nothing major.” Xi Fan said.

“That’s good. You don’t need to worry about the Assessment. There will be an opportunity for you to take the make-up exam later, if old Guo doesn’t agree, I will go and reason with him.” This was Baliyan’s kind man appearance. By his conversation with Xi Fan, he first laid down his image a bit, and then, he turned towards the target which he’d personally come to seek regardless of the fact that Assessment over that side was still not completely over.

Lu Ping?

No! Not at all.

Lu Ping is Baliyan’s ultimate objective. However, the target for which he’d come without caring about his appearance was still not Lu Ping.

“Fellow student Su Tang, your situation seems a little grave. Why leave

this urgently? I had barely left to arrange a doctor for you, and upon returning I found that you people had already vanished.” Baliyan turned towards Su Tang and began to express his care.

From this point, Baliyan’s shrewdness could be already seen.

To win Lu Ping over, preferential treatment-like methods, which could be used on an ordinary student, are certainly useless. Lu Ping’s strength is even above the Linked One’s, and this is still under the Intense Locked Soul. With this kind of strength, whether it is Zhai Feng or Xia Feng, none of them had the resources which could appeal to him.

Therefore, it would be better to look for the things he cares about in other aspects. And with this thought in mind, even though Baliyan is completely clueless about Lu Ping, he could see one solution.

Su Tang.

This girl is surely a person he cares about deeply. And now, because of his cheating arrangements, Su Tang was subjected to injuries. This certainly would have made Lu Ping extremely resentful towards their Xia Feng. Baliyan himself had already placed a wall between them from the very beginning, moreover, very possibly, a decisive wall.

Therefore, he acted decisively. After quickly arranging the matters concerning the institute, he personally chased after them all alone . He should quickly clarify his standpoint to get rid of Lu Ping’s resentment towards his Xia Feng institute, then only could things move forward.

Within a short duration of time, Baliyan had already fully employed his scheme and exhibited his standpoint to the maximum. However, in front of Baliyan’s good intentions, Su Tang only smiled lightly:

“I am all right. Lots of rest, lots of water and I’ll be good.” She said.

Chapter 25: Bring Him Back

“What are you saying?” These words almost seemed to be said on impulse as Baliyan’s face continued to brim with kindness.

“It would be better for you all to rest a bit and let the doctor I called come over.”

“Then what?”

“Then? Let him perform a proper inspection!?” Baliyan blurted out without thinking. ‘Then what’ was truly somewhat sarcastic.

“Then what?” His answer resulted in Lu Ping repeating the same question all over again.

Baliyan stared blankly. Originally, he was feeling quite happy by conversing with Lu Ping. It seemed like Lu Ping had accepted his kind intentions, and thus it would be possible to slowly resolve everything.

However, there was once again the same sarcastic question.

Lu Ping’s expression was very grave. It was the very same expression with which he’d walked out from within the ruins of Soul’s Tower while carrying Su Tang; firm, direct and without the slightest hesitation.

Baliyan immediately realized that what Lu Ping meant by “Then”, is what he, Baliyan, considered as the ultimate “Then”.

Lu Ping had no interest in beating around the bush with Baliyan, neither did he wish to play this superficial-relationship game with Baliyan, he wanted Baliyan to speak with him directly.

‘Then what’ is referring to the ultimate ‘then’.....

Baliyan was incapable of replying. What would be ‘then’? Hope Lu Ping to join the Xia Feng institute? Or exploit Lu Ping’s strength to improve the reputation of Xia Feng institute? There is a whole lot to ‘then,’ but this obviously cannot be used as the pretext to lure Lu Ping in. Originally, he was thinking that he would have to use lots of vividly colored wrappings to cover everything up. However, at present, being confronted with such a

question that was pointing straight towards the heart of the matter, he was left speechless, and suddenly felt his throat gone dry.

Baliyan forced out a smiling expression. Even he himself was aware that at this moment, his smile would have certainly appeared very ugly, even uglier than crying.

” There is no ‘then’? Then we would be leaving.” Mo Lin followed up, delivering the final blow to the speechless Baliyan.

This student.....

At first, Baliyan hadn’t paid much attention to Mo Lin. However, after looking at him once again, he suddenly remembered; Isn’t this the same student whom Godou had said to be an Advanced Learning Student?

Lu Ping, Su Tang, Xi Fan, Mo Lin.....

Baliyan suddenly discovered; These four students of Zhai Feng who are walking together at this moment are actually the extreme elites of the younger generation.

There wasn’t much need to speak about Lu Ping, being so strong that Baliyan felt that giving him the identity of a student is an absolute fraud. Xi Fan, for two consecutive years, he has given major headaches to the entire Xia Feng institute. Su Tang, if not for his arrangements laid down in order to minimize the damage, perhaps she would have already caused the Xia Feng institute to be greatly embarrassed, though because of these arrangements, Xia Feng institute was certainly subjected to a much bigger embarrassment.

Then there is also Mo Lin, Sixth Heavenly Layer in Pivot’s soul – The highest level of achievement as a student, additionally, he is also supposed to be an Advanced Learning student. Having an Advanced Learning Student is a kind of affirmation towards the prestige of an institute. Although the impact of having a non-famous person as an Advanced Learning student is limited, but at least, Zhai Feng has one.

The four of them had already turned around and begun to walk away, and Baliyan was foolishly standing in the middle of the road looking at

their retreating figures. He, a grand Dean, suddenly had a very miserable feeling. The four of them had left just like this. When confronted with the appearance of the grand Dean, they didn't even try to reason a single line.

Eventually, a single line that somewhat looked like a grumble of that Advanced Learning Student, entered the ears of Baliyan.

“Are we truly gonna walk to Zhai Feng like this?”

At this point, the voice faded away.

Baliyan didn't employ his Sound's soul to hear further. He turned his body somewhat disappointedly, and was about to return to the institute, but right at this instant, his perception suddenly jumped.

It was a kind of self-defensive instinct of a strong person. While it was true that Baliyan had turned into a sorry figure today, but in terms of strength, this formidable Dean of Xia Feng institute was undoubtedly among the top ten existences within the huge Xia Feng district.

Who?

Focusing his energy, Baliyan was able to precisely determine the target's location.

At the roadside, rice fields were swaying with the air. In the middle of the fields, a solitary figure was quietly moving forward. It was moving in complete rhythm with the swaying plants without giving off any sort of signs of its presence.

First level ability: Distant Vision.

Baliyan effortlessly displayed the first level ability obtained after the Linking of the Infusion's soul. All of a sudden, that figure became much closer and much clearer in the eyes of Baliyan.

Before he could clearly see the figure's face, he very clearly saw a twin-peaked emblem suspended from the edge of figure's clothes flickering in the rice fields.

Baliyan immediately restrained his ability.

This is..... a secret scout from City Master's Mansion.

Would carrying out some mission require passing through here in such a secret manner? Baliyan couldn't help but gaze towards the four exceedingly small figures at the far end of the road.

They are already being eyed.....

Baliyan was silently thinking. However, this matter was not something that he could control, so after foolishly standing there for a few more moments, Baliyan left, striding towards the Xia Feng institute.

Xia Feng city. City Master's Mansion.

The City Master got up at five forty-five as usual. Within a duration of fifteen minutes, he did all the chores that a normal person would do after getting up such as getting dressed, rinsing his mouth, washing his face, go to the toilet, have breakfast etc. After that, at six o'clock sharp, he prepared himself to sit in front of his desk. It was a peculiar desk, being one meter wide and having a length of no less than five meters.

Every day, a large amount of matters demanding his attention would be piled up on the desk like a mountain. He would sit at the extreme left end of the table and deal with each and every single one these affairs one by one.

Actually, most of these affairs could be easily left for his subordinates. However, Wei Zhong liked to deal with them personally. Wei Zhong desired that each and every matter, regardless of its importance, remained under his control. If not so, then he would be completely restless, and while dealing with all these matters, he would feel full and extremely satisfied.

Today's entire morning, Wei Zhong once again dealt with the table full of affairs and felt extremely satisfied. He knew that occasionally, his subordinates would stir up some trifling disturbances themselves and bring them to him in order to gain his approval, but he didn't mind it at all.

After spending his entire morning in this manner, Wei Zhong once again gathered all of his subordinates together and very carefully elaborated on his arrangements. Thereupon, yet another satisfying day

was about to pass perfectly. However, at this moment, he saw that his son, who was supposed to be taking part in the Annual Assessment of Xia Feng institute, was actually anxiously standing outside the Discussion room.

Wei Zhong's face immediately sank.

During this time period, there is absolutely no way Wei Tianqi would be standing here unless something unexpected had occurred.

'Unexpected', this is the most hated word for Wei Chong. He desired everything to be under his control. The 'unexpected' was simply his arch-enemy.

"Come in and speak." Wei Chong only said these four words. After the 'unexpected', the next thing that he hated the most was wasting time. Regardless of whatever he was doing, he was always very efficient, even while facing his own son.

"The Soul's Tower collapsed. We third-graders will go to Bi-Polar institute to take the assessment." Wei Tianqi was also aware of his father's habits. Therefore, without speaking a single worthless line, he explained the situation using the most concise words. If his father wishes to know further details, then he would ask himself.

"How is this possible?" Sure enough, Wei Zhong did ask. The Soul's Tower collapsed? This kind of matter has never been heard before.

"It was a student from ZhaiFeng. Today, he destroyed two of our towers, first grade's and Third grade's." Wei Tianqi said.

"How strong is he?" Like the absolute majority of people, Wei Zhong didn't wonder how such a feat could be accomplished by a student while being astonished. Since it was already done, would being astonished solve anything? Wei Zhong requires efficiency, and in accordance with it, he had already grasped the most important point of the problem at hand, which was:

How strong this student is.

"Don't know. But, he sent me flying with a casual push. Teacher Bi Ge

was also sent flying by him with a casual push.....then.....”

“We Hu!” He immediately cut off his son. This only happened because his son said ‘Don’t know’. What his son described afterwards was also only an indistinct scene that did nothing to give a precise account of the other person’s strength.

Hearing the shout, Wei Hu immediately entered the Discussion room. He was one of the two guys that had shown up at the scene of Assessment today.

“I am also not too clear.” Wei Hu didn’t hesitate and also didn’t try to be ambiguous, and just honestly said what he determined.

“However, I have already dispatched people to keep an eye on him.” However, he did add a supplementary line right after.

” Why keep an eye? Directly dispatch men to find him. Tell him I want to meet him and bring him back.” Wei Zhong, however, was not satisfied with the clever arrangements made by Wei Hu, clearly feeling that these arrangements were not efficient enough.

” Within half an hour, I want to see him.” Wei Zhong said. Now this could said to be efficient enough to his liking.

” Yes.” Wei Hu lightly bowed and quickly departed from the Discussion room.

Chapter 26: City Master's Invitation

The sound of wheels rolling.....

A coach carrying three male youngsters, one female youngster and a wheelchair was galloping towards the Zhai Feng institute.

Eventually, Lu Ping had hired a ride. At first, Mo Lin was very happy, but after hearing a few lines of coachman's idle talks, his mood immediately began to decline.

Peng! Peng!

The coachman was brandishing his whip. However, it was only the sound of the whip lashing out in the air, the coachman, with extreme caution, didn't let it fall upon the body of the horse.

"How is it? Isn't it running fast?" The coachman was talking very proudly.

"Very fast." Lu Ping nodded.

"As I said, I always felt that this horse of mine has, at least, third Heavenly Layer of strength's soul. You all are students of Zhai Feng, help me take a look whether it's true or not." The coachman said.

Soul's power is not some sort of secret thing. Every person on the continent knows about the existence of this kind of strength. Many institutes also distribute cultivation teaching methods outside. Ordinary people by getting their hands on these are able to perceive Soul's Power. Some even break through into realms.

However, the absolute majority of people are only able to perceive the power of one or two types of souls. And in terms of the realm, just breaking through into the first or second Heavenly Layer is already considered pretty good. This is also the reason why everybody felt that Lu Ping is too wasted. Within these three years, he didn't perceive Soul's Power at all. Such a thing could only mean that either perceiving Soul's Power was not his intention or he absolutely lacked talent. Otherwise, by the instructions of Zhai Feng institute, even a pig would be able to

perceive Soul's power.

That's right. Animals can also perceive Soul's Power. For example, the coachman was incessantly talking about his beloved horse.

Lu Ping, Su Tang, and Xi Fan; none of them said anything. All three of them were looking towards Mo Lin.

Mo Lin's expression was dark as if he was going to kill the man to shut his mouth. One of his hands tightly squeezed inside the leather bag located in the interior of his clothes.

Even the horse possessed Strength's soul.....this was truly a bit too big of an injury on his pride.

Su Tang was keeping herself from laughing. Her realm of Strength's soul was sixth Heavenly Layer. She was much familiar with the Strength's soul. She immediately said to the coachman:

"Uncle, this horse does have a bit of Strength's Soul, however, it is not as high as you speak of. It is not even the first Heaven Layer."

"Is that so?" The coachman was a bit disappointed. It seemed his hopes had been a bit too high.

Why was it that even after trying their utmost, so many people could only halt at the first or second Heavenly Layer? What's more, it was just a horse. Having even a little bit of perception was already quite rare considering the fact that it was not a demonic beast with unusual abilities. It seemed like the coachman also realized this fact shortly after, as he was smiling ear to ear once again: "That seems pretty good too. Always better to have something than nothing. What do you people say?"

"Calm! Calm!" Lu Ping restrained Mo Lin at once. Mo Lin had immediately pulled out a skewer. The skewer had its length in three folds. With a single fold opened, its length was no less than 1 chi(1/3metres). If stabbed, then the length of this skewer would be enough to deliver the poison to any position desired by the user.

"Stop obstructing me!" Mo Lin struggled. "A true assassin never lose his temper? I kill people with my eyes closed, I am telling you."

“Know the old ways...know the....” Lu Ping was repeating again and again. However, at this moment, the cart suddenly stopped, causing the four people inside to sway unstably.

“Know the Fear!” Mo Lin was shouting. Su Tang hurried to provide an explanation, but then she saw that cart had stopped because some people were obstructing its path. A perfectly horizontal line of dark-armored soldiers was arranged in front of the chariot.

The coachman at once hopped down from the chariot and went forward to greet them. He wouldn't be daring to offend these Xia Feng city's patrol guards even if had ten times more courage. At this moment, his entire face was terrified. Why would I be obstructed...don't tell me they have taken a fancy to this Strength's soul possessing horse of mine?

His heart was aching, but before he could his open mouth, the leader of the dark-armored soldiers had already arrived in front of him in quick steps. He absolutely didn't look towards him, rather directly walked up to the chariot's front.

“Who is Lu Ping?” He asked while looking towards the four people inside the chariot.

Their tiny squadron was originally patrolling in the city. Then all of sudden, they received an order to from the City Master's Mansion requesting to bring back a certain individual.

Lu Ping, male, 15-16 years, a student of Zhai Feng; walking with three males and one female, then took a ride in a square shaped coach carried by a dark horse.

This was the general information about the target which had been rapidly, yet precisely, passed on to the men up to the task. Everybody knew that the City Master greatly values the efficiency. No one was daring enough to be neglectful. Therefore, soon after, the chariot carrying Lu Ping was quickly discovered by their squadron.

” I am.” Lu Ping said to the guard.

” Get off the chariot and come with us.”

” Not going.”

Lu Ping didn't ask the purpose of their visit, neither did he ask where would they take him, he only declined with: Not going.

” Come to the City Master's Mansion. The City Master wants to see you.” The guard frowned. The orders were only to bring back the youngster, the City Master wants to see him. It didn't specify if it was an invitation or arrest. Therefore, for the moment, the guard also couldn't figure out what would be the appropriate conduct here.

Thus, the guard explained the intention; An intention which no one in the Xia Feng city or perhaps in the entire Xia Feng region could possibly decline.

However, Lu Ping was as if he hadn't heard at all, still only two words: 'Not going'.

” You don't know how to appreciate somebody's kindness!” The guard was a little enraged. Although he wasn't able to precisely determine City Master's intention from the conveyed instructions, but it surely didn't seem something too bad, otherwise, why would he be exchanging so many words with the guy in front of him like this? However, this guy surprisingly declined in such a straightforward manner. Really, just what does he think himself to be?

Hmph! Doesn't possess even a bit of Soul's Power, just an ordinary man, that's all.

The instructions only mentioned to look for Lu Ping, his strength was not mentioned at all, and moreover, the matter of the collapse of the two towers was also not yet widespread. The guard briefly perceived the other three inside the chariot and found that all the rest three of them were not simple at all. Though, this Lu Ping was just an ordinary individual.

” Turn around and head to the City Master's Mansion.” The guard stopped bothering with Lu Ping and directly commanded the coachman. The coachman was inwardly cursing at his misfortune. It was true that he wouldn't dare to offend the city guards, however, the students of Zhai Feng institute were also a frightening existence from his perspective. All

the students of the institutes have definite realms, wouldn't it be easy for them to cause trouble for an ordinary man like him later?

Thus, being stuck between both sides, the coachman could only hope to delay and wait for things to turn in a different direction.

The guard immediately felt the coachman hesitate, however, he was also aware of the reason: The students of institutes. Actually, guard himself had some misgivings due to this fact. In terms of pure strength, other than Lu Ping, he was unable to make out the realms of any three of them, implying that the realms of all the other three were above him.

After all, the highest levels of achievements of cultivators are indeed represented by the institutes. Regardless of whatever realm they attain in the end, it would always be much higher than what an ordinary person can achieve, and thus, their future prospects are also much more extraordinary. Although Zhai Feng institute is merely an ordinary institute among some four hundred institutes in the continent, but when compared to this tiny squadron of theirs, it is way more glamorous, and the status of its students is also way higher than theirs.

Therefore, he also didn't wish to have a direct conflict with them. Commanding the coachman was also his attempt to ingeniously make the coachman appear as the main offender.

Therefore, even though he was aware of coachman's hesitation, he pretended to be clueless. As for these few students, he hoped, it would be ok as long as they don't make too big of a commotion.

While it was true that their status was much higher than the status of the city guards, but they also couldn't ignore what was represented by the city guards. Their emblem represented the imperial rule itself, and the institutes were not independent of the kingdoms despite their high statuses. Possessing countless years of heritages and histories, even the four major institutes had deeply intertwined relations with the three grand empires of the continent.

Xia Feng region is situated towards the south-east, being the part of one of the three grand empires, the Xuan Jun empire(Mysterious Arms). The

Xia Feng City Master is the supreme ruler of the entire Xia Feng region. His command holds effect for anyone within the Xia Feng region. However, he definitely wouldn't interact with everyone through the means of commands; For example, the Deans of the Xia Feng institute and Zhai Feng institute would receive extremely courteous treatment at his place.

However, as far as a single insignificant student is concerned, he wouldn't bother so much.

Bring him back, I want to see him within half an hour.

These were his instructions, and at this moment, some people were already on it. However, they suffered unexpected resistance.

Lu Ping jumped down from the carriage. He was still carrying Su Tang just as before. Consequently, Mo Lin and Xi Fan also came down from the carriage. Xi Fan was still in the wheelchair and Mo Lin was still pushing his wheelchair.

" We'll walk." Lu Ping said to Su Tang while turning towards the Zhai Feng institute's direction.

Chapter 27: Reasonable Lu Ping

This whole scene was very amusing from the perspectives of Xi Fan and Mo Lin.

Whether it's an invitation, a summon, or anything else, if it's from the city master and is within the Xia Feng region, then perhaps there truly isn't a single person who would decline so curtly. Even Godou or Baliyan would decline an invitation from the city master in a very polite manner. While confronting a summon from the city master that didn't look like too much of a polite invitation, these two individuals were expected to have disregarded all of their current matters and go to see the city master as soon as possible.

However Lu Ping only said one line: "Not going." He didn't even ask why.

This child is insane!

At the side, the coachman had his eyes opened wide. At this moment, although he himself was out of trouble, but he was somewhat worried for this child. City Master wants to see him, can't this be rather a good thing? How can this child decline so directly?

However, Xi Fan and Mo Lin didn't think in this way. Before travelling on this road, they might have done so, but now, they definitely won't.

Because, Lu Ping is possibly a Heaven Awakener, a Heaven Awakener with six souls at that.

What did this represent? This represented the possibility to bring about the peak of the era's strongest individuals. For such a strong individual, a trifling City Master truly didn't count as anything.

To tell the truth, being the peak of the strongest, Lu Ping's bearing could already be considered as very gentle and harmonious. Him being able to endure his temper and intending to leave, minding his own business, was clearly due to the fact that he didn't wish to create troubles, just wishing that the other people would also not create trouble for him.

If Lu Ping was to be replaced with Leng Xiutan, one of the six strongest Linked Ones with five of their souls linked who is also called as Insane Dog behind his back, then this guard would have lost his head the very moment he'd blocked the cart. Even taking his anger out on the poor Coachman afterwards would have been entirely possible.

Even this leader of guards tried to push the blame on the poor Coachman.

Looking at Lu Ping again, he is much more well-behaved!

The cart was stopped by some people; He just silently came down and intended to leave silently on his own.

The ones who fail to appreciate somebody's kindness are you people.....

Both Mo Lin and Xi Fan were occupied with such thoughts. Mo Lin was purely watching the excitement and didn't mind the matter growing, whereas Xi Fan was taking many other things into consideration.

"Halt!" Hearing the shout of that guard, as the other guards obtained the indication and were about to block Lu Ping, Xi Fan turned the direction of his wheelchair by himself and arrived beside that guard.

"Elder Brother, Why does City Master wants to see Lu Ping?"

Lu Ping couldn't be bothered with asking this question, so Xi Fan was helping him.

"How should I know that? City Master only said that he wants to see him. We have to bring him back to the City Master Mansion within the time limit." The guard leader was not in a good mood. Although he didn't wish to have a conflict with Zhai Feng students, but he also didn't need to be submissive, and this was the case even more so because he'd city master's instructions to back him. Even if implementing these instructions leads to a direct conflict, he would still carry them out without the slightest hesitation.

Being able to determine a person's thoughts through his speech and movements, Xi Fan was well aware of the other man's such intentions.

” However, we are also occupied at the moment, can we delay it for some time and visit later?” Xi Fan was trying to act as a cushion which would be good from the perspectives of both Lu Ping and the Institute. In his opinion, such a head-on clash is completely illogical. Of course, Lu Ping is strong up to an extent that he doesn’t care about it at all, but he is not like Mo Lin who would only watch the commotion from the sidelines.

” Within half an hour, City Master wants to see the man. At the moment, seventeen minutes are left.” The leader said and waved his left hand. He couldn’t delay anymore. Even at this moment, they would have to make the most out of every moment in order to make it back to the City Master Mansion within seventeen minutes. The importance attached to efficiency by the City Master, they all knew it only too well.

” Stop him.” The guard issued out directions, and at the same time, he was also looking towards Mo Lin and Xi Fan in what seemed like a cautious manner. If these students, about whom he couldn’t make out anything regarding their realms, were to truly cause trouble for him, then perhaps this tiny squadron of his will truly be in a terrible shape.

Should I call assistance?

As the guard leader was having such thoughts, the figures of the men before his eyes suddenly swayed. The two soldiers of his squadron were already sent flying and were coming towards him.....

“Ah!.....”

Their cries had already made its way into his ears. The leader immediately raised his hands, hoping to catch the two men. How could he have known that the strength transmitted as soon as his hand made contact with the lower bodies of two men was absolutely not something that he could cope with. He didn’t even have the time to be astonished before he was sent flying together with the other two.

” Argh..!” Xi Fan let out a sigh. Two guards along with the leader who was talking with him just a moment ago almost whistled past from above his head. However, he didn’t seem to be flustered at all, just regretful that things had developed as such so quickly.

He'd been directed against Lu Ping for three years. Naturally, he was very clear on Lu Ping's way of dealing with things. For the things he doesn't want to do, no one could force him. He would comply with some rules and would also agree to some requests, however, the prerequisite is; he has to be willing.

At this moment, Xi Fan was very glad that he is actually a very reasonable person. For the past three years, he'd been trying to find reasonable grounds and never used his strength to suppress people. He now knew that Lu Ping doesn't have any thoughts of concealing his strength. During these three years, Zhai Feng has remained calm and peaceful only because no one had truly threatened Lu Ping, and as for those cold words and mockery, he didn't care at all, or rather should say, didn't deem it as necessary to care.

Because he is strong.

Strength gives basis; Strength gives confidence. He wasn't required to use violence against those cruel words just to prove himself. Only an inferior person, when questioned, would stomp about in anxiety.

Then again, Xi Fan also felt that maybe all that mockery and ridicule actually felt reasonable to Lu Ping. This was because his conduct in Zhai Feng institute was not that of someone strong, but rather that of an incompetent rogue who just wished to be coiled around the thighs of Su Tang.

Insulting and looking down on this kind of a man, was there anything wrong with it?

Therefore, in this sense, Xi Fan felt that Lu Ping is also an extremely logical person.

Since he himself didn't explain anything to the others in the first place, he didn't mind silently bearing the misunderstanding produced due to it.

Carefully thinking about these three years, if I had been careful enough in my analysis, then I might have discovered that Lu Ping had already revealed quite a few abilities. For an instance, consider the most recent occurring; When Lu Ping exposed Wei Bao's fake testimony which

claimed that he'd seen Lu Ping going to the Garden no. 18, Lu Ping had mentioned the distance between lips and face being 1.7 centimeters. I'm afraid it was more than just a casually blurted out teasing remark. His Infusion's Soul had an effect similar to that of the first level ability "Measurement" produced after the Linking of Infusion's soul.

Xi Fan had always completely ignored such things.

However, these pathetic guards were not ignorant but rather absolutely unaware of these things. Originally, the leader of this small guard squadron was worried about an interference from Xi Fan or Mo Lin, however, how could he have anticipated that Lu Ping, whom he was supposed to bring back, himself was the most tyrannical among them.

He was looking towards Lu Ping in an inconceivable manner as he was standing up from the ground.

These guards who had gone through vigorous training, this youngster without a shred of soul's power had sent them flying? Moreover had sent them flying with such a strength that I was unable to resist it?

My Soul's Power is already in the realm of fourth Heavenly Layer. What the hell happened just now?

No other choice, I can only call more people.

A whistling arrow was shot up in the sky. The soldiers of the city guard squadron didn't dare move forward, they only arranged themselves in an encirclement around Lu Ping, though the encirclement itself was moving forward in accordance with the footsteps of Lu Ping.

Several City Guard squadrons saw the Whistling arrow's signal and began to rapidly converge towards the source. Moreover, some people had already conveyed the information about everything that had occurred to the City Master's Mansion. The reason being, everybody is aware that City Master wants everything under his control, he not only cared whether he would be able to see Lu Ping after half an hour or not, he also cared about everything that would occur within this duration of half an hour.

However, the information received from ahead was not to his satisfaction at all.

"Refused? Reason!" Wei Zhong.

"There is no reason, he only said: Not Going." Due to the habits of City Master, the received information had all the details. The man who was reporting was ready to answer any questions City Master might have.

"Interesting." City Master Wei Zhong, however, smiled:

"In that case, send men once again and invite him to come. Tell him I wish to meet him."

He passed on his instructions once again, however, this time, his instructions were not: bring him, but rather: invite him to come.

Although he still didn't know this youngster's depth, but during these few minutes, he'd already heard about the injuries of Yuan Yi and Bi Ge, the two Linked Ones of Xia Feng institute. Capable of inflicting injuries upon these two up to such an extent, just by this portion of strength that he'd shown, this youngster is worthy of receiving the 'invite' word.

"Clear."

The new instructions were quickly passed on. However, on the streets of Xia Feng city, Lu Ping and Su Tang had already been surrounded. While being inside the encirclement of four squadrons of the city guards, Lu Ping's expression was still the same, and he still continued to walk forward.

The four squadron leaders were about to give orders of commencing the operation. However, just at this moment, they respectively received the new instructions, and the person who brought the instructions had already opened up a path in their encirclement. He was wearing the clothing of the City Master Mansion, but his age was not much, seemingly a sixteen or seventeen years old youngster. He was wearing a smiling expression as he made his way straight towards Lu Ping.

"City Master invites you to have a seat in City Master's Mansion." The bite of the word 'invite' was very heavy, being the most important point of

the revised orders.

Lu Ping was still walking forward, his encirclement being much more open now. As he heard that this youngster had specially come to replace the previous orders with the 'invite' word, he sighed, but kept walking without saying anything.

The youngster trailed behind Lu Ping, and as he looked at the direction in which Lu Ping had been moving all along, the smiling expression on his face suddenly became much more brilliant.

'In the end, he turned out to be a sensible person'. The youngster was thinking. 'However, daring to display such a play in front of City Master, this guy can also be considered as bold.'

"Ok, everybody, disperse. Thanks for the trouble." The youngster said towards the soldiers of the four City Guard Squadrons.

Looking at the youngster, he looked cheerful and seemed to be radiating positive energy, however, whenever these adult soldiers looked at him, their faces will turn a little stiff. As soon as the youngster said disperse, it looked like as if a huge burden had been lifted off from their shoulders, and they immediately left.

The youngster didn't pay them any more attention, rather he strolled to Xi Fan and Mo Lin.

"You two, are you classmates of Lu Ping?" He said.

"That's right." Mo Lin was also smiling, unexpectedly he'd quite a favourable impression of this youngster.

"We don't seem to differ much in age." Mo Lin said.

"I am seventeen years old, and you?" Mo Lin said.

"But it's quite regrettable, city master doesn't want to see you. Therefore, if there is an opportunity in future, I will look for you two to play." The youngster didn't seem to have heard anything said by Mo Lin, he just kept on speaking as if only thinking about himself.

"City Master also didn't say that he want to see Su Tang, though." Mo

Lin said while pointing towards the direction of Lu Ping and Su Tang.

” I will let that pass.” Youngster was smiling as he turned around and calmly followed after Lu Ping.

Chapter 28: This Is Merely Passing By.

“You seem to know that person?” Mo Lin, whose favourable impression towards that youngster only remained for three seconds, felt that Xi Fan knew something after he looked at the former’s expression.

“His name is Wei Yang. City Master’s Mansion has twelve Family Guardians, and he is one of them. It is said that he began perceiving at the age of fourteen, and just at the age of sixteen, he had already attained the Linking; An absolute genius!”

“Genius? Are you trying to make me laugh?” Mo Lin said.

“If it was before today, could you have laughed?”

Of course not. Regardless of whether it was Zhai Feng or Xia Feng, the students who were able to attain the realm of Linking of Souls within the four years of being inside the institute combined could be counted on your fingers. Mo Lin originates from a clan, compared to a student of an institute, he’d started to cultivate the Soul’s Power a bit early, and at present, his highest Pivot’s soul was only at the sixth Heavenly Layer; being unsuccessful in achieving the Linking to this day.

Starting from scratch and breaking through into the realm of Linking of Souls within two years, referring to such a person as a genius isn’t excessive at all. However, now with a Heaven Awakener with six souls linked walking right in front of him, everything else only seemed as ‘drifting clouds’(superficial) to Mo Lin.

“Move on!” Within a short duration, the rest of them had already walked far away from Mo Lin and Xi Fan. Upon hearing these words, Mo Lin once again began to push Xi Fan, and once again with a rumbling sound of wheels rolling, Mo Lin and Xi Fan began to follow them.

Since Mo Lin didn’t have a good opinion of Wei Yang, he didn’t push Xi Fan fast enough to catch up to Wei Yang, and Wei Yang himself also didn’t seem to be in a hurry to overtake Lu Ping, maintaining a distance that was neither too close nor too far from Lu Ping. He was walking calmly and unhurriedly. Though, once in awhile, he would turn his head

and distantly smile towards Xi Fan and Mo Lin.

Three sides maintained this kind of separation while walking forward in the same direction. Gradually, they left behind the city's clamor and stepped upon a huge and peaceful pathway. On this pathway, although there were people quickly walking past by, there were not any peddlers on either side of the road. The road was clean yet cold and gloomy.

The City Master's Mansion was just located on streets. Neither was its surface area big nor were its insides luxurious, but its entrance gate was very eye-catching. Because the City Master Wei Zhong believes that entrance of the City Master's Mansion can't be low-profile, because he believed that if the people who wish to visit here due to their issues are not able to spot the Mansion with a single glance, then that would truly be a waste of efficiency.

Outside the gate of the mansion were two guards. They were standing extremely upright and keeping a close eye on every single individual who was walking past the City Master's Mansion.

Lu Ping carrying Su Tang walked up to here. Not too far behind them, Wei Yang suddenly stopped at this moment; He turned around and looked towards Mo Lin and Xi Fan who were similarly not too far away from him, saying:

"Why are you two still following?" Although his words were accompanied by a smile like before, but implication behind his word was 'You two can't be here'.

Xi Fan also smiled as he replied back: "In order to go back to the Zhai Feng institute, this is the road."

"So it turned out like this. In that case, please go on!" Wei Yang no longer paid any attention to the two, and was preparing to catch up to Lu Ping. It was about time to ask Lu Ping to let go of that girl, the City Master wants to see him, him alone.

At this moment, the expressions of Mo Lin and Xi Fan turned extremely bright. At first, they also hadn't realized this point. Although they were travelling as a group, they hadn't talked with each other at all and were

travelling with extreme tact. However, during this journey, Mo Lin and Xi Fan had already realised something, and now was the moment of truth.

Lu Ping carrying Su Tang had arrived in front of City Master's Mansion.

The guards were closely observing him, but he didn't look towards the guard at all, his vision was only focused on the road ahead. One step, two step... and the entrance of the City Master's Mansion.....was left behind by him.

Just as expected!

Xi Fan and Mo Lin suddenly burst out in laughter, adding some colours to this usually peaceful and gloomy road.

Originally, they'd also thought that Lu Ping was moved due to the 'invite' word. Because Wei Yang with his whole face written in smiles can easily give birth to a favourable feeling in people's heart. However, during this silent yet tacit journey, they'd come to realise that there actually might be some sort of misunderstanding.

And at present, it seemed like this truly was the case.

Go to the City Master's Mansion?

Lu Ping said not going, ha! You think, just by covering your whole face in smiles and acting humble, you can cause him to change his mind? Not gonna happen!

He is going in this direction because Zhai Feng, his destination, is coincidentally also in this very direction; He has crossed the Mansion's entrance, because, it is in the way.

Meanwhile, Wei Yang who was planning to catch up with Lu Ping and then ask him to let go of Su Tang, blankly stared as Lu Ping passed by the City Master's Mansion without a single pause. The sounds of laughs coming from his back caused his ever-smiling expression to distort a little.

He realised that he'd been played with; In more precise terms, his good will has been ignored!

Lu Ping had completely ignored him. He was still walking in the direction where he'd originally wanted to. City Master's Mansion? That was just passing by, and he Wei Yang, had thought a bit too much.

Thereupon, his body leapt forward. Originally, they were still several steps apart, however, this leap was enough for him to catch up with Lu Ping. His expression was still smiling as he pulled out one his hand and placed at the front of Lu Ping.

"You're going the wrong way." He said.

Lu Ping glanced ahead and said: "It's not wrong."

"The City Master has invited you." With the hand that was blocking Lu Ping just now, Wei Yang pointed towards the entrance of City Master's Mansion and made a gesture of invitation.

"I've already said: Not. Going." Lu Ping said.

"So, you are not sensible as I'd thought you would be." Wei Yang's smile once again began to become more brilliant.

"Why are you smiling?" Lu Ping was feeling a little strange, according to normal logic, a declined person shouldn't be this enthusiastic.

"I am smiling at you." As Wei Yang spoke, his hand that had been blocking Lu Ping suddenly dashed out towards Lu Ping.

Lu Ping's body shifted horizontally, he still hadn't attacked. However, Su Tang, who was on his back, suddenly waved out her fist.

This sudden action of Su Tang was out of everybody's expectations, Wei Yang whose whole face was plastered with smiles had absolutely no chance to defend, and was firmly struck on his forehead.

"I am leaving...." Watching this scene, Mo Lin's whole face was covered with an expression as if he couldn't bear to directly watch this. Xi Fan, who was sitting in the wheelchair, also couldn't help but shrink his body, as if he'd personally experienced what this fist would be like.

"Ah! Strength's soul sixth Heavenly Layer." Xi Fan said.

"Right! Will it leave behind a hole in his face?" Mo Lin said.

Su Tang withdrew her clenched fist. Lu Ping turned his neck and gave her a glance, though he didn't say anything. Following which, the two of them simultaneously looked towards the one who'd suffered this fist, Wei Yang.

"You didn't use full strength?"

"No. I can't make entire strength come out." Su Tang.

"That explains why can he still stand so steadily." Lu Ping said.

A fist of Strength's soul sixth Heavenly Layer, firmly hitting the target, but the target's figure didn't seem to be swaying at all; even if the target was a Linked One, it shouldn't be this way. That's why Lu Ping's determination was accurate, Su Tang hasn't used her entire strength.

Although it was this way, but this fist had completely erased the smile from the face of Wei Yang. Though, this fist was not heavy, but it had caused him to suffer the greatest of humiliations.

Watching this scene, the two guards at the entrance began to take action. One of them went inside to notify and the other one hastily rushed towards the scene.

"I will kill you!" Wei Yang with his smile now nowhere to be seen, roared.

"I should move on." Lu Ping, however, didn't pay any attention towards such a threat, he once again supported Su Tang on his back with his hands and began to walk forward step-by-step.

Disregarded, completely and thoroughly disregarded!

Wei Yang, who'd never paid attention to any other person except the city master Wei Zhong, never would have thought that someone will actually completely ignore him.

Wei Yang lowered his body, extended his hands towards his bottoms, pulled out a knife and stabbed towards Su Tang on Lu Ping's back without the slightest hesitation.

Students of Zhai Feng?

He could care less about such an identity. That fist, that attitude of complete disregard, he will make them pay for all of it.

In matters such as killing, he is indeed excellent.

Chapter 29: A Unique Skill

The cold light went straight for Su Tang's back.

Wei Yang made a misunderstanding yet again.

He absolutely shouldn't be concerned about Lu Ping and Su Tang's identity as students of Zhai Feng institute, rather he should be concerned about the identity of Lu Ping as a Heaven Awakener with six souls Linked.

It was unfortunate that he didn't know.

Therefore, the price to be paid was not that of Lu Ping's disregard, rather it would be the price of his ignorance.

The cold light descended. Lu Ping did what had to be done; He turned around and shifted Su Tang away from the cold light's way. Before Wei Yang could be amazed, his eyes had already been covered up. Not only his eyes but also his nose, mouth.....

All the five fingers of Lu Ping's right hand were stretched around, covering the entire face of Wei Yang. Wei Yang was absolutely unable to see how Lu Ping had reached out with his hand. This time, he was truly unable to smile regardless of how he tried. Every possible muscle through which he could laugh was firmly stuck under Lu Ping's fingers.

All five fingers contracted and caused a wave of chill to rise from deep within Wei Yang's heart. For the first time, this conceited youngster was feeling so powerless; Surprisingly, he was absolutely incapable of resisting the strength behind these five contracting fingers, neither was he able to struggle free.

Wei Yang, who boasts himself as being an expert in killing people, was actually completely helpless at this moment. The dagger was still in his hand, but he didn't know what he could do with it. Both of his legs were uncontrollably shivering. The real terror was actually this feeling of being so powerless. He could feel that his face has begun to deform; It seemed like his face is going to get squeezed out under these five fingers.

What should I do?

At this instant, what came in the mind of this arrogant youngster was, to actually call for help. At this moment, he discovered himself to be way too weak from what he'd imagined himself to be.

At this moment, he didn't have the opportunity to even cry for help.

What about guards? Why have the guards still not come to help? A glimmer of hope flashed in Wei Yang's mind. He was even unable to notice that the guard who'd rushed over to help had already been easily grabbed and tossed over the mansion's wall by Lu Ping's other hand.

"Uh..." Xi Fan sighed. He decided that he should persuade Lu Ping a bit. It's nothing more than an invitation, going as far as killing a Protector of City Master's Residence, that doesn't sound too necessary.

Xi Fan opened his mouth and was just about to shout Lu Ping's name, but a voice came from behind him and snatched his chance.

"Where did this child come from? To create a fuss here of all the places."

Along with the voice, a figure suddenly arrived in front of Xi Fan. The individual's speed was very quick; By the time he was finished speaking these words, he had already arrived beside Lu Ping and Wei Yang.

"Huh?" By facial features, the man only looked to be about thirty years, though he'd a lot of white hairs on his head. After he stopped beside Lu Ping and Xi Fan, he revealed a surprised expression and then gave Lu Ping a quick glance.

"Let him go, you can't kill him." The man said facing Lu Ping.

"That is true." Lu Ping, who in Xi Fan's opinion would have been very hard to convince, actually nodded his head; Merely, he didn't set Wei Yang down lightly, rather he applied fierce strength through his palms and threw Wei Yang away to the side.

"That was more than required." The man said while shaking his head. He could see that Lu Ping had done this in order to prevent the opponent from launching an immediate counter-attack after being released, however, he could see even more clearly that Wei Yang had long ago lost

his will to fight, his heart had completely been occupied by fear.

Lu Ping pulled his hands back; Naturally, Soul's Power was also no longer being used. The man was just about to go and take a look at Wei Yang, however, at this instant, he suddenly turned his head back.

"Huh?" He once again displayed an astonished expression. His vision towards Lu Ping became much more serious; He narrowed his eyes and carefully sized up Lu Ping. It looked like he was confirming something.

Within an instant, Soul's Power has disappeared this thoroughly, even I can't feel anything?

"Let me take a look at your hand." He said in an unquestionable voice, and his right hand was already reaching forward.

"Who are you?" Lu Ping's expression was reserved. He didn't plan on stretching his hand, rather, he intended to retreat. However, his front suddenly blurred and the man's right hand which at first seemed to be very casually reaching towards him, had already reached him within an instant, and it took hold of Lu Ping's right hand.

Before Lu Ping could resist, that man quickly got rid of Lu Ping's right hand as if he'd been pricked with a needle. At that very instant, the chains on Lu Ping's wrist came flickering out, being even clearer than that time when Lu Ping's fist had collided with Bi Ge's successive power fists. The chains were also swaying much more fiercely as if they were angry after being disturbed.

Clank.....

The brief sound of chains colliding against each other was extremely ear-piercing. However, at this instant, the chains had already vanished. Along with it, the expression on the middle age man's face became much more complex.

"Intense Soul Lock?" He muttered, however, his tone implied that he was still unconvinced.

Xi Fan and Mo Lin had already guessed that this man was not simple. At this moment, they slowly moved closer, hoping to catch some of the

man's words.

"Is it Intense Soul Lock?" This time, the man was asking Lu Ping.

"More or less." Lu Ping said.

"Under the confinement of Intense Soul Lock, you can still employ Soul's Power?"

"Not much." Lu Ping said.

"It should not be this way..." The man actually began to walk around Lu Ping in a circle. At the side, Wei Yang coughed in a loud voice and spit out three teeth due to being forcibly squeezed by Lu Ping earlier, and his face also had deformations at many spots. He had lost that charming smiling face of his forever. Yet still, neither did anyone look towards him nor did anyone care, not a single individual among all the people present.

After encircling Lu Ping's body two times, that man unexpectedly set Lu Ping aside from his mind and focused his attention on the body of Su Tang.

"Small girl, your injury is not light. It was inflicted by a Linked One of Essence's soul, right? Inside your chaotic Soul's Power, there is a portion of Strength's soul's power that needs to be guided out, or else the consequences will be very severe."

Lu Ping, Su Tang, and Xi Fan, the vision of all three of them simultaneously turned towards Mo Lin.

"Is that so?" As Mo Lin heard the man's determination, he moved closer and said:

"I feel there is not much of a problem. Lots of rest and lots of water would be just fine. So?" Mo Lin insisted on preserving his determination.

The man turned his head and gave Mo Lin a quick glance. However, after that, he once again displayed a surprised expression:

"Mo family blood vessels?" He said.

"You can also tell this just by looking?" Mo Lin was also very astonished. Is it not true that Mo family has never been counted among

the clans with famous blood vessels on the continent?

That man, however, lifted his finger and poked towards Mo Lin. Mo Lin wanted to dodge subconsciously, however, just a moment ago, even Lu Ping was unable to dodge this man's right hand, would Mo Lin be able to?

There wasn't much strength behind the finger, however, Mo Lin immediately lost his balance, and slumped on the ground.

"Too easy to recognize. Apart from Mo family's blood vessels, where would you find such a weak physique."

"I am leaving!" Mo Lin was angry. He frantically stood up from the ground and thought about taking out his skewer and poisoning this guy to death, obviously, he did nothing more than just thinking.

"Who are you, Sir?" Xi Fan came forward pushing his wheelchair by himself, and his tone was also much respectful towards this superior person.

"Let's talk about that later. First, let me help her. Hold both of her hands for me." Although this man was spouting instructions all over from his mouth, but in reality, it looked like he'd ignored everybody else as he moved forward, took Su Tang's both hands and raised them.

"The injury due to the power of Essence's soul is very complex. It will.....Huh!" As the man was speaking, he once again revealed a surprised expression as he glanced towards Xi Fan who had come beside him.

"Member of Yan family?" He said.

Xi Fan's complexion instantly changed, but very quickly resumed its usual appearance.

"My name is Xi Fan." Xi Fan said.

"But your surname is Yan, Yan as in Yan Qiuci." The man said.

"Eh?" This time, it was Mo Lin's turn to be astonished; He looked like as if he'd heard a frightening name. However, before he could say anything, there was a sound of explosion. Suddenly, two surging waves of Soul's Power burst out from between the two hands of Su Tang. The sound of

explosion was actually produced due to the collision of these waves with space.

An image of a man flew out.

In mid-air, it seemed like the image patted the sleeves of its shirt two times as if it had just taken care of something troublesome, and then it landed on the ground. While its landing was extremely smooth and relaxed, its face once again revealed an astonished expression.

(Tl: This paragraph was a bit confusing. The image is of the middle aged man who was inspecting. It must have something to do with his ability.)

“Sixth Heavenly Layer of Strength’s Soul, you are this strong?” The man was still surprised.

Following this, the man’s vision fell upon the four youngsters one by one; From Lu Ping, to Su Tang, to Xi Fan, and then Mo Lin.

“What’s is going on?” He said to himself. “Such a coincidence to come across four individuals, each and every one of whom has extraordinary origins?”

And me?

Against the base of the wall, Wei Yang although was not able to speak due to his aching face, but his ears were as sharp as ever. He had heard the evaluation of the man, and by the movement of the man’s eyes, it was certain that he, Wei Yang, was absolutely not included.

I am a genius who merely took two years to break into the realm of Linking of Souls, what do these four individuals amount to? Best they had is sixth Heavenly Layer, that’s all!

Wei Tianqi was mournfully thinking, and his expression seemed much more painful. Suddenly a mouthful of blood rushed up in his throat, his vision turned dark and he passed out.

“Oh! There is one more person!”

Wei Yang had finally been recalled.

Chapter 30: Infinitesimal Separation

City Master Wei Zhong values the efficiency highly, so the City Master's Mansion had naturally been brought up in an atmosphere that corresponds to it. Just a few moments since the entrance guard had gone inside the Mansion to notify, Family Guardian Wei Ling had already appeared outside the mansion, but due to the appearance of this strange guy, he didn't rush forward and act without caution.

This man doesn't seem to have any evil intentions, and neither does he have any intentions to deliberately favour a certain side. After he extracted out those two strands of the power of Strength's Soul, Su Tang had immediately turned full of life and vigor, and at this moment, he is already moving towards Wei Yang.

"Who are you?" Lu Ping asked.

"Capable of telling blood vessels with a single glance, there is only a single individual in the entire continent."

"Right, that's me." The man had lowered his body and was examining the injury on Wei Yang's face. In the end, he shook his head and stood up. He looked towards the Family Guardian who was standing right outside the gate watching them, and waved his hand:

"He is fine, but his face is ruined."

"Your majesty is....." The Family Guardian waved his hands indicating the guards to carry Wei Yang back while he himself went forward to greet the man in quick steps. From the hint inside Xi Fan's words, he'd faintly guessed who this man was.

"Wen Ge Cheng." The man smiled.

The Protector immediately assumed the respected expression that he'd prepared beforehand, and offered his courtesy: "Infinitesimal Separation."

Infinitesimal Separation is an ability, the ability Xi Fan had just recently mentioned. It is an ability grasped only by a single person on the entire continent. Therefore, this ability has turned into this man's symbol and

has even turned into this man's honorific.

This man is called Wen Ge Cheng, and ability: Infinitesimal Separation. Since the ability is unique, the man is also unique. In terms of strength, he is only a Linked One of two souls, which is miles apart from the Linked Ones of three souls, four souls, and five souls on the continent. However, a unique ability has provided him with a unique status. This Linked One of two souls definitely cannot be regarded as one of the strongest, yet this hasn't stopped the three Grand Empires and the four Major Institutes from trying every method at their disposal to win him over.

However, Wen Gecheng didn't accept the invitation of any faction. He just playfully drifts around the world with the winds. Though, his sudden appearance at Xia Feng city had immediately caused the City Master to lose his attention from a certain youngster. Of course, if the City Master knew that Lu Ping was a Heaven Awakener with six souls linked, then it certainly would have been completely different.

The new information had long ago been passed on inside the City Master's Mansion. The efficiency of the City Master is truly nothing like ordinary, only a few words had been exchanged between the Protector and We Gecheng, and the City Master had already made his appearance outside the Mansion's Gate.

"Mr. Wen!" City Master Wei Zhong's expression was extremely earnest, and the echo of his voice was powerful. However, just by the way he'd addressed the former, all people present could feel the respect he felt, and how highly he thought of the former.

"City Lord." In return, Wen Gecheng was also courteous towards Wei Zhong. Being in control of a province, a city master upon the continent can't possibly be nameless like Zhai Feng institute. Wei Zhong is a strong Linked One with three souls linked, this coupled with his identity as a City Master, he naturally can't be a lone wolf like Wen Gecheng.

Each and every one of the twelve Family Guardians at his side is an expert. Wei Yang who recently had his face squeezed out by Lu Ping was arrogant only because he was a genius. In terms of true strength

accounted through realms, he is the at the very bottom of all the Family Guardians. However, since his age is only seventeen years, his future prospects are endless.

“Mr. Wen, forgive me for not being there when you arrived in the city, but I still ask of you to have a seat inside the Mansion.” Every single letter of Wei Zhong’s following words also echoed. The words were accompanied with a Soul’s Power which can cause people hearing unable to refuse him.

“Actually, I was merely passing by. However, since City Master has personally invited, then maybe I should?” Wen Gecheng was smiling.

“Please!” Wei Zhong graciously turned around and guided Wen Gecheng inside the Mansion. As for Lu Ping? The youngster for whom he’d issued instructions two times expressing his desire to have a little meeting with him, was right in front of his eyes at this moment, however, his vision didn’t turn towards him even once. Only an individual like Wen Gecheng could cause him to treat the former as someone important. As for that youngster, he had nothing more than a little bit of curiosity towards him.

The outside of the Mansion’s gate instantly resumed its former tranquil atmosphere. Wei Yang was being carried inside the Mansion, and the guard standing at the Mansion’s entrance who had been recently thrown over the wall by Lu Ping was also walking with the support of people. Just like before, there were two new guards standing perfectly straight at the entrance of the Mansion. Lu Ping and the rest had instantly turned into a group that no one cared about.

“This is actually quite convenient.” Mo Lin said. He was thinking that if Lu Ping were to truly kill Wei Yang, then who could have imagined that the conclusion of this matter would have been left so indefinite like this. Just because of the appearance of a single Wen Gecheng, entire City Master Mansion was acting like stars converging towards the bright moon.

“Hope it remains this way, all right?!” Xi Fan said. There is no way he could believe that this matter will rest at this point. Is it possible to

sweep away the prestige of City Master as one wishes? City Master Mansion is not Xia Feng institute, and even more so, Wei Zhong is not Baliyan.

“How are you doing?” However, Lu Ping didn’t mind any of these things as he was asking Su Tang.

“Looks like it’s completely restored.” Su Tang clenched her fists. There wasn’t the slightest bit of resistance from her Soul’s Power.

“So, who was that person?” Lu Ping asked Xi Fan.

“Impossible! You haven’t heard of Wen Gecheng?” Mo Lin was astonished.

Lu Ping shook his head. Normally saying, within these three years in Zhai Feng, even if Lu Ping didn’t achieve anything in terms of cultivation, but with the increase in knowledge, there is no way he wouldn’t hear about Wen Gecheng. However, Lu Ping is truly special. Within these three years, apart from not following the academic instructions of Zhai Feng at all, his interaction with the other people was also limited to just Su Tang, and maybe some bittersweet encounters with Xi Fan can also be counted. However, these two wouldn’t possibly gossip these things with him.

“Wen Gecheng, although he is a Linked One of only two souls, his ability ‘Infinitesimal Separation’ is one and only on the entire continent. Even among those six Linked One’s of five souls, not a single one could grasp this ability.” Mo Lin said.

“What is this ability?” Lu Ping asked.

“How should I put it. It can also be considered as a perceptive, discerning, discarding false and retaining true kind of ability?” Mo Lin was speaking while looking in the direction of Xi Fan, hoping Xi Fan would follow up.

“Since it’s an ability that is grasped by only a single person, what others know of it is not completely clear. In short, this ability allows him to see what other people cannot, such as blood vessels.....” As soon as Xi Fan said up to here, he suddenly halted speaking.

“Oh, that’s right, Yan Quici and you have some relationship?” Mo Lin immediately recalled the words said by Wen Gecheng when he had identified Xi Fan’s blood vessels.

“I don’t know.” Xi Fan’s answer was extremely firm.

“It’s unlikely for Wen Gecheng to make a mistake, though!” Mo Lin said.

However, Xi Fan refused to recognize him. Xi Fan turned the direction of the wheelchair by himself and began to move forward. Su Tang who was now completely recovered lent him a hand. However, from behind his body, another question came through:

“Who is Yan Quici again?”

“You also don’t know Yan Quici? Oh, come on; One of the six Linked Ones of five souls on the continent, Yan Quici of the northwest, current era’s no. 1 swordsman. Haven’t heard any of it?” Mo Lin said.

Lu Ping scratched his head, this sounds somewhat familiar; or perhaps since the name is too big, he must’ve heard a few phrases from somewhere.

At this moment, Mo Lin clearly didn’t seem to have any interest in preaching general knowledge to Lu Ping, as he promptly dashed forward and caught up with Xi Fan and Su Tang. He crammed beside Su Tang’s body, being very desirous of pushing Xi Fan’s wheel chair together with her.

“Senior Xi Fan! Big Brother Xi Fan!” He was addressing Xi Fan as his kin: “Say say, what is your relationship with Yan Quici?”

“I don’t know him.” However, Xi Fan once again replied with extreme certainty.

“Oh.” Since Xi Fan wasn’t willing to speak, Mo Lin also couldn’t do anything about it. So he began to think about the previous words of Wen Gecheng.

“Just a moment ago, Wen Gecheng said that all the four of us have uncommon origins? How you all have uncommon origin, I could care less;

A part of me already believe in you all prematurely. But, from what angle does my origins seems uncommon? Help me a bit in thinking it over.” Mo Lin said.

“How about: you are of unknown origins instead of uncommon origins?” Xi Fan looked at him: “Mo family? Lin Mo? Who are you in the end?”

“Uh, I am leaving, I forgot that I am still supposed to be concealing my identity!” Mo Lin shouted.

Chapter 31: Hereby The Name

Although Lu Ping and the rest had many encounters along the way, but whether it was their meeting with Xia Feng's dean Baliyan or the matter of the City Master's invitation, neither of these delayed them by much. The only drawback was that they were unable to sit inside that fine carriage, and had to walk all the way back, thus wasting a lot of time.

Lu Ping was running as fast as the wind. Su Tang, pushing Xi Fan, was also very swift. And at the far end was Mo Lin who was constantly crying 'ouch ouch...' as he ran. Although he was gasping and complaining during the entire journey, all around, he did manage to not fall behind the rest of the group.

The Zhai Feng institute resides under the feet of the Xia Feng mountains. The entire Xia Feng city is constructed in accordance with the Xia Feng mountains. Lu Ping and the rest, by the means of riding in the carriage and then walking on foot, had more or less covered about one-half of the entire Xia Feng city. After walking for four hours, when they finally arrived at the Zhai Feng institute, the entire institute was already bathing under the glow of the sunset.

Only a little more than twenty years have passed since the establishment of the Zhai Feng institute's compound. There was certainly no backing of Zhai Feng institute, and it didn't seem like Dean Godou had abundant financial resources either. The only attractive point about him was his identity as a man who had once belonged to the Black Tortoise institute.

From another perspective, it could be said that solely relying on this identity, Godou eventually managed to pool out money from somewhere and created the Zhai Feng institute. At first, the slogan of Zhai Feng that spoke about overtaking the Big Four managed to confuse a lot of people. Xia Feng region was, after all, a remote area, and it wasn't difficult for people to fall behind a little in terms of knowledge. They weren't very familiar with the Big Four, and neither did they have much of a concept about them. So when Godou put his words forward in the form of Zhai

Feng's slogan, many people genuinely believed him.

Now more than twenty years have passed by, and Godou has never once raised this subject again. The knowledge and awareness of Xia Feng region's people has also increased at a lightning-fast rate during these twenty years. Now, while mentioning this subject, people would only treat it as a joke. In comparison to Zhai Feng, Xia Feng region's public is more familiar with the Xia Feng institute.

If there happened to be a child in the family, then as soon as the child hits a suitable age, the entire family would try to have their child admitted in the institutes. If, through various tests, the child is discovered to have a potential for cultivation, then it can even be said that the entire family's future has been ensured. Even if his/her realm after coming out of the institute happened to be ordinary, as long as he/she could reach the second or third Heavenly Layer, it would be enough to establish a superiority in many common affairs. For instance, an individual possessing the Second Heavenly Layer Strength's soul is even quicker than a bull in terms of plowing fields! Though, this kind of comparison is not something that the institutes would appreciate.

As such, the masses of the Xia Feng region have quite a favorable impression of Xia Feng institute. However, the Xia Feng institute itself is having it quite rough during these recent years. Because Zhai Feng, this twenty-something year old recently made institute who is not even one-fourth of their institute, would always come up with an outstanding student that would push them down. Only such talented and brilliant students could cause an institute to be revered.

It's obvious that they have much more students, much more teachers, and much more natural resources; yet not being able to produce excellent seedlings, What does this imply?

Baliyan can only rejoice that Zhai Feng and Xia Feng are situated in such a remote mountainous region where the population is sparse and there are only two institutes within the entire region. Looking at the adjacent region, the Zhi Ling region; It has Sparkling Heaven, Bipolar, Ningyuan, Green Song, and other kinds of big and small scale institutes

adding up to a total of eighteen institutes, that all have fierce competition among each other. For this reason, the Zhi Ling region has established the 'Soul List'. The list is made up of the names of students arranged precisely according to their rankings in the Combined Major Assessment. The Soul List only includes the top fifty students. With the eighteen institutes having countless students.... the intensity of the competition can very well be imagined. However, as a result, what this list really represents is the strength of the institutes themselves. Since this list is reliable, every big district has subsequently begun to follow it.

However, this is precisely the reason of worry for the side of Xia Feng institute. Over here in Xia Feng, how fortunate it is to not have such open and fierce competition among the two of its institutes; The results of the Combined Major Assessment only remains between the two institutes themselves. If the Assessment happened to truly occur in such an intensely competitive environment then what about Xia Feng having countless students? There won't be a single one in the top fifty, or what about Zhai Feng not being even one-fifth of theirs? Even if two of Zhai Feng's students are able to make their way up into the top fifties, then their worth would immediately outstrip Xia Feng's.

For years, Xia Feng had been planning to participate in the Major Assessment of Zhi Ling region in order to increase their influence, but they were never able to come up with the students qualified for it. Participating like this would be the same as asking to be disgraced. This was also the reason that Baliyan had a twinkle in his eyes when he first saw Lu Ping, and was extremely desperate to coerce Lu Ping into entering his institute.

Xia Feng still didn't have the means to take this step. However, Zhai Feng has Lu Ping, Su Tang, Xi Fan, and even that Advanced Learning student who has popped out from nowhere. If these four are allowed to take this step....

With the conclusion of the Major Assessment, Baliyan's worry had only increased.

The collapse of the two towers has led the students of two entire grades

to not have records of their achievements even at this moment. Although their second and fourth graders were able to stop Zhai Feng's momentum, what did it matter? Momentum? Neither side had any momentum to begin with. Students able to attain the twelfth floor are already immensely satisfied with themselves. On the other hand, a feat such as entering top fifty in Zhi Ling's Soul List can only be accomplished by someone who is capable of reaching the apex of the tower. And even this, only provides the qualifications to fight over the top fifty positions, nothing more.

In Baliayan's opinion, there is only a single student that can accomplish this feat, and that student is precisely Lu Ping. And this was also the reason he had followed after Lu Ping so hurriedly in order to repair the relationship between them. Though, the conclusion was the same as bumping into an iceberg.

The latter didn't seem to have too many misgivings with Baliyan, but also didn't plan on providing Baliyan with an opportunity to get closer. Lu Ping was just a sixteen-year-old child, however, as far as this matter is concerned, he'd rendered Baliyan completely helpless.

After all this, Baliyan noticed that City Master Mansion's scout.

This is a clear sign that the attention Lu Ping has caused to fall on himself was not just limited to the two institutes now. But then again, what can City Master's Mansion actually do about it? Did they take notice of Lu Ping because of his strength, or was it because of the trifling matter of Lu Ping pushing Wei Tianqi.....

Baliyan had been continuously thinking all the way back to the Xia Feng institute. From hereon, he truly would not be able to rest easy.

Lu Ping; Within a single day, this name had already been deeply imprinted in the minds of numerous people.

The day of Major Assessment passed by.

Early Morning of the next day, Lu Ping woke up with the light of dawn. All of these incidents didn't cause the slightest change inside him. For him, the methods of the institutes never did hold any importance. During

these past three years, he had always been trying to break out of the confinement of the Intense Soul Lock.

Clang. Clang....

Yesterday, within a single day, he'd heard this sound two times. For him, this ear-piercing sound produced by the chains was once extremely familiar. During his days in the Organization, whenever he was led by the neck to go through experiments, he could hear this sound extremely clearly, and along with this sound would follow, unending suffering. During this time, every person revolving and circling around him would only be expressionlessly watching and taking observations.

Pain, no pain.

It was as if they were operating some sort of switch. Day by day, year by year, they continued to operate on his body. He kept on persisting the pain. Numbly yet calmly, he kept on going. He didn't know what else he could do; Since the beginning of his memory, he'd always been living this kind of life.

Before this; Where was he? What kind of life had he been living? He had no idea. He didn't even know his age or ever heard his name. It was until the day he escaped. On that day, on the paper of records, he saw an entry: 'Year 1847 Month 4 Day 24.'

He wasn't even certain if this could be considered to be him or not. But he held onto it as the symbol of his life, and from thereafter, he started to have an age.

Afterwards, while carrying Su Tang inside that unbounded otherworldly ocean of ice, accompanied with extreme hardships, he wished for a path that will not require him to bear so many sufferings, a path on which he can continue to walk peacefully and smoothly.

Lu Ping. (Lu = path or road. Ping = level, average or in this case peace.)

This was the first time he'd truly looked forward to something.

Thereupon, he began to consider his wish as his name.

Lu Ping.

Chapter 32: Both Ingenious And Bold Thinking

“He is awake.”

As Lu Ping was lying on the bed lost in thoughts, he suddenly heard voices of conversation from outside the window.

Who is it?

Lu Ping shifted his body sideways and looked in the direction of window.

There were two men, and both of them were leaning comfortably against the ledge of the window. Generally speaking, such a feat would be absolutely impossible. Because Lu Ping knew the height of this window's ledge. Even if a person is able to reveal just his head, then that in itself would be considered as pretty tall. However, Lu Ping knew that the two individuals at the window's opening are absolutely not such tall individuals.

Zhai Feng institute's Dean, Godou.

And the another individual actually is yesterday's Infinitesimal Separation Wen Gecheng.

Lu Ping got off his bed as he listened to the conversation between the two men.

“This is top-notch fresh water from the spring in the Xia Feng mountains. The tea is good too. It is the mountain tea that can only be found in high Xia Feng mountains; You won't be able to buy this tea in any other region.” Godou said as he raised a brewing pot and inclined it slightly towards the window. A little bit of steam and mist flowed out from within the pot's mouth, and along with it, the fragrance of tea quickly travelled inside the window.

“Good tea.” Wen Gecheng sighed in praise, then turned his head towards Lu Ping inside the window and smiled.

“How come it's you?” Lu Ping said while walking towards the window.

He looked outside, and found both of these men were sitting on a step ladder as they leaned against the window's ledge. In the centre of two, a tea table was being erected. These two have actually decided to sample the early morning tea right outside his window.

"Why it can't be me?" Wen Gecheng asked back while taking a sip of tea from his cup.

"I was just making casual small talks." Lu Ping said.

"Haha, what a straightforward child." Wen Gecheng heartily laughed.

"Hehe." Godou also smiled. He raised the teacup in his hand and took a huge gulp. He was drinking the tea in a queer way, and his appearance outside the window while sitting on ladder also didn't look too good; In particular with his identity as a Dean, his appearance looked a bit too carefree.

"While you were asleep, we had a little careful research on you. You don't mind, do you?" Wen Gecheng said.

"It's ok, I am used to it." Lu Ping said.

Wen Gecheng remained silent for a short duration, it seemed as if he was able to hear the misery and pain within the words 'used to it.' Then he said: "You like to be straightforward, so I will be direct with you."

"Ok." Lu Ping said.

"I cannot make out your blood vessels." Wen Gecheng said.

"Oh." Lu Ping remained calm.

He didn't have any life experiences, name was created by himself, and age was adopted on the basis of a paper entry. Though, he did have a bit of curiosity towards his origins, but he didn't have much expectations of it. As far as he is concerned, he is just Lu Ping, Lu Ping who had escaped from the organization and has been living in Zhai Feng institute for the past three years. Even if he is able discovers his past, he doesn't plan on changing himself from this point onwards.

So towards this 'origin', whether there is some or there isn't any, he is

pretty much indifferent.

“It looks like you are not concerned about this matter at all.” Wen Gecheng said.

“I don’t care about my origins.” Lu Ping said.

“However I am not speaking about such things.” Wen Gecheng said.

“Then, what are you talking about?” Lu Ping said.

“Without being clear on your blood vessels, I don’t have a way to open up Intense Soul Lock.” Wen Gecheng said.

“Is that so?” Lu Ping’s reaction however was still calm as before. It looked like he didn’t care about this matter either.

Wen Gecheng smiled and took another sip of tea and said: “Sure enough, I haven’t determined wrong.”

“Huh?”

“Actually, you have no thoughts of opening up the Intense Soul Lock at all, you are trying to control it instead. Am I right?” Wen Gecheng said.

Lu Ping haven’t responded.

“Intense Soul Lock is a kind of confinement to Soul’s Power. It is capable to completely suppress Soul’s Power. Therefore, from a different perspective, it is also the best concealment for the Soul’s Power. You are very satisfied with this situation, huh?” Wen Gecheng said.

Lu Ping continued to maintain silence; He neither denied nor confirmed these speculations.

“Quite ingenious yet bold way of thinking.” He once again unhurriedly drank his tea, and then, in neither quick nor slow pace, he said: “However there is a loophole.”

“Huh?” Lu Ping said.

“So, finally a bit of reaction, huh?” Wei Gecheng smiled; His face depicted the ‘as I expected’ expression. With such a result of his build up, he was already very satisfied, hence he didn’t try to add further

excitement and said to Lu Ping: “Because this is an absolute contradiction. ‘Intense Soul Lock’ will bring about a concealment by the suppression of the Soul’s Power. This kind of concealment method indeed is perfect, but is also equally dangerous. When confronting someone on your own accord, it will be possible to remove the suppression of the Intense Soul Lock and burst forth with strength, however, if you come across a sneak attack, then what? You wouldn’t have removed the restrictions, thus you would be unable to feel the existence of danger.”

“I don’t want to use suppression to achieve concealment at all. I am merely exploiting this state of suppression.” Lu Ping said.

“Exploit? Exploit what?”

“Exploit precisely this situation of Soul’s Power being compressed within an extremely small range.” Lu Ping said.

“Isn’t it suppression still?” Wen Gecheng said

“It’s compression, not suppression. Suppression causes inability to employ Soul’s Power, and compression causes Soul’s Power to congeal together in an extremely high concentration.” Lu Ping said.

“So, what does this have to do with ‘Intense Soul Lock’?” Wen Gecheng asked.

“Because if someone desires for such a high compression, then it can only be done by relying on the constricting power of the Intense Soul Lock.” Lu Ping said.

“So your idea is to actually perceive the existence of Soul’s Power under the constrictive confinement of Intense Soul Lock, and moreover perceive its complete existence. If this happens, then for you, this confinement of Intense Soul Lock will become compression of Soul’s Power.” Wen Gecheng.

“You have realized it finally.” Lu Ping’s face was covered with a gratified expression.

Wen Gecheng nodded, but then suddenly felt that there is some error in this somewhere.

Was I trying show off some key points, and then instruct this youngster a bit? Then, how come I am the one who ended up being instructed instead? No, this is not being instructed, It's just me trying to understand for myself, just understanding that's all!

"Ah! This is wrong!" Wen Gecheng suddenly recalled something again:

"From your words, you are not trying to grasp Intense Soul Lock at all, you are only trying to sneak out Soul's Power through under the Intense Soul Lock and then use it."

"That's True!" Lu Ping nodded.

"But you said that you are trying to grasp it!" Wen Gecheng shouted.

"Were these words not your's?" Lu Ping seemed uncertain.

Wen Gecheng stared blankly. Carefully recalling, these words were indeed said by himself. Lu Ping had refused to comment, and what's even more hateful is that he had even boasted 'Sure enough, I haven't determined wrong' when what he determined was nowhere near the truth.

"So, how much you've completed at this moment?" Wen Gecheng asked

"Can't you tell by the Infinitesimal Separation?" Lu Ping asked.

"How come this child is so loathsome?" Wen Gecheng angrily said.

"Haha." Godou heartily laughed and took another huge gulp from his teacup.

"If even the Infinitesimal Separation is unable to tell, then is there anyone who would be able to tell?" Lu Ping seriously asked.

"This...." Although, Wen Gecheng very much wanted to tell Lu Ping with confidence that this indeed was the case, however, in the end he only said: "You can't believe as such. World will always be much bigger than what you or I can imagine."

Chapter 33: Extreme Curiosity

In the end, how big is the world?

Lu Ping used to be very curious about this question; Inside that small cramped stone room, Lu Ping would look at the world through a palm sized airing hole overhead.

Early morning, light rays would enter the room through the hole. Inside the rays, a few dust particles would untiringly dance about the entire day. Lu Ping would try to catch them. Although, he would fail every time, but the feeling of light rays falling on his hands would feel very comfortable and warm.

Finally, in the night, sometimes it would be possible to look at a star through the hole, twinkling towards him. If luck happened to be on his side, he would be able to see two stars. Once, there were even three stars cramped together within the tiny space of the airing hole, and for this reason, his excitement continued for very many days.

During the times of rain, water would pour down; During the times of snow, snow would float down.

In addition to all these things, sometimes a bird would perch about the hole. It would poke its head inside, make a few sounds, and then fly away.

And Lu Ping would think: The world is very interesting. Though, he didn't know how big it is, but it would certainly be much bigger than this small stone room. Perhaps a hundred times bigger, or maybe even many thousand times bigger.

Afterwards, when he was finally able to escape, he saw the world outside the air hole. Vast sky and vast land, the things, of which ordinary people had already gotten tired, the things which have long ago ceased to produce any unusual emotions in ordinary people, caused Lu Ping to astonishingly open his eyes wide as much as he could.

How big the world is?

He thought: It is certainly not just hundred or a few thousand times

bigger!

He decided he would keep on living, along with Su Tang, right here between this boundless sky and land. How much big the world is? He was no longer curious about this question. Just as long as his body can exist somewhere inside it, he was already immensely satisfied.

Bubbling sound....

Again, a pot of spring water was being boiled. Bubbles were continuously rising up from the bottom of the pot to the surface of water and then popping out. Godou grabbed the pot and raised it high above. This time he'd prepared three cups. One cup was for Lu Ping.

"Help yourself." Godou said while carefully grabbing his own cup.

"I cannot help you with anything regarding your cultivation." Wen Gecheng said to Lu Ping.

"It just might be because you've arrived a bit too late." Godou while blowing over the foams over the surface of tea, said with averted eyes.

Lu Ping's vision fell upon a paper lying on the tea table. The paper was dull and dry, and its contents were concise and written sloppily. It was precisely the letter of invitation to Wen Gecheng, and the date inscribed on it was: 1847/1/22.

Lu Ping remembered this day.

On that day, he and Su Tang had escaped from the organization. He kept on walking in the snow fields forever, he'd absolutely no idea where to go, he just continued on with determination. Then later, they came across Godou, and he guided them to a road. It was at least a week before they were able to reach Zhai Feng, but by looking on the date of the letter, it looks like Godou had sent this sealed letter on the very day he'd come across them.

However, Wen Gecheng actually took three years to keep the appointment, Lu Ping couldn't help but feel deep veneration for the former.

“It’s a miracle that I was even able to see this letter, otherwise you think I will see this rotten handwriting of yours and coming running on my legs in these desolate mountains?” Wen Gecheng said.

Wen Ge Cheng’s whereabouts were ever changing, so for him, a matter such as receiving a letter is absolutely illogical. Therefore, this letter not being lost within these three years, and moreover even ultimately falling into his hands surprised him incessantly. Because of this astonishment, he decided to make this trip, even though it was delayed by three years.

“So, is the trip worth?” Godou said.

Wen Gecheng nodded, and then looked towards Lu Ping: “Even if you don’t care, I am extremely curious towards your origins.”

“I will try to find it out.” Wen Gecheng’s hand extended forward, travelled inside the window, and patted Lu Ping on shoulders. Unsurprisingly, Lu Ping’s reaction was pretty ordinary. However, it seemed like Lu Ping’s reaction didn’t have any effect on the excitement of Wen Gecheng. It seemed like after making this decision, Wen Gecheng’s entire being was brimming with energy.

“So, I am leaving.”

Such an abrupt farewell was rather surprising to Lu Ping. Upon looking at Wen Ge Cheng’s extreme curiosity, Lu Ping thought that latter would ask him a lot of things.

“That’s right!” As Wen Gecheng was descending down the step ladder, he seemed to have suddenly thought of something.

“I don’t know how you are trying to do this, but I have a suggestion.” Wen Gecheng said:

“Make separate parts of the region of your Soul’s Power, and try to sneak out one soul at a time, that would probably be somewhat easier.”

“Oh.” Lu Ping made a sound of agreement. His face didn’t reveal any kind of realization or pondering expression as Wen Gecheng was expecting.

“Are you already trying it this way?” Wen Gecheng said with some resentment.

“Right.” Lu Ping said.

“Good Bye!” Wen Gecheng left without ever turning his head back again.

“Hehe.” Godou chuckled once again. After he finished his tea, he looked towards Lu Ping: “If you had met him three years ago, you could have avoided a lot of detours, no?”

“That’s true.” Lu Ping nodded. He was able to escape from the organization due to their carelessness during an experiment. Every time during the experiments, the loosening of Intense Soul Lock would be limited, both with respect to its extent and time period. At that time, as he would be about to just feel his Soul’s Power, it would be quickly suppressed down by the Intense Soul Lock again.

In these three years inside Zhai Feng, Lu Ping had gone through countless experiments and countless defeats before being able to formulate his current approach. And Wen Gecheng? He only saw him for the first time, but he was still able to figure out so many things; He was indeed extraordinary. If Lu Ping was truly able to meet him before, then he surely would have Lu Ping save a lot of time that had been wasted on going in wrong directions.

“Infinitesimal Separation is an unmatched discerning ability. However, only an extremely curious person like him can train in such ability.” Godou said.

“Curious?”

“Right. Didn’t you see that he is even more set on finding about you than you yourself? This is because you really are worthy of his curiosity.” Godou said.

“So should I help him or not?” Lu Ping scratched his head. Although, he doesn’t care much about these things, but considering that former has come all the way to here due to his matter, if he doesn’t help out a bit,

then that would be too inconsiderate.

“Be at ease! In order to satisfy his curiosity, when he needs your help, he won’t let you escape even if you want to.” Godou said.

“Then, I better maintain some distance from him!” Lu Ping was feeling a little fearful.

“You can try.” Godou said.

“Why am I suddenly feeling so uneasy.....I am thinking that he might even be more troublesome than the organization.” Lu Ping said.

“That’s for sure. Since that organization hasn’t come to bother you ever since, you seem very satisfied. However, his curiosity knows no bounds. At this moment, he is only curious towards your origins, but very soon, his curiosity will eventually shift towards this extremely mysterious organization. Their members, their operations, their goals; He would be extremely desirous of finding out these things.”

“What were your intentions behind having him come over here?” Lu Ping asked.

“Um.....” Godou gave it a thought: “To discern your blood vessels, and help you with the Intense Soul Lock.”

“And now?”

“Now...Only he could be blamed for arriving late..”

“Be a little considerate of others!” Lu Ping said.

“No, He enjoys such things!” Godou said: “As for you, it’s quite surprising you have already accomplished up to this extent. You should also think about paying back my life saving favour a bit.”

“Speak.”

“I’ve already spoken before: The future of Zhai Feng will rely on you few outstanding students!” Godou said.

“This is an absolute fraud!” Lu Ping said.

“To accomplish this fraud, I had to relax the restrictions of the

institution, while waiting three years for you.” Godou said.

“What did you say before? ‘According to the level of First Grade Soul’s Tower, it would suffice as long as I get through it in my first grade?’ Did you ever imagine that I would directly reach the top?” Lu Ping said.

“Directly reaching the top is good. Just getting through, now where is the fun in that?” Godou smiled.

Chapter 34: Grand Soul Convention

“What do you want me to do?” Lu Ping asked

“Go participate in the Grand Soul Gathering of Zhi Ling region as a student of Zhai Feng.” Godou’s expression was grave.

“Oh.” Lu Ping said.

Godou again filled his cup with tea and waited a long time for Lu Ping to speak. However, he didn’t hear another word coming out of Lu Ping’s mouth.

Not even reacting; Godou, feeling a little dull, decided to do it himself.

“Since you are participating, return with at least the first position!” Godou said.

‘At least’ arranged behind ‘first position’ was clearly inappropriate. However, since Lu Ping hadn’t been reacting at all, Godou decided, he might as well raise the standards for him.

“Ok.” Lu Ping replied.

Godou once again waited for a long time, but there was yet again just a single word of reply.

“I say...” Godou couldn’t endure anymore: “Can you not be perfunctory with me?”

“Naturally, that’s impossible. You saved my life.” Lu Ping seriously said.

Godou reflected on it for a good while, then said:

“Actually, if you were alone, without carrying Su Tang, then you wouldn’t have needed my saving. So, in precise terms, the one I actually saved is Su Tang.”

“It’s the same.” Lu Ping resolutely said: “Because, a possibility in which I wouldn’t have carried Su Tang doesn’t exist.”

“Good.” Godou nodded and summarized his admiration towards Lu Ping with the use of a single word.

“Su Tang will also participate with you.” Godou said.

“She will also participate?” Lu Ping’s brows creased.

“You! What’s with your expression? Why does it look like you are condemning me, thinking that my greed would never be satisfied? The reason for her participation is to help her gain experience. Her Soul’s Power has already attained the realm of the sixth Heavenly Layer. She requires a higher tempering environment than this. And let alone Zhai Feng, you won’t find such an environment in the entire Xia Feng region.” Godou said.

“Oh.” Lu Ping nodded.

“And also, Mo Lin and Xi Fan.” Godou said.

“Mo Lin?”

“I am talking about Lin Mo. You think his identity can remain concealed even after Infinitesimal Separation visited? Didn’t you know all along? Still trying to stick out for your friend, eh?” Godou said.

“He He.” Lu Ping smiled, and then asked again:

“Wouldn’t Xi Fan have problems?”

“There is still one month remaining in the Gathering. Going by Xi Fan’s natural disposition, recovering back in one month isn’t going to be a problem.” Godou said.

“I wasn’t asking about his injuries, instead, I was asking about his identity. Reasonably speaking, at present, he should be considered to have graduated from the institute, no?” Lu Ping said.

“He is yet to take the Major Assessment, so he still can’t be considered to have graduated?” Godou said in a rhetorical question way.

“You don’t intend to arrange a Major Assessment specifically for him?”

“That’s a matter for after the Zhi Ling region’s Grand Soul Gathering.”

“So despicable!” Lu Ping couldn’t help but lament.

“Impudent.” Godou glared at him.

However, to tell the truth, being seated astride on the step ladder like a painter, and glaring at Lu Ping who had messy appearance himself, Godou didn't present a shred of dignified appearance.

"Since there is one month remaining in the Major Assessment, I have made special arrangements for each of you regarding your cultivation." Godou continued.

"Cultivation?"

"Go to Tian Zhao institute. I have already made contact with one of my old friends, he will provide the most suitable guidance to you all in accordance with your individual disposition. Oh, in precise terms, they are three individuals, you can only rely on yourself." Godou said.

"Oh." Lu Ping nodded his head.

Subsequently, there was another short silence. Godou hesitated for a long time, but in the end, he couldn't help himself from asking:

"Tell me something, what fraction of your Soul's Power are you able to sneak out under the Intense Soul Lock at present?"

"I don't know." Lu Ping shook his head, and then immediately afterwards, supplemented with: "Because, I have absolutely no idea how much my hundred percent is."

"Be extremely cautious; Zhi Ling region is not like our Xia Feng region. There are many outstandingly talented geniuses there. Moreover, you can't be sure that other institutes won't cheat." Godou said extremely seriously.

"Are all Deans this despicable?" Lu Ping asked.

"The World is very big; You can always find someone better than you!" Godou lamented.

...

Xia Feng institute is situated seven hundred metres east of the Xia Feng City. It is encompassing a huge estate. Before Zhai Feng institute, the Xia Feng institute was the sole institute within the entire Xia Feng region.

Four tall and majestic Soul's Towers were the landmark buildings of the entire Xia Feng region.

However, at present, two of the towers have already disappeared. Both the towers have collapsed with extreme symmetry. Their ruins have still not been sorted out. And Godou, sitting in the Dean's room, was able to catch its sight just by glancing sideways, and every time he did so, it would constrict his chest incessantly.

The construction of a Soul's Tower is by no means an easy feat. For an institute, Soul's Tower is a symbol of prestige. In reality, among the 442 institutes that have written accounts, only 91 possess their own Soul's Towers. Although Xia Feng institute is not among the institutes that are counted among the top, since it is the sole institute in such a widespread area, they possess Soul's Towers, which many institutes still don't possess the ability to construct. These Soul's Towers allowed Xia Feng to be a bit proud of themselves.

However, now, two of these towers have collapsed.

Just by relying on their own strength, constructing two new Towers would not be possible. Originally, these Soul's Towers were constructed only due to the City Master Mansion's assistance. However, this time, two of the Towers have been destroyed. Baliyan has no other choice than to turn towards the City Master's Mansion. However, whether or not they will agree to construct two towers for them, is certainly not easy to say. Current times are different; Their Xia Feng institute isn't the sole institute in the entire Xia Feng region.

Zhai Feng.

A mere thought of this name is enough to cause Baliyan to turn extremely bitter. Today, he once again received a report; Zhai Feng will dispatch a faction to participate in the Zhi Ling region's Grand Soul Gathering. This caused Baliyan to be even more restless.

Lu Ping.

How could Baliyan not realize, what Godou was relying upon? His intention to attract Lu Ping was also based on a similar plan. However,

Godou had already made an agreement with him that as long as he can persuade Lu Ping, Godou would let Lu Ping go. However, Godou is still outrageously sending Lu Ping to represent Zhai Feng. This implies that former never cared about the agreement at all, he had already made sure that Lu Ping would never be coerced into joining Xia Feng.

“This old bastard!” Baliyan heavily slapped the table. However, the sound that replied him was that of the room’s door being opened.

“Dean, City Master’s Mansion has sent people.” It was his personal advisor who had hurriedly rushed in to report.

“Huh?” Baliyan blankly stared. The response from City Master’s Mansion was much quicker than he’d expected. He had sent the information about the collapse of Towers just early morning. He knew that City Master Wei Zhong emphasizes efficiency a lot. However, he never expected that latter would be this efficient.

“Invite him in! Invite him in quickly!” Godou said at once as soon as his spirit returned back to him. However, the guy from the City Master’s Mansion had already arrived outside the door.

“Baliyan.” The individual entered the Dean’s room and greeted him. Baliyan didn’t dare to be neglectful in the slightest. He recognized this man; Wei Ming, one of the twelve Family Guardians of the City Master’s Mansion. His age is not much, but reportedly, this guy is full of schemes and strategies. He is held in a very high regard by Wei Zhong. If Wei Zhong sends him for something, then that matter is surely extremely important. If it’s just the matter of the collapse of Towers, then Wei Zhong wouldn’t have dispatched his number one Protector in terms of wisdom to personally handle it. This caused Baliyan to be nervous involuntarily. He even forgot to offer a seat or ask for tea. He was just foolishly staring at the former, waiting for him to speak the purpose of visit.

Chapter 35: Two Things.

Wei Ming didn't care much about Baliyan's behavior, which was somewhat lacking in manners. Being the most trusted Protector of Wei Zhong, he is very good at carrying out orders in correspondence with the former's style, emphasizing the efficiency heavily.

"Two things." Wei Ming raised two of his fingers and got right to the point.

"First thing: Regarding Xia Feng institute's growth during these few recent years, City Master is dissatisfied."

"This..." Baliyan forced a smile. Regarding the growth of Xia Feng institute, he too had been equally dissatisfied. However, he truly didn't have any methods to do something about it. With respect to facilities, or two hundred years worth of history, or the ever present support of Xia Feng region's masses, most of the institutes on the continent are behind Xia Feng institute, let alone Zhai Feng. Soul's Towers are the biggest proof of this fact. Even with respect to teachers, Baliyan had exhausted all his capabilities to net in geniuses. Although he wouldn't dare go as far as the entire continent, when compared to Zhai Feng, he had absolute confidence.

The main problem lies in students. In terms of numbers, Xia Feng institute definitely can't be regarded as lacking in students. However, Xia Feng, this mountainous region is truly an uncivilized area. Even after his utmost efforts, he was unable to find a single genius. There also isn't much possibility of other regions or clans sending their talented children to Xia Feng institute which had facilities, but no achievements to speak of.

And because of this, Baliyan would think: 'Even the cleverest housewife can't cook without rice.'

"You need not explain." Baliyan had barely said two words, and he was stopped by Wei Ming already:

"City Master is much more clear than you about the reason. However,

how to resolve the problem, that is your responsibility. City Master has even handed over his only son to the Xia Feng institute. I think, you should be very clear on what this implies.”

(Tl: By reading this paragraph, it seems that Wei Ming is bossing Baliyan around. But that's not entirely the case. He is addressing Baliyan respectfully. A more precise translation would be to put a 'respected' behind you or 'your esteemed self'. For e.g: 'City Master realize this more clearly than respected you.' But that just sounds too weird.)

Wei Ming's way of addressing Baliyan had been courteous through the entire conversation. However, his attitude wasn't respectful at all. Sweat could already be seen on Baliyan's head.

“I understand.... I understand.” He was continuously repeating. City Master

Wei Zhong's support towards Xia Feng institute was unquestionable;

Wei Ming had demonstrated this point in extremely concise words. After showing such support and still not getting any results, City Master being unsatisfied is reasonable and fair. Because of this reason, Baliyan has been ashamed to even show his face. Under such conditions, in whatever way City Master wished to handle this situation from now, he had no other choice but accept it.

“However, City Master will not give up on Xia Feng like this. City Master's Mansion will replenish the Two Soul's Tower for you.” Wei Ming said.

“Huh?” Baliyan almost felt that he'd misheard. Wei Ming's previous words were clearly justifying the reason for giving up on Xia Feng. Who could have expected such a turn of events?

“However, this doesn't signify anything at all.” Wei Ming continued:

“This is because Zhai Feng needs four Soul's Towers, whereas Xia Feng only requires two. It's only saving trouble. City Master likes to be efficient.”

“I understand....” After hearing these words, Baliyan who had just

recently been overjoyed because of the turn of events, started to sweat again. Although the City Master is still maintaining his support towards Xia Feng for the time being, but if Xia Feng still can't manage to make a breakthrough in progress, then perhaps he would have to think about hitting the road.

"Second thing." After the first matter was over, Wei Ming didn't provide Baliyan any time to digest, and immediately began to explain the second matter.

"Xia Feng, will participate in Zhi Ling region's Grand Soul Gathering." Wei Ming said.

"Ah! This....perhaps is not too wise? For the time being, Xia Feng still doesn't have the capability for this. One year..... give me one more year." Baliyan began panicking. On this particular problem, he would firmly stick to his ground. He didn't expect that City Master's Mansion's evaluation would come out this hurried. Unexpectedly, they want him to directly go to the Grand Soul Gathering, so they can look at the outcome. However, there is only one month remaining! How would Xia Feng come up with a powerful student within one month, unless.....unless....

Baliyan's brain was reeling at a lightning fast rate, and he suddenly thought of a possibility: "Unless...."

"Unless Zhai Feng's Lu Ping is transferred into Xia Feng, is it?" Wei Ming helped Baliyan to speak the idea he'd come up with.

Baliyan's old face turned red. However, at this moment, he couldn't be bothered with this. If he could win over Lu Ping, that would be extremely fortunate, and what better chance than City Master's Mansion personally stepping in. Thereupon, he nodded.

"You think that City Master's Mansion can just neglect student's own wish at will?" Wei Ming suddenly said in a cold voice. This time, he didn't even use any 'honorifics'.

Godou was somewhat at a loss. If City Master's Mansion truly issues such instructions, then, of course, the student's desire can be neglected. Could it be that there is even such a student who wouldn't mind City

Master's Mansion?

He naturally didn't know that just yesterday, Lu Ping, unimpressed by both persuasion and force, bluntly rejected City Master's invitation, and even seriously injured a Family Guardian. Therefore, such self-mocking words accompanied with such a cold tone, rendered Baliyan extremely puzzled.

"This is the list of names of Xia Feng's students who will go to the Grand Soul Gathering." This time, Wei Ming suddenly pulled out a paper and handed over to Baliyan.

Baliyan blankly accepted the paper and swept his eyes over it. The first name was: Wei Tianqi.

City Master's only son. In terms of the realm, he truly is among the best in Xia Feng institute. If not for the collapse of the Soul's Tower, going by his realm, he most probably would have rushed up to the apex of the Tower. However, just with this strength, he only had the qualifications to participate in the Gathering, entering the Soul List wouldn't be that easy.

Baliyan had been pondering over participating in the Grand Soul Gathering of Zhi Ling region for many years, so naturally, he knew quite a bit about these things. Grand Soul Gathering doesn't distinguish students on the basis of their grades. Wei Tianqi would not only confront the students of his own grade, but also the students of fourth grade which is one grade above him. Students of Zhi Ling region didn't have the exact same graduation time as the students of Xia Feng region. Their fourth graders formally graduate only after participating in that year's Grand Soul Gathering. And the Gathering's final ranking would be the ultimate evaluation of their strength. The number of floors attained? This is just too embarrassing in Zhi Ling region.

Is City Master a bit overconfident because it's his own son?

Baliyan was having such thoughts after he saw Wei Tianqi's name in the list. However, soon after, his vision drifted over to the second name on the list.

Wei Yang.

Wei Yang? Is it that Wei Yang? The genius who attained the realm of Linking Of Souls just two years after coming into contact with the perception of Souls? One of the twelve Family Guardians?

This kind of a genius is precisely the student for which Baliyan had always longed for. It had been a pity that the guy was already a Protector, and had such a high realm. Thus, Baliyan didn't seek him out. However, at this moment, City Master is actually handing over Wei Yang to him, and is even allowing the former to represent the Xia Feng institute in the Gathering?

Baliyan's temples jumped twice. This display could only be seen when he is extremely excited. He had now realized the Mansion's intent behind asking him to participate in the Gathering.

Beneath Wei Yang's name, third name:

Wei Ming.

It was actually Wei Ming. Baliyan was not too clear about the true strength of this young man. Although Wei Yang is a genius, but it is said that, in terms of true strength, he is actually the last among the twelve Family Guardians.

Even Wei Ming had made an appearance. Baliyan was beginning to have extreme expectations towards this list. He impatiently moved his gaze towards the fourth name.

Wei Ying?

Who is this?

Baliyan was at a loss. Since surname is Wei, he must be one of the twelve Family Guardians. These twelve individuals with different origins, after following Wei Zhong and turning into his Family Guardians, would be bestowed the common surname 'Wei'. Wei Ying is probably one of them. However, why has his name never been heard.

"Are you finished looking?" At this moment, Wei Ming's voice sounded.

"Yes....I'm finished." There were only four names in the list, just a

glance was enough to sweep over all the names.

“There is no need to say much. I presume you will manage the arrangements?” Wei Yang was once again using the honorific.

“I understand. I will manage the arrangements.” Baliyan had lost count how many times he’d said ‘I understand’ today. However, for him, this was an extremely fortuitous matter. City Master’s Mansion is actually sending experts to represent Xia Feng in the Grand Soul Gathering. If this had happened before, then perhaps Xia Feng would have long ago rushed to the top, no?

Wei Yang, Wei Ming, and that unheard guy Wei Ying. I have these experts, and Zhai Feng only has a single individual, Lu Ping. Does that amount to anything?

No!

Why am I still thinking about Zhai Feng and Lu Ping?

My thinking is a bit too narrow-minded. I’ve truly turned stupid while mingling in Xia Feng region.

With so many experts, I should focus on the talents of Xia Feng region.

It’s a pity. The number of experts is still lacking a bit. It’s just three of them. If all twelve happened to be dispatched, then at that time, with twelve individuals mightily occupying the Soul’s List, how grand would Xia Feng institute look? Ah!

Uh.... That’s not right. All twelve individuals of Xia Feng with the surname Wei? That would look too eye-grabbing and too unnatural. Present arrangements are nevertheless the better, being comparatively within the standards.

Zhai Feng? Lu Ping?

We will meet at the Grand Soul Gathering once again!

Chapter 36: Northern Exit's Main Culprit

How long Godou had been waiting for this day, Lu Ping didn't know. He only knew that after their conversation in the morning, Godou called all four of them at noon of that very same day, and made arrangements for their journey.

"This is a letter. Upon reaching Tian Zhao institute, give it to teacher Chu Min. Uh, perhaps, she is actually a Dean nowadays. For this month, you will listen to her arrangements!" Godou, while holding the letter, swept his gaze across each of the four individuals present before his eyes. Finally, he decisively handed over the letter to Xi Fan, who was seated in his wheelchair.

"Perhaps a Dean?" Xi Fan accepted the letter while being a bit doubtful.

"En. It has been some time since we got in touch with each other. Greet her on my behalf." Godou waved his hands, indicating them to be on their way; while he himself turned back, and left first on his own.

"What's going on?" Mo Lin still had a drowsy expression on his face:

"I haven't even washed my drowsiness yet, and I have been suddenly called to bear the future of institute? Why on earth, am I here? Why am I suddenly feeling a bit forgetful?"

"Just walk!" However, Lu Ping remained concise and comprehensive with him. Then, Lu Ping and Su Tang, pushing Xi Fan's wheelchair together at the same time, went on ahead along with 'Gulululu...' sound. Mo Lin, standing at the front of Zhai Feng's entrance gate, was looking at the words 'Zhai Feng' written high above, at the gate's crossbeam. He was still a bit absent-minded. After foolishly standing there for quite a while, he turned his head once again and found that the other three had already gone quite far off.

"Wait for me!" Mo Lin immediately shouted and chased after them.

Zhi Ling region and Xia Feng region being neighbours had nothing more than a few hundred li of land between their capitals Zhi Ling city

and Xia Feng city respectively. This couldn't be counted as too far. However, the only problem was that the entire journey was comprised of passing through craggy mountain roads. Walking on these roads was extremely inconvenient. The current situation of Xia Feng being behind was also a result of this.

Xia Feng city; Northern exit. If one were to go in the direction of Zhi Ling region, then this was an avoidable location. Even if one were to travel in coach, he/she certainly would still have to cover some length by foot. Even after two hundred years of Xia Feng region constructing this road, it had not been completed yet. For completion of this road, perhaps, another hundred years would be required.

Therefore, although this road had always been in the middle of construction, before it could fully connect the two regions, not many people would be seen on it. Many people think that this incomplete road can only be considered as a dead end.

However, today was somewhat different. Lu Ping and the rest arrived at the Northern Exit. They were about to look for a coach, as they would have to walk later. However, they soon discovered that today was exceptionally lively. There were a lot of people, and also a lot of coaches.

Everywhere around them was permeated with feelings of entrustment. There was concern, hope, instructions and so on....

After looking left and right, the four of them quickly realized what was going on.

These are all Xia Feng's students; First grade students and the third grade students to be precise. Since their Soul's Towers had collapsed, they had no means of completing their assessment. At this moment, they were going to Bipolar institute in Zhi Ling region to complete their assessment under the arrangements of the institute.

Lu Ping is, without a doubt, the main culprit for such a spectacle. Unsurprisingly, he had caught the attention of many. However, since everyone had witnessed his strength, not a single one dared to go and express his/her dissatisfaction. All the eyes on Lu Ping were filled only

with the feeling of being wronged. This was completely different from their usual 'live high and look down' attitude towards students of Zhai Feng.

The 'main culprit' had an extremely calm expression as he walked about. Looking left, glancing right, then again looking left; It seemed like he was taking pleasure from the grievances of other people as he casually strolled.

This certainly caused many people to be dissatisfied. Although, there still wasn't a single individual who stood out from the rest and called out to Lu Ping, but there were many who had malicious glints flashing in their eyes. One can always curse within the heart, if not anything else.

And it ended up in Lu Ping suddenly stopping his footsteps at this moment.

The atmosphere of the entire Northern Exit tensed due to this action of his. Many gazes that were eying him up just a moment ago, instantly averted back one by one.

In return, Lu Ping appeared to be very excitedly stroking the horse in his front: "This is the one!"

All the people were thoroughly despaired. He had only been looking for a coach from the very start. Their expressions of being wronged, grief, or maliciousness; the guy simply never paid attention to any of them.

It had looked like Lu Ping was provoking them while they were either evading or tolerating his provocations.

However, as they discovered that Lu Ping had not been concerned with them at all from the very start; they instead found it difficult to endure.

Xia Feng region has only two institutes. And they had always been much ahead of Zhai Feng institute. They were but the heaven's proud sons of Xia Feng region. Their mentality had always been as such.

However, at this moment, heaven's proud sons were being ignored, and moreover, the guy who had ignored them actually had a horse in his eyes?

Often, youngsters would ignore the consequences and act straightforwardly. Thus, at this moment, there were some who were willing to create troubles for Lu Ping.

“I’m sorry. But, I’ve already hired this horse.” A youngster suddenly appeared in front of Lu Ping and said in a deep and gruff voice. He was merely an ordinary first grade student of Xia Feng, with an ordinary background. His strength was miles apart from second graders of Xia Feng, much less to speak of Lu Ping. However, at this moment, he was the first one to come forward. It had nothing to do with strength or background. It was just the result of being impulsive due to pride.

With right hand strictly holding the reins of the horse and vision directly upon Lu Ping, he was assuming a posture of never letting go.

Mo Lin, without batting an eyelid, moved closer and elbowed Lu Ping:

“Kill him.” Mo Lin said while pouting towards that youngster.

His voice wasn’t loud, but it wasn’t low either. At least, it was sufficiently loud for that youngster to hear.

Youngster’s legs immediately turned soft. However, he began to cling on to the rope even more desperately. This at least made sure that he didn’t immediately fall down.

However, the youngster’s father and mother who had come to send their son off were also able to hear Mo Lin’s words. They had naturally heard about yesterday’s affairs, and according to the smattering of knowledge they had as a part of common people, they had thought:

‘Collapsing the tower while taking the assessment? How ruthless is that?’

When they saw their son arguing with the guy who’d actually done that, they had already begun to lose their mind. And at this moment, as they saw Mo Lin moving closer and saying ‘kill him’, they immediately dashed forward to guard their beloved son. However, as they were just about to plead, they saw Lu Ping turning his head and giving Mo Lin a glance: “Do you have some illness?”

After saying these words to Mo Lin, Lu Ping somewhat regretfully stroked the horse and moved ahead while looking in all directions.

“Hey, this guy!” Mo Lin’s mood darkened. He turned his head and glanced at them. The entire family was stupefied, as if they didn’t know what to make out of this.

“I will kill your entire family.” Mo Lin gloomily said while pointing his finger towards the youngster.

After his impulse had passed away, the youngster had already realized the fear, and was already feeling regret for his actions. After hearing these words, would he still mind the horse? He firmly grabbed his parents beside him; he had truly almost collapsed down.

“Ouch!” While this cry echoed, Mo Lin’s body had already begun to tilt backwards.

“Are you *****?” Su Tang said as she grabbed Mo Lin by his collar. Then, she actually began dragging him backwards in this exact position.

Gulululu.....

Xi Fan, pulling his wheelchair, arrived in front of the family.

“Don’t mind him, he is an assassin. It was probably just his occupational illness.” Xi Fan said. Mo Lin’s inside information was no longer concealed. At least, all four of them knew it.

“Assa...Assassin?” Father of the youngster who had still been able to maintain a bit of calm till now, at this moment, suddenly had his face covered in a layer of grey cadaver colour resembling a corpse.

“Uh...” Xi Fan found out that his honest explanation didn’t cause the desired soothing result.

“You should hurry up and be on your way!” Thereupon, he said.

“Be....be on your way...” This time, the father was unable to support himself and sat down on the ground. Then, all three members of the family hugged each other and began to cry together.

“I.....I should leave first.” Xi Fan immediately pushed his wheelchair by

himself and left.

Chapter 37: Young City Master.

“Step aside! Clear the road!”

A loud shout suddenly echoed at the bustling Northern Exit. Amidst the noise, the shout had been transmitted to the ear of each and every person. This was clearly not due to the voice being loud. This was a control over voice realized through the employment of Sound's Soul.

Who is this?

People that had a bit of knowledge immediately realized that this shout is out of the ordinary. Very soon, in the middle of Northern Exit's road, a tri-horse coach pulled by three gallant horses could be seen approaching at a lighting fast speed. The carriage of this coach had much more space than that of single-horse ones. Such a big coach would naturally have some trouble moving on such a crowded road. The individual who was employing Sound's Soul to clear the way was merely the driver of this coach.

But no one was surprised because of this. Because everyone could clearly see that striking family-emblem on the carriage of the tri-horse coach.

Intertwined mountain peaks. This is a distinctive feature of the texture of Xia Feng Mountains. Wei family uses precisely this feature as their family emblem. One look at the crowd and it was clear how deep Wei family's influence runs in this region. Masses had formed a deep-rooted reverence of the Wei family. Very quickly, a wide path had been opened for the coach.

Who could have imagined that, at this moment, the speed of the coach would actually drop? Three horses, pulling the carriage, with heads high and with vigorous steps, slowly advanced through the very middle of the road. An individual made his way out of the carriage. It was precisely the City Master's only son; Wei Tianqi. Most of the people here were his fellow acquaintances from Xia Feng institute. Therefore, as soon as he'd spot one, he would strike a greeting along with loudly shouting the name

of his acquaintance as if unable to stop himself from doing so; He seemed to very much enjoying the eyes of everyone on him. However, this modest, unassuming, and easy to get close to appearance of his, had only been achieved after putting in extreme efforts.

On either side of the road, the student whose name had been called would try his hardest to correspond with his interests. As for what the former was cursing in his mind, only he knows.

Wei Tianqi was standing outside the carriage while assuming a high-spirited look. Suddenly, his expression changed. Amidst the crowd, he'd spotted the individual he hated the most over the last fifteen years.

Lu Ping!

Merely a day had passed since Wei Yang had seen Lu Ping for the first time. The words exchanged between them couldn't have exceeded five sentences. What happened between them was also merely shoving each other once. However, Lu Ping was yet his most hated individual within these entire fifteen years.

Because he is Wei Tianqi; City Master's only son. In the Xia Feng city, or Xia Feng region, never ever had been a person daring enough to offend him, not daring enough to even displease him.

From Wei Tianqi's perspective, causing him to hate is much harder than gaining his affection, because, there had never been a person who would do anything to displease him.

However, just yesterday, someone had eventually succeeded.

Zhai Feng's Lu Ping. A name which had never been heard before, during yesterday's Grand Assessment, actually shoved him away.

This was but an incident that had never occurred in past. Hence, it had pushed his hate towards Lu Ping to an unprecedented degree.

Although he knew that Lu Ping was very strong, at least, much stronger than him. However, he was not afraid at all. He was but the son of the City Master. He was very clear on the reason why no one had ever dared to displease him; was it because of the fear of his strength? Of course,

not. They feared his identity, his background, and the tremendous influence of Wei family in Xia Feng region.

Identity, background, and influence; When these things are put together, then only one can be called powerful. Just relying on the strength of a single individual, how powerful can one get?

Therefore, Lu Ping's strength was only in terms of realm. And him? So what if his realm was a bit a low, he had identity, background, and the support of the entire Wei clan. Therefore, in his eyes, he is far stronger than Lu Ping.

Therefore, he was not afraid, and neither did he need to be.

Wei Tianqi was telling himself such things. However, the problem was: Yesterday after being sent flying by Lu Ping, as the latter walked towards him in his perfectly straight posture, he had been afraid. He was truly afraid. At that moment, he'd felt that identity, background, or influence, nothing would be able to help him. This kind of state of extreme fear had caused his mind to be uneasy. This was not something one would be able to forget overnight.

And at present, he had once again seen Lu Ping. Being blended amongst the crowds, it seemed as if he wasn't any different than the rest of them.

"Stop!" Wei Tianqi said to the coachman beside him. The coach immediately halted.

Wei Tianqi jumped down and began to walk forward. People subconsciously opened up a path for him. Very soon, he reached behind Lu Ping and the rest.

Lu Ping was still selecting a horse.

"This horse is not bad." Lu Ping said pointing towards a horse which had a very miscellaneous coloured fur.

"It's a little ugly." Su Tang said.

"This is not important." Lu Ping said.

"Then how did you make out that this horse is not bad?" Mo Lin asked.

“Cough! Cough!” Wei Tianqi heavily coughed two times.

Lu Ping and Mo Lin turned their head and glanced at him. Immediately afterwards, they turned their head back and continued with their assessment of the horse.

Wei Tianqi stared blankly. He hadn't gotten angry yet; first, he had blanked.

Because he never believed that he could actually be ignored?

Fortunately, it didn't continue for long. Xi Fan, who had also turned his head before, had finally recognized him.

“Young City Master.” Xi Fan greeted him. At present, everyone addressed him as ‘Young City Master’. It will be until the day when his father Wei Zhong would no longer be present, and that word ‘Young’ would possibly be removed.

Someone had finally recognized him. This made Wei Tianqi feel a bit better. However, immediately afterwards, he heard the laugh of the guy in straw hat who had also failed to recognize him:

“Young City Master? Xi Fan, you still like giving names to animals, eh? But, what kind of stupid name is this?”

Everything completely stilled.

Mo Lin and Lu Ping, who were having a serious discussion about the horse, also suddenly felt something queer. After Su Tang made an eye signal, both of them once again turned their bodies around. Consequently, they saw a pair of bloodshot eyes, almost about to pop out.

“Uh.....” Mo Lin said in a stretched voice.

However, Lu Ping only nodded. After looking at Wei Tianqi for a short while, he said: “You want something?”

“You..... truly don't recognize me?” Wei Tianqi felt that the former was certainly pretending. However, Lu Ping's expression was very grave, grave up to the extent of causing him to waver over his determination.

“e....” Lu Ping was carefully thinking. Fortunately, Su Tang came closer

to him and softly hinted him in ear.

“Oh.” Lu Ping suddenly had a flash of realization.

“Road Blocker.” He said.

Wei Tianqi’s face immediately turned green. So it turns out that I am a road blocker?

“You want something?” Lu Ping again asked.

“What do you think?” Wei Tianqi firmly stared at Lu Ping.

Lu Ping thought a little. He finally realized:

“You’ve come to apologize? You need not take it to heart. Moreover, you didn’t even affect me much.” Lu Ping said.

“You....You...” Wei Tianqi was so angry that he was even unable to speak. Surrounding people also felt that Lu Ping is toying with Wei Tianqi. They wished to laugh but didn’t dare to do so.

“He He...” As it turned out, there was someone who laughed.

“Who!” As Wei Tianqi hear the laugh, he exploded in rage. However, when he turned and saw the individual, he completely blanked.

“Elder brother Ming!” Wei Tianqi shouted.

Wei Ming is merely one of the twelve family guardians. However, City Master’s only son had addressed him as ‘Elder Brother’. From this, one can easily imagine that his status in City Master Mansion was not that of a servant at all.

“Young City Master.” In return of Wei Tianqi’s ‘elder brother’, Wei Ming had instead replied with impeccable respect.

However, as his vision turned from Wei Tianqi to Lu Ping, his expression instantly transformed. His face had turned completely expressionless as if the individual in front of him wasn’t worthy of him wasting an expression.

“You think this horse is pretty good?” Wei Ming asked.

“Yes!” Lu Ping turned around stroked the horse once again. The horse

also seemed to be enjoying very much as it was shaking his head, taking the initiative to move its head under Lu Ping's hand.

"Yes, I see." Wei Ming said, and then suddenly raised his hand.

Mo Lin only felt a breeze pass by his body, and he involuntarily twitched his head.

It seemed as if the horse's skull was getting lower and lower under the hands of Lu Ping. It suddenly bulged downwards. The entire head of horse dropped down on the ground.

"However, it's dead." Wei Ming said.

Following it, Wei Ming raised his finger towards the already scared out of wits coachman. Coachman, as if recalling something by looking at this moment of Wei Ming, sat flat on the ground with hands over head.

"Go to the City Master Mansion. They will compensate you ten times for your horse." Wei Ming said without paying any attention to coachman's reaction.

Finally, he once again looked towards Wei Tianqi. Still as before, his expression was respectful without the slightest of flaws.

"Young City Master, let's go!"

"Huh?" After witnessing this scene, Wei Tianqi was also blanked. However, it only remained for a very short duration before he regained his spirit.

"Leave." He turned his body and started walking towards his three-horse coach. Wei Ming followed behind him.

After entering the carriage, Wei Tianqi couldn't help but glance there one more time. Lu Ping was still standing there with his hand raised, being completely stunned. On the other hand, after hearing Wei Ming's words of ten times more compensation, coachman had already regained his spirit and was already on the move in high spirits.

"Young City Master, sit tight. We will make haste ahead." The Coachman said to Wei Tianqi.

“Ok.” Wei Tianqi agreed and squeezed inside the carriage.

Horses raised their hoofs. Leaving behind a path of dust on the perfectly smooth road, the coach very quickly disappeared from everybody’s vision.

Chapter 38: Lu Ping's Approach.

The three-horse coach of City Master Mansion had left, but the Northern Entrance had lost all of its former liveliness.

The entire ground was dyed with blood. Lu Ping, being drenched, was also resembling a man of blood. The horse's head and body were powerlessly lying on the ground apart from each other. Very soon, having smelled the reek of blood, a flock of house flies quickly flew over.

"Who is this guy?" Mo Lin still had some lingering fears. He had merely felt a light wind blowing past him. It was hard to imagine that it had been this deadly. As one can imagine, Mo Lin could only feel a light wind only because the strike was too quick.

If this strike hadn't struck the horse, and had struck rather him, what would have happened then??

Mo Lin was a bit too afraid to think after that. It was clear that the other guy's realm was much higher than his.

"Wei Ming." Xi Fan started to talk: "One of the twelve family guardians. He has the reputation of being the number one brains at City Master's disposal. His realm is unclear."

As Xi Fan was speaking, he'd turned his head towards Lu Ping: "Are you alright?"

Lu Ping shook his head. However, his expression was the same as ever; very tranquil.

"I will go clean myself." While speaking, Lu Ping took off his blood-drenched upper garment, and casually tossed it down. It just so happened to cover the head of the horse. Then, he turned away and began to walk towards a small stream at the side of road.

The stream's water was very clean. However, it was quickly dyed red with horse blood as Lu Ping washed his face. Without saying a word, Su Tang came beside him, took out a handkerchief, soaked it, and began to help him clean places that he'd not yet washed.

Everyone had their eyes on Lu Ping. They saw him going towards the river, saw him as he cleaned himself, and also saw him returning with a naked upper body.

Everybody was waiting. Waiting for Lu Ping to have some sort of reaction.

However, there wasn't any. Lu Ping silently passed through the crowd. At the roadside, Xi Fan and Mo Lin had already hired a coach. The coach took off after Lu Ping had entered. It also disappeared soon after.

"You see! I already said that." The people left behind began their discussion.

"Those were from City Master's Mansion, and you still thought that youngster could have done something?" People were bragging about having predicted the conclusion beforehand.

"That day when he pushed Wei Tianqi, he was indeed very arrogant." Someone said.

"Didn't you see? That youngster at the beginning absolutely didn't recognize Wei Tianqi. But now, he knows."

"That's not true now, is it? When Xi Fan informed him that he is the only son of City Master, he wasn't afraid at all, and even continued to tease Wei Tianqi at the account of previous events."

"However, in the end, he was afraid nevertheless."

"Because of Wei Ming..." While speaking this name, people were subconsciously averting their heads, as if their conversation would be heard by Wei Ming. Clearly, Wei Ming's recent action of decisively chopping off horse's head had truly scared them.

Consequently, as this name had been mentioned, the discussion abruptly halted.

"It's getting late, hurry up and hit the road...."

"That's right. We have to cross a lot of mountain roads too."

"Go."

People immediately began to make preparations while also making jokes among each other. Coach after coach began galloping down the road.

The four individuals of Zhai Feng were sitting side by side inside the coach. Xi Fan's wheelchair was tied behind the carriage.

Almost half an hour had passed since the coach had set off, but up to now, no one had said anything. Mo Lin was carefully observing Lu Ping's expression, hoping to make something of it. However, he ended up with no gains. Xi Fan is more versed in guessing what someone is thinking through his/her body language, however, even he was unable to make out anything about what Lu Ping was thinking at this moment. Thereupon, he can only start talking by himself.

"That was getting down from horse." He said.¹

"Wasn't it more like killing the horse?" Seeing someone had finally talked, Mo Lin let out a sigh of relief. The recent silent half an hour had caused him to have an urge to jump out of the carriage.

Xi Fan refused to acknowledge his rubbish, and continued on: "City Master Mansion's way of dealing things has never been this tyrannical. However, this is not because they are compassionate enough to think twice before showing ruthlessness, but rather here in Xia Feng, no one is daring enough to disobey the Mansion, or should I say the Wei family. Therefore, they haven't been required to show their strength."

"However, since you are acting like this..."

"Yesterday, shoving Wei Tianqi, then again refusing City Master's invitation, and again putting Wei Tianqi in an embarrassing position; Killing the horse, is a warning for you."

"This time, it's horse; Next time, it will be you." Xi Fan said everything in one go.

However, in return, Lu Ping asked a question of unfathomable mystery: "If they kill me, what would be ten times the price then?"

"Hey, hey... isn't your focal point a bit wrong?" Mo Lin said.

“The focal point should have been me in the first place, not that horse.” Lu Ping said.

“Therefore, you think that what he did was senseless and unnecessary?”

“That’s right.” Lu Ping nodded.

“I suddenly feel a bit of sympathy for Wei Ming.” Xi Fan was speechless. Lu Ping’s way of looking at things was just too different from ordinary people. He is always very straightforward: Extremely straightforward.

This method of trying to intimidate Lu Ping by chopping off horse’s head, had turned senseless and unnecessary in the eyes of Lu Ping.

“Then, when you meet him next time, tell him about it. So that he could keep it in mind for the next time.” Xi Fan could also poke fun at people.

“I will.” However, looking at Lu Ping’s serious attitude, Xi Fan had to consider if his joke would actually create an unexpected incident. They must run into Wei Ming soon!

Xia Feng Entrance.

It is Xia Feng’s Entrance in the sense that here the road ends. After here, traversing through a coach is not possible. One can only depend on their own two legs to pass over mountain ridges. It had taken more than two hundred years to create a barely walkable mountain pathway. The Xi Feng Entrance is basically the entrance of the pathway.

City Master Mansion’s tri-horse coach was standing at one side of the pathway. After seeing the eye-grabbing family emblem, Lu Ping jumped down from the coach and immediately began to walk towards the City Master Mansion’s coach.

The coachman who was sitting in the front part of the coach also glanced at Lu Ping, and immediately jumped down. He was looking straight at Lu Ping, assuming a ‘couldn’t care less’ expression. Clearly, he didn’t hold any regard towards Lu Ping at all.

However, Lu Ping also didn’t look towards him either. After walking a few steps near, he raised his eyes and swept his gaze inside the carriage.

Following which, he immediately asked: “Wei Ming?”

“On the mountains.” Coachman casually answered.

“Oh.” Lu Ping turned around, and began to leave.

“Hey...” The coachman involuntarily called out.

Lu Ping turned around and gave him a glance: “Is there some matter?”

The coachman was at a loss. What matter could he have? Was it not supposed to be Lu Ping looking for trouble, and then end up being disciplined by him? It sure was according to the scenario laid out by Wei Ming.

Wei Ming had specifically instructed him to remain there for some time and wait for Lu Ping to show up, just to probe his attitude. If his attitude is well-behaved, then it is all right. If he comes to look for trouble, then these three gallant horses of the tri-horse coach are extremely well-equipped for tooth-to-tooth retaliation. If he come looking for trouble, then.....

“Discipline him strictly. Doesn’t matter, even if you kill him.”

These were the instructions of Wei Ming. And this coachman was also not just an ordinary coachman. He was also one of the twelve family guardians; Wei Meng. He was both a coachman and a guard at the same time. His realm was also out of ordinary; at least, enough to tidy up Lu Ping, in Wei Ming’s opinion.

Seeing Lu Ping come over, Wei Meng had already prepared himself for a big scene. However he didn’t expect that Lu Ping would ask about Wei Ming, and after learning that Wei Ming had already left, he would also leave on his own.

“Why are you looking for Wei Ming?” Seeing that Lu Ping had turned around, Wei Meng couldn’t help but ask.

“Apologize.” Lu Ping said.

“Oh.” Wei Meng smiled. This youngster is too shrewd. His attitude has transformed so quickly!

Chapter 39: Wilderness Camp.

Xia Feng mountains cannot be considered as too high, however, due to continuous up-downs, crossing these mountains in a short while is absolutely impossible. Regardless of what time one starts his journey, spending a night in the mountains is very hard to avoid. People crossing the mountains would usually operate in groups and mutually coordinate with each other. After all, the probability of the ferocious beasts inside the Mountain Forests hurting the travellers is definitely not low.

However, the students of Xia Feng didn't find it challenging at all. Although, their age was small, they were cultivators after all. As long as one had even a little bit of realm, dealing with the ferocious beasts would not be an issue. Students of the first grade might have some difficulties due to their relatively low realm, however, during this journey, they could rely on their companions. What ordinary people considered dangerous, was not even worth mentioning for the students of the institutes.

Students of Xia Feng didn't care about this problem even more so because the City Master Mansion's delegation had numerous experts.

A short while after the start of their journey, colour of the sky gradually began to darken. Choosing a spot to settle down and spending the night inside the mountains are matters that requires preparations beforehand.

Family Guardians of the City Master Mansion didn't forget to exercise caution even though a forest didn't pose much problems for them.

Wei Ming carefully surveyed the surrounding region and returned back to report to Wei Tianqi. Wei Tianqi subconsciously heard it. He wasn't paying much attention because he was very clear that Wei Ming reporting to him was only for the formalities; because he was their in-name Young City Master. His father Wei Zhong was an extremely efficient person. Although he was the son of the City Master, he'd not gone through many experiences. He was far too immature to take the charge by himself; naturally, him being the young city master couldn't compare to Wei Ming being efficient.

“These are the surrounding conditions.” Wei Ming concluded his report.

“En.” Wei Tianqi absent-mindedly replied. He was looking towards Wei Yang. Wei Yang, who had always been covered with smiles, couldn’t smile anymore even if he wanted to. He was wearing a fastened skeletal mask, looking awkward and ugly. Neither was he able to speak words, nor was he able to produce any expressions. The only thing revealed on his face was a pair of eyes, in which, the only emotion to ever flicker occasionally was resentment.

Wei Yang was fixing a tent and other things required for their group to spend the night. Wei Ming went over to lend a hand after he’d reported to Wei Tianqi. As for Wei Ying, Wei Tianqi only knew that he existed. From the very beginning, the guy never rode in the coach with them. After walking up the Mountain Road, Wei Tianqi did see his figure several times, but it was nothing more than a glimmer. Even now, he didn’t know where that guy has ran off to.

“I am going for a walk.” Wei Tianqi, feeling a bit bored, got up and thought about taking a stroll. All around him, students of Xia Feng were preparing to sleep. He was completely familiar with the third-grade students.

“I will accompany you.” Wei Ming immediately set down his work and went to Wei Tianqi.

“No need.” Wei Tianqi immediately said. When Wei Tianqi was near Wei Ming, he always felt as if he couldn’t even breathe. He wasn’t fond of this feeling in the least.

“It would be better to be a little careful. Although nothing in these mountains pose a threat to you, however, there are some people.....” Wei Ming insisted on coming along as he reminded him.

Wei Tianqi immediately realized what was Wei Ming referring to. He looked all around him. The four individuals of the Zhai Feng were nowhere to be seen. However, looking at Wei Yang’s wretched appearance, he eventually agreed.

Wei Ming left following Wei Tianqi. However, before leaving,

intentionally or unintentionally, he shot a glance in a certain direction.

Apologize?

Wei Ming faintly smiled.

The coachman Wei Meng was a Linked One of the Sound's Soul. He'd already informed Wei Ming about his encounter with Lu Ping at the Northern Entrance using his second grade ability: "Sound Transmission".

However, Wei Ming had no intention of accepting Lu Ping's apology. Is it possible that his mistake of offending City Master Mansion could be washed clean with a single apology?

Moron!

As Wei Ming was glancing towards that direction, his eyes were filled with disdain. He is clever person; what he hated the most were Morons. He had even lost his interest in taking action against Lu Ping. This kind of a moron could just be casually dealt with. He was not worthy of making he, Wei Ming, personally take action.

Sure enough, a moment after Wei Ming left together with Wei Tianqi, Lu Ping appeared in the direction Wei Ming had just looked. Su Tang was right beside him. Lu Ping quickly scanned his surroundings and spotted the eye-grabbing Wei family's emblem on the erected tent.

Wei Yang, who had been raising the tent from inside, also happened to stick his head out of the tent and spotted Lu Ping. Immediately, his vision turned blurred with deep resentment. His right hand, which was measuring the ground, fiercely penetrated the soil and mushed a small patch of grass up to its roots.

In the end, he didn't move. Because, he was very clear on the huge disparity between them at present.

But very soon.....

His eyes, which were unwaveringly staring at Lu Ping filled with hate, were suddenly full of longing.

Lu Ping, however, only gave him a slight glance, and then started to look

all around.

“Wei Ming?” Lu Ping asked.

Want to look for trouble? Wei Yang thought in his mind. He was actually very glad that Wei Ming had just recently left. Otherwise, Lu Ping would have been just casually dealt with by Wei Ming. If that happened, then who would he, Wei Yang, look for revenge?

He ignored Lu Ping. Lu Ping began to look on his own. The area was only so big; Lu Ping very soon discovered that Wei Ming was not in the vicinity.

“Where did he go?” Lu Ping asked.

Wei Yang casually pointed towards a direction. He didn’t mind playing few tricks on Lu Ping at all.

“Thank you.” Lu Ping said, and went towards the direction pointed by Wei Yang. Wei Yang truly didn’t think that Lu Ping would be this easy to trick. His only regret was that he was unable to laugh at this moment.

Lu Ping left and went along with Su Tang in the direction pointed by Wei Yang. Students of Xia Feng could be seen everywhere. They seemed mutually compatible as they walked about while joking and laughing among each other; walking amidst them, Lu Ping and Su Tang seemed somewhat odd. Everybody’s vision on them felt as if the former were looking at a ferocious beast.

The two individuals, while being subjected to such stares, made a full circle back in search of Wei Ming. However, they were unable to spot Wei Ming. Their stomach began to make noises.

“Let’s return first!” Su Tang said.

Lu Ping didn’t oppose. He wasn’t pressed for time.

Both of them returned to the camp they had prepared. It was right at the periphery. Clearly, they didn’t wish to get too close to the students of Xia Feng.

Upon returning, they spotted Xi Fan, who was seated in his wheelchair, roasting meat above a bonfire.

“Mo Lin?”

Xi Fan, who had an extremely concentrated expression, didn't bother to look up and pointed in a certain direction with just his head.

Lu Ping and Su Tang looked in that direction. They saw there was another bonfire. However, the people seated around it were the students of Xia Feng. Mo Lin had actually blended himself amongst them. He was laughingly talking with a group of students. After spotting Lu Ping and Su Tang, he made a greeting with the surrounding students. He stood up while fastening his straw hat and began to walk towards Lu Ping and Su Tang. Those Xia Feng students were actually somewhat reluctant to part with Mo Lin. As they watched him walking towards Lu Ping and Su Tang, their faces were covered with an expression of lament that said: Casting Pearls Before Swines.¹

“You also have this talent?!” Su Tang couldn't help but exclaim in praise.

“Being able to blend anytime, anywhere, and within any group of people, is an essential trait...” While speaking, Mo Lin pointed towards himself and continued: “...for an assassin.” After saying these words, he raised the chicken, which he had brought all the way back from the other side, and blew on it.

“You guys eat. I'm more or less full.” Mo Lin said while pointing towards the roasted meat over the rack. His meaning was he didn't require that meat. He had already eaten his fill over there.

The other three also weren't courteous with him as they sat down encircling the bonfire and divided the meat into three parts.

Mo Lin, with both of his hands and mouth covered in grease, casually asked while munching on his chicken piece: “What about Wei Ming? Is he dead?”

“I don't think so.” Lu Ping said.

“Why are you uncertain?” Mo Lin was puzzled.

“Because I didn't see him.” Lu Ping said.

“You are pretty careful.” Mo Lin praised. Since he hasn’t seen, he didn’t rashly commented on the life and death of a guy, even if that guy is Wei Ming; This type of attitude.....

“I think you have the potential to become an assassin!” Mo Lin said.

“In order to convince you to kill Wei Ming, how much would money would be required?” Su Tang asked.

“Why the hell would you ask this question?!” Mo Lin immediately went on high alert.

“Just Curious!” Su Tang said.

“Oh.” Mo Lin let out a sigh of relief. Then, after a bit of consideration he said: “I won’t accept money, instead just directly die in front of you.”

The rest three laughed.

“Acting without knowing opponent’s strength? It would be better to just die straightaway!” Mo Lin said.

“Can you make out Wei Ming’s realm?” Xi Fan asked Lu Ping. He wasn’t able to determine Wei Ming’s realm. However, Lu Ping was much stronger than the rest of them.

However, in return, Lu Ping shook his head.

“In my present condition, I am somewhat lacking with respect to perception.” Lu Ping said.

“Then, in which respect are you strong?” Mo Lin said.

“Explosive power.” Lu Ping said.

As Mo Lin recalled the two collapsed Soul’s Towers, he nodded and said: “I trust you.”

Chapter 40: Night Watch

As the night deepened, the Mountain Forest regained its former tranquility. Students were soundly asleep inside their tents. The only sounds that could be heard were a few occasional hooting of nightingales perched atop trees.

Over the side of Xia Feng, some students had to be on the night watch according to the arrangements. Although the forest didn't have anything that could pose a threat to them, however, having someone to warn beforehand would allow the rest of students to sleep better.

However, since the night watch didn't seem too necessary, the students who had to stand guard were not particularly serious; they quickly found locations to sneakily doze off. However, there are always some people who are serious by nature and take the responsibility upon themselves.

"Hey, hey. Stand up, watch for a moment. I am going to toilet for a bit." Qin Yuan was kicking his companion who was lying down under a tree.

"You want to go again!?" His companion was not in a good mood after his sweet dreams were disturbed. Since this was already happening for the fourth time, he was particularly irritated.

"I can't do anything about it. I drank a bit too much of malt wine in the evening." Qin Yuan said while stroking his belly.

Malt wine primarily uses big wheat buds as its raw material. One can't get drunk by consuming it. Although Qin Yuan had drunk a lot of wine, he wasn't intoxicated. However, his stomach was at the point of bursting out, which was causing him to repeatedly run for toilet after a short interval of time.

"Just go!" His companion got up and sat against the tree. His eyes were still half opened as he urged Qin Yuan to hurry up. In the end, he also didn't complain much either. Qin Yuan had been seriously standing guard, while he had been sleeping. Qin Yuan didn't urge him to do anything and had just merely awakened him occasionally. What could he say?

“You, keep watch!” Qin Yuan, however, was still urging him.

“I know....sigh. Just hurry up!” He reluctantly opened his eyes and watched Qin Yuan leaving. He was truly planning on keeping watch. However, just three seconds later, his eyelids once again heavily dropped down. He was unable to open his eyes anymore.

Qin Yuan walked towards the region he'd been coming during this entire night to relieve himself. He was looking all around him as he walked; Not a single one of his companions who were supposed to stand guard were in sight.

Qin Yuan felt somewhat helpless, but he didn't entertain the thought of waking everybody up either.

‘It's not like there is some danger involved, I, by myself, would be sufficient’.

His thinking was as such. Qin Yuan possessed third Heavenly Layer Infusion's soul and fifth Heavenly Layer Sound's Soul. This was very apt for the night watch. On top of that, he was also a member of Xia Feng institute's Defense Squadron; he was duty-bound for this kind of affair.

After arriving at his familiar place, he delightedly let go while vigilantly looking all around at the same time. However, he never expected that without him being able to feel anything, he would suddenly feel an icy chillness pressing down his throat. Before he could react, a big hand tightly covered his mouth.

“If you want to live, then be good.” A voice lightly sounded near his ear. Immediately afterwards, Qin Yuan felt that ice cold object scratching his neck, followed by a sharp pain. Qin Yuan's face immediately lost all of its colour due to fear, and he nodded at once. Following which, two men, who were dressed in black, appeared in his front; one from his left-back and the other from his right-back. The huge hand, which had been covering his mouth, was also gradually pulled back.

“We haven't come for you. So cooperate a little; it will be good for everyone.” The left guy in his front started to talk in soft voice.

Qin Yuan's right hand immediately covered his recently scratched neck. He didn't dare to speak, and just nodded his head.

Thereupon, they also got straight to the point and asked: "Where is Wei Tianqi?"

Qin Yuan suddenly realized; As expected, the only son of the City Master is truly a heavy target. However, he was also very clear that he was meant to help the other side. If City Master learned this fact after the event, that certainly wouldn't produce anything good for him.

"You have one minute to lead us. If we find there is even a little bit of trick involved...." Ice cold dagger was once again placed upon his neck, and without the slightest hesitation, it inflicted another blood opening on his neck. As the other side saw Qin Yuan being a little hesitant, they suddenly increased their intimidation by one step.

Qin Yuan had no other choice but to lead the way for the three men.

Deliberately delay so that someone else could discover?

Look for an opportunity to give off some hints?

It wasn't that such thoughts didn't cross Qin Yuan's minds; However, the other side had much deeper foresight. The time limit was set such that there would be no opportunity for any tricks. With strict monitoring on top of it, Qin Yuan had to give up on all such ideas.

He was very regretful: Why didn't he have some principles? Why didn't he insist on waking up all the other students who were supposed to be on the night watch. If even a single one of them hadn't run off to sleep, then the situation probably wouldn't have turned out like this.

Qin Yuan despaired very soon. Even the companion whom he'd woken up just before leaving was nowhere to be seen at this moment. Clearly, he'd fallen asleep as soon as Qin Yuan left.

One minute. Without delaying, without dropping off any hints, Qin Yuan lead them to the location where Wei Tianqi's group was residing. The Wei family's emblem was eye-grabbing even in the darkness of the night. Moreover, all of these individuals had realms in the Infusion's Soul.

For such individuals, the darkness of night didn't hinder the line of sight at all. Qin Yuan wasn't required to point towards Wei Tianqi's tent; The three individuals had already exchanged a glance with each other.

One individual continued to restrain Qin Yuan while the other two moved forward at a lightning fast speed. Wei Tianqi possessed sixth Heavenly Layer Qi's Soul, but this fact was clearly disregarded by these two individuals.

However.....something's queer.

Qin Yuan was unwaveringly staring at the apex of the tent. The emblem was indeed that of Wei family, however, the tent wasn't of Wei Tianqi at all! Qin Yuan could only recognize this because this tent was his family's! The person sleeping inside the tent must be his younger brother Qin Zhen! A third grade student at Xia Feng institute like him. Though, Wei family didn't mind mingling in the tents of other students, but why Wei family's emblem had also made its way upon the tent of his younger brother?

Qin Yuan faintly realized something. However, at this moment, he couldn't dwell on this. He wasn't clear on the objective of the intruders; whether it was to abduct or assassinate. If it happened to be assassinate, then the one lying inside the tent is but his own brother!

His concern over the safety of his younger brother exceeded everything all. Without any thoughts regarding his own safety, he daringly cried out: "It's wrong!"

Puff!

Equally daringly, blood also bubbled out from his throat along with his shout. The other side didn't lie. As soon as they felt he'd some other plans, they ruthlessly acted against him. However, the two words had already been spoken out loud. After a moment, the other side also realized that this was apparently a useful information for them. Within an instant the knife was pulled back. Although the cut was deep, but it had yet to be deep enough to threaten Qin Yuan's life.

The individual holding the knife was about to ask the reason, however,

without him being able to hear a single sound, he suddenly felt a chillness piercing his neck from behind. His eyes moved downwards and saw a portion of blade sticking out from his throat. He had threatened people in this way countless times, but he had never seen the point of blade sticking out from this point of view.

He opened his mouth, wishing to say something, however, no sound came out. The only thing that came out was a mouthful of blood. His one hand was still firmly holding Qin Yuan, but his body slowly began to move downwards.

Both Qin Yuan and the black-clothed guy fell together. Qin Yuan was covering his throat; he didn't know how serious his injury was, and was even more unclear on what had occurred behind his body. As soon as he turned, he saw that the black-clothed man was lying next to him, with eyes wide opened. There was a hole in his neck, from which, blood was still slowly flowing out.

Beside their bodies, a shadow flashed past and charged straight ahead to kill the other two black-clothed masked intruders.

Chapter 41: It Would Be Better To Straight Up Die

Indescribably quick!

Qin Yuan was collapsed on the ground. He was unable to speak or move; as if he'd lost all of his strength along with his lost blood. He felt himself on the verge of death. However, even in such dire conditions, he was somehow astonished. Even though his life was endangered, he was in shock; because the shadow was truly too quick.

He merely saw a flash and the shadow had drifted past him. The shadow seemed like the dark night; being anywhere and everywhere in the darkness.

In the blink of an eye, the shadow arrived behind the other two masked men. They hadn't even completely turned yet.

Everything had happened so quickly that by the time Qin Yuan and the black-clothed man had collapsed, the shadow was already behind the other two masked men.

As soon as they turned their necks, they were greeted with a flash streaking across the darkness of night.

In addition to being quick, the shadow was decisive, precise, and its every movement seemed precisely calculated beforehand. Neither was anything superfluous nor deficient; everything had been accomplished with perfection.

Along with the flash, blood sprayed in the air, and one of the two black-clothed men collapsed before even being able to completely turning his body.

Efficiency.

The word valued the most by the City Master Mansion is 'Efficiency'. No matter what they do, they always emphasize the 'efficiency' heavily. This, of course, includes killing as well.

Within an instant, among the three black-clothed individuals, only one remained alive. And that was only because the City Master Mansion required him to be alive. If not, he would have also suffered a similar fate. It wasn't difficult for the shadow to take care of him with another strike.

The shadow finally stopped its movements after all of this. He was wearing black attire as well and had his face covered. He was standing still, extremely still; as if the night itself.

Although everything happened extremely quickly, no one made any sound except for Qin Yuan shouting that 'wrong' word. No one else was disturbed. Everything was quiet except for a few occasional hoots of nightingale birds, just as before.

The last black-clothed man suddenly found himself surrounded. Two more individuals appeared from nowhere and blocked his right and left paths.

Wei Ming and Wei Yang; The black individual recognized these two. They matched with the intelligence he'd received. However, the third guy, who was also dressed in black like him, was not mentioned in the intelligence at all. This one link, which was completely out of expectations, caused the complete destruction of their plan. They didn't even have time to speculate on what was going on. Two strikes and two dead bodies; the efficiency of killing was truly frightening.

"You....are....Wei Ying..." Black-clothed individual's voice was coarse. Their intelligence on the City Master Mansion was extremely detailed. They even knew Wei Ying, about whom even Xia Feng institute's Dean, Baliyan, had never heard. The only thing they didn't know was that the former would also be here.

This lack of knowledge was undoubtedly fatal. Wei Ying had absolutely no interest in entertaining his doubts.

Gulululu.....

At this point, a somewhat weird sound echoed. It seemed as if something was bumping against the ground; however, the weird part was that the sound seemed to be getting closer at a very fast rate.

A group of four individuals appeared soon after; three males and one female. Among these, one was sitting in a wheelchair. The sounds just now were produced due to the wheelchair.

The group had not approached too close yet. Very soon, they stopped and looked towards the tent. The guy with a straw hat pointed towards them and said: "See, this is precisely what I said when we were eating. Rashly acting without properly knowing opponent's strength? Straight up dying would be better than that."

The black-clothed individual had an extremely miserable expression; this straw hat guy's words were extremely true. Their today's fail was due to not being completely aware of the opponent's strength.

'Straight up dying would be better', this was a pretty good suggestion. However, did he really have no other choice but to take this step? He certainly didn't come here with the determination to die. If even a trace of a chance at life exists, he was willing to strive once again.

Just at this moment, a few noises could be heard coming from the tent behind.

The black-clothed man quickly saw his opportunity; he turned his body around, stepped forward, and reached out with his hand. This instant, he was equally efficient, as City Master Mansion's Wei Ying was a moment ago. Qin Zhen, who was still drowsy, didn't even have the time to ask what was going on before he was taken as a hostage.

"Wu.....Wu...." Qin Yuan was struggling on the ground. Due to his windpipe being wounded, he couldn't speak no matter how he tried. Blood was continuously flowing out from the opening between his fingers that were covering the wound on his neck. His eyes were filled with hate and desperation.

Just now, the black-clothed man had been surrounded. Wei Ying, Wei Ming, and Wei Yang, the three experts of the City Master Mansion had cut off all of his escape routes and had been keeping a close eye on his every movement. However, when the black-clothed man rushed to take Qin Zhen as a hostage, they didn't even budge from their positions.

Every single one of them had the opportunity and the ability to obstruct the black-clothed man. However, none of them did anything; they only watched as the black clothed man took Qin Zhen as a hostage.

Because they knew that the person inside the tent is not their young master Wei Tianqi. The emblem of Wei family appeared on the tent, because, they had deliberately done so.

When they decided to substitute Qin Zhen for Wei Tianqi, the former's life was possibly being subjected to danger; but they didn't even bother to make a sound about it beforehand. When Qin Zhen was subjected to danger, they had the opportunity to intervene, but they didn't even try to move from their positions.

Since they didn't intervene, they naturally won't have any concern for Qin Zhen's safety now. And because Qin Yuan was extremely clear on this point, he was feeling anger and despair. Yet he couldn't do anything, not even say something about it. He could only powerlessly struggle on the ground.

"No one moves!" Although the black-clothed man knew that the hostage was in no way Wei Tianqi, it ought to be a bargaining chip at least. This gave him some hope for survival.

"Moron." Wei Ming said with a disgusted face. This guy thinks he could hold some random guy as a hostage and make the City Master Mansion listen to his arrangements? This kind of thinking, in Wei Ming's opinion, is utterly moronic; so moronic that it disgusted him.

Completely ignoring the black-clothed man, he began to stride forward.

"I said, no one moves!" The black-clothed man once again shouted loudly. The dagger in his hand, which was pressed against Qin Zhen, sliced the latter's skin. The black-clothed man himself was also a very decisive man.

Wei Ming coldly laughed; He didn't even feel like talking to such a man. He continued on without the slightest of hesitation.

Qin Yuan was desperately looking all around. Then he saw Lu Ping and

the rest. At this moment, he couldn't bother about the identities of them; they were his sole hope as of now. Unable to speak, he could only plead them with his eyes.

"He wants us to help the guy." Xi Fan was indeed an expert in reading all kinds of expression.

"Guys of the City Master Mansion don't care about the hostage at all." Mo Lin said.

Thereupon Lu Ping moved forward.

"Hey..." Mo Lin shouted. For Lu Ping to move forward so rashly, was no better than what the individuals of the City Master Mansion were doing. The desperation in the eyes of Qin Yuan intensified even more.

"Stop!" The black-clothed man was desperately shouting. His eyes also had an expression of desperation; because, he'd discovered that the hostage under him didn't hold the least bit of importance. Without any better options, he waved his dagger to kill Qin Zhen. However, the movement he made with his dagger was too big. Because he still hadn't given up. He'd subconsciously made a bigger movement so as to provide space for the other side. He was hoping that the other side would call him to stop at this point.

Xi Fan didn't miss any of his expressions. He immediately recognized his thoughts.

"Wait for a moment!" Xi Fan immediately shouted.

For the black-clothed man, this shout seemed to be sent from the heavens. In the end, he'd won.....

However, he suddenly discovered that this shout was a complete fake; because the very next moment a fist rushed at him.

Bang!

The fist was very quick and very heavy.

He was thinking about getting rid of the hostage in his final moments, but found himself already flying away from his hostage.

Wei Ming?

No, it wasn't Wei Ming. Wei Ming was still walking towards him. Wei Ming also intended to act. Of course, not for the sake of Qin Yuan; he was just doing what he'd originally intended. However, in the end, the fist turned out to be extremely quick; the black-clothed man had no chance to guard against it. He felt that even if Xi Fan hadn't yelled, this fist would have been sufficiently quick to obstruct him from killing Qin Yuan.

Who was it?

He turned his head and was once again astonished when he saw Lu Ping. 'Just a moment ago, this youngster was so far off, and yet his fist has struck me the very next moment? In the end, how many experts has the City Master Mansion brought along ? Who is this guy? I don't have a single clue.....'

However, this fist was truly heavy. He felt as if his entire body was exploding apart. He heavily fell upon the ground without a single ounce of strength left in his body.

He saw Wei Ming increasing his speed he as approached the former. He was very clear on what awaited him next. He recalled the previous words of the guy in the straw hat.

'Straight up dying would be better.'

Dying would truly be better than getting captured alive by the City Master Mansion; directly dying would actually be a blessing.

However, he suddenly discovered that he was even unable to take his own life, because, he couldn't lift his hands. A single fist of Lu Ping was so heavy that he wasn't even able to kill himself.

As expected of the City Master Mansion; a fine method indeed.....

He gave up all hope. However, as if making one final attempt in his desperation, he looked towards the youngster in front of him and pleaded:

"Kill me." He said.

"All right." Lu Ping happily accepted his request and reached out with

his hand to choke his throat.

The black-clothed man never expected that Lu Ping would respect his request. Isn't this blessing too abrupt?

"Thank You..." He happily said from the bottom of his heart.

"No need." Lu Ping said as he applied strength through his fingers and snapped his throat.

"What are you doing? Who allowed you to kill him?!!!" As Wei Ming saw Lu Ping applying strength through his fingers, he suddenly lost all of his previous elegance and advanced to stop Lu Ping while furiously shouting. However, by the time he arrived, the man had already taken his last breath.

"He." Lu Ping, however, replied Wei Ming's question by pointing towards the corpse.

"Lu Ping. Come over here." Su Tang's voice came from the other side. Lu Ping immediately ignored Wei Ming and left hurriedly.

"What do you understand! idiot; moron. Who asked you to interfere? Who gave you the authority?" Wei Ming was still angrily cursing. His anger was naturally justified. This was his meticulously arranged plan to make the snake come out of its hole. He was originally expecting to catch a guy alive and then follow the vine to find the melon. However, he didn't expect that his plan would be slashed apart by Lu Ping, and his final captive would be killed.

"I will deal with you later!" Wei Ming fiercely glared at Lu Ping's retreating figure once, but then quickly resumed his original cool. Although the guy was dead, who said they couldn't dig out any clues out of the corpse. He still had to take care of an urgent matter; he didn't have the time to bicker with Lu Ping at this moment.

"You two, protect the Young City Master." After reminding Wei Ying and Wei Yang, his figure immediately disappeared into the darkness of night.

Chapter 42: I Helped You

Many students began to wake up at this point. They were completely stupefied as they saw the two corpses.

“What happened?” They began asking around.

At this moment, Qin Zhen was collapsed on the ground. He hadn't been subjected to any injury, just some intimidation. Although he was a Perceiver, until now, he'd only been cultivating inside of the institute without any worries. Even though he wasn't clear on what future awaited him, this time's encounter of brushing against death was too abrupt for him. The moment the black-clothed man was punched by Lu Ping, his legs gave away and he collapsed on the ground.

However, soon afterwards, he spotted his elder brother collapsed nearby. Although the latter's eyes were filled with a gratified expression, he was clearly suffering.

“Elder brother!” Qin Zhen's body was still shuddering, but even he himself didn't know where he had obtained the strength from as he rushed towards his brother rolling and crawling on the ground. As he got closer, he became even more frightened. Qin Yuan was completely immersed in a pool of blood; his face resembled white paper and his lips were constantly shuddering. It looked like he wanted to say something but was unable to produce any sounds.

“You don't need to worry.” From the side, Xi Fan conveyed Qin Yuan's thoughts by looking at his lips and expressions.

“Since when can you interpret like this as well?” Su Tang said to Xi Fan.

“Ah.....This is my speciality....” Xi Fan said.

“Don't worry! He won't die!” Mo Lin was crouched beside Qin Yuan. In his right hand was a corn he'd taken out of nowhere. While chewing on it, he pulled Qin Yuan's right hand away from his neck with the other hand and checked the latter's wound.

“Lots of rest and lots of water, and he will be fine, right?” Su Tang asked.

Clearly, after the incident of Su Tang's injury last time, no one believed in these words of Mo Lin anymore: 'One who can poison can also heal.'

"I think drinking water won't do, no? It would leak out from this wound!" Mo Lin said.

"Can you be a bit serious?" Su Tang said.

"Which part of me doesn't look serious to you?" Mo Lin said.

"What are you holding in your right hand?" Su Tang asked.

"Corn? Do you want to eat it? Then just take it." Mo Lin, as if being impatient, passed the corn towards Su Tang. Su Tang, deciding to ignore him, looked towards Lu Ping who had just arrived. Although Lu Ping also didn't know anything about medicine, his random words would still make her feel a hundred times better than relying on Mo Lin.

"You guys have anyone who knows about medicine over your side?" Lu Ping asked Qin Zhen.

"Hey hey...." Mo Lin felt deeply hurt. Everyone is so distrusting towards him; he'd just made a mistake once, no?

"N....no we haven't.." Qin Zhen was extremely panicked. He took a while before answering Lu Ping's question.

Soul's Power was not for the battle purposes only. However, in order to differentiate occupations according to the Soul's Power, the minimal requirement was the realm of Linking Of Souls. Linked Ones chose the occupation that corresponded best to the ability they trained in, or they chose the occupation and then bitterly trained in the ability that was required for that occupation. However, all the students of Xia Feng were in the realm of Perceiving of Souls. This phase for them was akin to learning the basics. Hence, it was unlikely for the students to possess abilities related to the medical field. However, the students who were predetermined to pursue this field might have some relevant knowledge.

"I will go and ask Lu Qing." Qin Zhen, who had already denied a moment ago, suddenly sprang to his feet and sprinted away to look for the guy.

More and more students were waking up. The nights in the mountain forests were tranquil, but this wasn't the case at this moment. Students were discussing the incident in groups of three or five, though no one dared to approach the corpses. Even though some students did dare to advance, they were immediately stopped by a strict gaze from either Wei Yang or Wei Ying. After carefully inspecting the three corpses for any possible clues, the two of them were giving a meticulous report to Wei Tianqi who had finally come out.

Wei Tianqi was absent-mindedly hearing them speak, as he did during Wei Ming's report. Most of the time, his gaze was fixed on the seriously injured Qin Yuan. After hearing the report, he didn't comment anything either. Because he knew, the only power he possessed was that of being aware of the situation.

"What happened to Qin Yuan?" He asked. The report surprisingly didn't include a single word about the guy who had been seriously injured as a result of all this.

"He led the assassins, and moreover, after looking at our arrangements, he even tried to warn the assassins." Wei Ying said.

"Our arrangements, huh?" Wei Tianqi looked towards the emblem that originally should have been upon his tent. He wasn't aware of these arrangements at all, but he knew Wei Ming certainly would have a very good justification as to why he hadn't been informed. And as before, he wasn't fond of this feeling in the least.

However, the only thing he was displeased with was this feeling, nothing more. He didn't find anything inappropriate with these arrangements at all. He was the successor of the City Master's position; his safety obviously exceeded everything else.

"So?" He continued to ask.

"The possibility of him being a spy cannot be ruled out."

"Don't you guys know that this tent actually turned out to be the tent of his younger brother by chance? The reason why he warned the assassins is obvious, no?" Wei Tianqi said.

“That may be so, but the possibility still can’t be ruled out.” Wei Ying said.

“That’s true. In that case, what did Wei Ming tell you to do?” Wei Tianqi asked.

“Closely monitor his actions.” Wei Ying said.

“Very good. I am going to monitor him a bit.” Wei Tianqi said and began to walk towards Qin Yuan. Wei Ying and Wei Yang exchanged a glance and didn’t stop him, though, they did follow closely behind him. For them, the safety of the Young City Master came before anything else.

Many students had been gathered around Qin Yuan; as they saw Wei Tianqi coming towards them, they immediately moved aside.

Qin Yuan looked at Wei Tianqi; he didn’t bother to conceal the hatred in his eyes at all. Even though his younger brother was finally safe, but this could not change the fact that this guy had completely disregarded the safety of their younger brothers and sisters. Qin Yuan felt that he was definitely going to die in a few moments; at present, he wasn’t afraid of anything.

“Everybody move!” At this moment, Qin Zhen’s voice sounded from outside the group surrounding Qin Yuan. Eventually, he was successful in finding Lu Qing and bringing him back. Lu Qing was an extremely ordinary student of Xia Feng institute’s third grade. He didn’t have any special achievements with respect to Soul’s Power, however, he was a son of a doctor, and moreover, he was also determined to carry his father’s legacy. Therefore, he was relatively knowledgeable in the medical field.

However, as they came out of the crowd, they saw Wei Tianqi standing in front of Qin Yuan and calmly speaking:

“I will not blame you.” This was the first line that came out of Wei Tianqi’s mouth. Afterwards, as Wei Tianqi saw Qin Zhen coming out of the crowd, he pointed towards him and continued:

“After all, he is your younger brother. Your mentality of not wanting any harm coming his way; I can totally understand.” Wei Tian continued.

“However, did you lead the way for these assassins?”

“Because your life was in danger, you decided to betray others without any hesitation?”

“It’s still not that bad since I have special protection; however, what if some other fellow student was in my place? Wouldn’t he have died already at your hands?”

“That is true....” Some people amongst the crowd, under some unfathomable thoughts, actually made sounds of agreement.

“If it had been us, we truly would have been killed by now, right?”

“Qin Yuan truly is...”

Apparently, some people were deeply aggrieved; not because of his injuries, but because of his actions.

And the rest of the students, who didn’t share these views, did not dare to say anything and persevered silently.

However, Qin Zhen couldn’t endure anymore. The person collapsed on the ground was his elder brother of flesh and blood. The latter was on the verge of death and yet had to face such comments of other people?

City Master’s son? Influence of the Wei family? Completely disregarding such things, Qin Zhen was about to rush forward.

However, someone’s movements were much quicker than him.

A fist!

Bringing along an extremely intense air turbulence and a whistling sound, a fist was aimed straight at Wei Tianqi’s face.

“Ah!”

Wei Tianqi was only able to produce a frightened shriek. He’d never expected that someone would actually try to hit him. He thought about dodging, but in his flustered state, he was unable to move his legs.

Fortunately, a shadow timely covered his front. Wei Ying’s movements were always very quick and very precise.

Bang!

This was the explosion due to the punch. As Wei Ying was stopping this fist, his figure fiercely shuddered. He hurriedly took a step back and stabilized his figure. Behind his body, Wei Tianqi only felt a strong current of wind grazing past his cheek, immediately followed by a sharp pain. He moved his hand to check and surprisingly found that his face was covered with blood stains. Just the wind of this punch had actually scratched his face.

Lu Ping?

In his opinion, apart from Lu Ping, it was impossible to think of a second person who would dare to hit him. However, after his vision made its way past Wei Ying's body, what he saw was a girl with a furious face.

Su Tang!

The one who had swung this fist was Su Tang!

Wei Tianqi was astonished, so was Wei Ying. Apparently this girl had Strength's Soul sixth heavenly Layer; she was just a Perceiver so how could her fist be this powerful? The right hand he'd used to resist her fist, and afterwards, the right leg he'd used as a support to stabilize his body, both were somewhat numb.

Su Tang withdrew her fist, and her expression was also much more tranquil than before.

"I am helping you!" She said to Wei Tianqi behind Wei Ying's body:

"If he'd acted instead of me, you would have already been dead."

The 'he' she was referring to was obviously not Qin Zhen. Behind Su Tang's body, Lu Ping was also very eager for his turn!

Chapter 43: Frightened Once Again

Wei Tianqi was extremely furious; not only because his face had been wounded, but even more so because he'd been afraid once again.

What would have happened if the previous strike had struck him instead of being blocked by Wei Ying?

Although this didn't actually occur, but he couldn't help himself from having this line of thought. And the more he thought, the more his heart trembled and the more fear he felt. Two days ago, he'd felt this kind of feeling for the very first time, and now he was going through the same feeling once again.

He hated the feeling of fear and vulnerability. He wished he could eliminate the anxiety within him.

Kill!

Kill Kill Kill!

An insane killing intent rushed forth in Wei Tianqi; as if only killing would dissolve the fear in his heart.

However, he was the City Master's son; matters such as killing couldn't be accomplished just by relying on influence. It also required a valid reason.

And under current state, was directly killing Lu Ping and Su Tang justified?

Clearly not. In front of so many students, he couldn't kill them without justification even though he had the ability to do so.

In this case, he could only discipline them slightly, and allow them to feel fear and anxiety. This would also more or less alleviate the anxiety in his heart.

Just to discipline them, Wei Tianqi didn't think he needed to give any instructions; the other side actually dared to wave a fist towards him, Wei Ying would certainly discipline them on his own. However, he never

expected that Wei Ying, after turning his body towards him, would say these three words:

“We are leaving.”

“Leaving?” Wei Tianqi thought that he’d misheard. The other side had actually waved a fist towards him, although it had been blocked, it still injured him, and on top of this, they even said: ‘If it was Lu Ping, you would have already died.’ This should be considered as a threat, no? An absolute threat, no?

However, at present, Wei Ying was actually saying that they were going to leave?

“You...” Wei Tianqi had barely said a word when Wei Yang approached and pulled him lightly. Although he wasn’t able to speak, his expression was sufficient hint for Wei Tianqi.

Wei Tianqi suddenly realized.

Wei Yang’s face had been squeezed by Lu Ping. Although Wei Ying can’t be compared to Wei Yang, after blocking that fist, it seemed like he’d perceived something.

They could only leave, because Wei Ying and Wei Yang felt that they didn’t have the upper hand in terms of strength in the least.

Could they do anything when they didn’t have the upper hand in the strength?

For most people, just the influence of the City Master Mansion was enough to intimidate them, however, most people evidently didn’t include the two individuals that were front of him. These two had even dared to openly hit him while being fully aware of his identity as the Young City Master, so would they care about any other person backed by the City Master Mansion?

As Wei Tianqi thought up to here, he even began to suspect that Lu Ping and Su Tang might have some background of their own. Otherwise, how could they dare to treat him like this?

However, regardless of all these things, at this moment, he could only listen to his two guardians and obediently leave.

All the students of the Xia Feng were completely stunned.

They hadn't expected that someone would actually dare to hit Wei Tianqi, even though such a thing had already occurred once before.

And the thing that astonished them even more was that after being injured due to this hit, Wei Tianqi didn't burst out in anger, on the contrary, he actually left quietly along with the two Guardians of the Wei family.

Stating that they'd been his fellow companions for three years would not be a lie; even though he had an aloof and remote status, having some interactions with the other students of the same institute was unavoidable. They knew Wei Tianqi; with his status and background, anything that didn't please him would be immediately removed from his vision on the spot. However, this time, he had silently left. What's the reason?

Because he was hiding; he was afraid.

'In the end, how powerful are these few individuals of Zhai Feng?'

Daring to be fearless in front of City Master Mansion's background and making the two Family Guardians to retreat through intimidation, do these individuals have even more frightening identities and background?

The Mountain Forest had become completely silent once again. All of a sudden, the only remaining sounds were the cries of nightingales.

Qin Zhen, who had regained his spirit first due to his concern for his elder brother, promptly urged Lu Qing out of his stupor and asked him to take a look at his brother's injury, while also glancing towards Lu Ping and Su Tang at the same time. Previously, he'd also cursed in rage at these two because of the collapse of the two Soul's Towers, however, now he was at a loss for words.

However, the two concerned individuals seemed completely oblivious to these things; their whole attention was focused on Lu Qing as he

examined Qin Yuan's injury.

"His life can be saved." Lu Qing eventually opened his mouth and first allowed everybody to feel a bit better.

"See, I told you!" Mo Lin said while still chewing on his corn.

"However, he needs a surgery. Quickly arrange to take him back to the city. His life can be saved, however, his vocal chords have suffered some damage; whether they can be restored or not, needs further diagnosis."

What Luo Qing meant by 'further' was: "I can only do this much."

"You can't perform surgery?" Qin Zhen promptly asked.

"I can't." Lu Qing said: "You should quickly take him back to the city. Furthermore, you will also have to face many life-threatening dangers in the night."

"Or you can let me try?" Mo Lin said.

Qin Zhen threw a quick glance his way; as he looked at the corn bar in his hand, the expression in his eyes turned resolute and he said: "I will immediately take him back."

"I am leaving!" Mo Lin gloomily said.

"I've performed a simple tie-up on his wound. You should hurry up as much as you can!" Lu Qing said.

"Understood." Qin Zhen nodded. After adjusting Qin Yuan at his back with the help of everybody, as he was about to leave, he looked towards Lu Ping and Su Tang eventually said two words:

"Thank you."

"No need." Lu Ping said.

"Hurry up and go!" Su Tang waved her towards him.

"En." Qin Zhen slightly nodded and dashed towards the path down the mountain. This moment, he couldn't afford to hold back in the slightest; his strength's soul was fully employed, and very quickly, he disappeared into the darkness of the night.

The crowd of the students returned back to rest in their respective tents. Although they never had such an experience prior to this, by the time they had actually woken up, the matter had already been concluded. They didn't actually see the death with their own eyes. Thus, they were not affected too much by these events. The Mountain Forest very quickly regained its former tranquility, as if nothing had happened. The only difference was the three corpses, some blood stains, an empty tent, and of course, the students on the night watch didn't dare slack off again.

Not daring to be alone, they had formed groups of threes and fours. Their guard was strict, though they were also discussing the recent events in muffled voices while occasionally glancing towards either one of two directions. One was towards the edge of the camping area where the four individuals of Zhai Feng were resting, and the other direction was towards the exact centre of the camping area where the delegation of the City Master Mansion was resting.

Over the side of Zhai Feng, the surroundings became peaceful just a few moments after the four individuals had returned to their camp, while over the side of the City Master Mansion, the apex of the tent had been shaking a few times in short intervals since their return as if someone, being unable to sleep, was tossing and turning inside the tent every once in awhile.

That's right, how could he sleep?

As soon as Wei Tianqi tried to close his eyes, he would be immediately assaulted by that frightful feeling, and the scenes of those two incidents, intertwined among each other, would continuously flash through in his mind as if he'd just been in the midst of a nightmare. He was unable to cast them out of his mind no matter what he tried.

He was very drowsy, but didn't dare close his eyes. All he could do was try his best to keep his imagination under check. He loathed how he felt when Wei Ming was around him, but at this moment, he truly longed for him. If Wei Ming was here, he would certainly have sorted everything out.

Wei Tianqi spent all the night tossing and turning, but Wei Ming never

returned. When the former came out of the tent, two dark circles could be seen under his eyes. Wei Ying had gone missing once again. Wei Yang was fixing breakfast with that funny yet ugly mask covering his face. Wei Tianqi thought about talking with him, but then subsequently recalled that Wei Yang couldn't speak anymore. Everything seemed directed against him. He felt like kicking something.

Some students were silently sorting out their luggage while others had already started their journey. No one brought up the events of yesterday, because, after they'd woken up in the dawn, they discovered that the three corpses had already disappeared.

These assassins were after the City Master's son, clearly this incident wouldn't have such an easy ending. Getting dragged into such a complicated affair for no reason is by no means a fortuitous matter. All the students were trying their utmost to exclude themselves far away from this matter.

Wei Tianqi circled all around while occasionally sneaking glances towards the camp of Zhai Feng.

The four of them had woken up not too long ago. After waking up, they sorted out their luggage, had breakfast, and continued on with their journey. Wei Tianqi had not slept throughout the entire night and had been varyingly paying attention to their every movement since the dawn, but from their actions it seemed like nothing had actually occurred; everything about them seemed as it had always been. Soon after, the four of them, walking on the uphill road, completely disappeared from Wei Tianqi's vision. However, the anxiety and wrath in his heart hadn't disappeared along with them at all.

Chapter 44: Please Have Congee.

The group of Zhai Feng had left. The students of Xia Feng were also pretty quick with their movements, and soon after, they also began their journey in groups of three-five. Although last night's affair didn't have any relation to them, it still caused an air of tension around them. No one could say that they would not suffer a similar incident during the rest of their journey. Their sight-seeing mood, which had been present during the start of the uphill journey, was nowhere to be seen at this moment. Actually, the reason they hurried onto the road was also in order to avoid the delegation of the City Master Mansion. The students who in ordinary times would have loved to get close to Wei Tianqi didn't wish to provoke trouble for themselves at this moment either.

A whole day passed as they walked on the Mountain Path. Everybody was on the edge, but in the end, they didn't have to face another incident. During dusk, students began to leave the mountain pass one by one; this spot marked the end of the Xia Feng mountains. At this point, the scenery in front of them began to become wide and clear; it no longer consisted of strange rocks lying on the hillsides, but instead was a boundless stretch of plains. An avenue, that was smooth and stretched perfectly straight up to its far end, was joined at the end of the mountain pass. These individuals, who'd never set a foot outside the Xia Feng region, felt that just a few glances of this avenue would allow them to dissolve their fatigue.

Continue on!

Upon seeing this smooth and perfectly straight avenue, many students decided to continue on without resting at the mountain pass. Apparently, they'd thoughts of continuing their journey during the night.

"What are we going to do?" Mo Lin immediately slumped his buttocks on the ground as soon as he was at the end of the mountain pass. With his physical strength, how could he not feel tired after journeying the whole day? Moreover, he was not someone from Xia Feng region who would feel excitement upon seeing a kind of avenue that could be seen anywhere except in the Xia Feng region.

“You guys decide.” Since Xi Fan had not traveled on his own, he declined to express any opinion of his own. Traversing mountains on a wheelchair is extremely inconvenient. Therefore, for the most of the journey, both he and his wheelchair had been carried by Lu Ping and Su Tang. Yet, at present, both of them seemed as if nothing had happened.

“How can there be no coaches here?” Su Tang said while sizing up her surroundings. Since people coming out of the Xia Feng mountains on a daily basis were extremely low, no coachman would think about coming here. Nothing could be seen there except for a road sign at the side of the avenue which indicated that this was the mountain pass for the Xia Feng region.

“There is a little town up ahead. Spending the night there would be a better choice.” A student of Xia Feng came closer to them and said. He didn’t wait for a single moment after speaking these words and left hurriedly. While he was speaking these words, his companions had also been nervously sizing up the mountain pass because of his such actions, and as soon as he returned, they immediately began to condemn him.

Actually, after yesterday night’s events, many students had begun to have a favorable impression of Lu Ping and Su Tang. However, these two had, after all, offended Wei Tianqi. Thus, none of the students dared to approach them. The student who’d just recently approached them also did it only after making sure that no one from the Wei family was present at that moment. And even after all this, he immediately suffered criticism from his companions. There were many students among them who still wished to curry favor from the Wei family. If someone with such thoughts happened to open his mouth in front of Wei family, there was no saying what would it result in.

Lu Ping and Su Tang were originally about to thank him, but after seeing such an atmosphere, they immediately restrained themselves. They smiled, not minding such things in the slightest.

“Are you just gonna sleep there or come to the small town?” Both Lu Ping and Su Tang turned towards Mo Lin together and asked. Just a moment ago, this guy was just sitting, and the next moment, they found

him bluntly lying flat on the ground.

“Small town.....small town....oh, Wang Mountain Town.” Mo Lin seemed to have recalled something. His expression turned resolute and he sprang up to his feet:

“Come, let’s go to the Wang Mountain Town. Shop at the east corner of the street has wonderful prawn congee. I will lead you there.”

By the time Mo Lin was finished speaking, he’d already begun to walk forward in huge strides, causing the left behind Lu Ping and Su Tang to look at other.

“How can he be so much fond of eating?!” Su Tang lamented.

“Pivot’s soul, of course.” Xi Fan said.

“I’ve seen many Pivot’s soul experts. Not many of them are foodies like him, though.” Su Tang said and began to push Xi Fan, following behind Mo Lin.

“It is said that this is also a kind of cultivation practice in the Pivot’s soul.” Xi Fan said.

“Then, this cultivation practice is too convenient.” Su Tang sighed.

The four of them continued with their journey. Surprisingly, during the entire walk, Mo Lin didn’t complain about being tired even once.

“Prawn Congee! Prawn Congee!” This guy was actually cheering as he entered the small town. Lu Pin and the rest two followed behind him helplessly and arrived at a small store at the east corner of the street. Upon seeing the ‘congee’ banner, that was fluttering in the wind, Mo Lin’s entire face was covered with a moved expression.

“Quick, support me in going there.” Mo Lin’s face seemed as if he wanted to kneel. His stamina was finally at its limit. Both of his legs were shivering, however, his mind was still set on eating congee.

Lu Ping helplessly moved forward and supported him. The four of them then began to walk towards the congee shop.

Among the four them, leaving Lu Ping out, all three of them although

were not outstanding with respect to Qi's soul, but had definite realms of first Heavenly Layer or Second Layer with respect to the same. Their sense of smell was far superior compared to that of an ordinary person.

"What a strong smell of alcohol!" Xi Fan said while taking a breath in.

"What's going on?" Mo Lin's face seemed a bit confused. His Qi's soul was at the second Heavenly Layer, stronger than both Xi Fan and Su Tang, so he'd already determined that the source of this alcoholic smell was indeed the shop in front of them. This caused him to raise his head and take a look at the banner of the shop once again in order to make sure that he'd not made a mistake in his tired state. He hadn't made a mistake, the banner indeed had 'congee' written on it.

The four of them, along with their suspicions, arrived at the shop's front. Immediately afterward, they spotted a female sitting at a table near the door facing towards them. Her long hair was a mess and her complexion was flushed. The table in front of her had no less than six wine glasses lying in an unordered manner. At this moment, her right hand was holding the seventh bottle. She raised the bottle up to her neck and took a gulp, at the same time, her left hand heavily slapped the table in front of her as she shouted:

"My congee!"

"Right away! Right away!" Someone hastily replied from inside the shop.

"Ferocious!" The four standing outside the shop had their eyes opened wide. All four of them had pretty good realms in Infusion's Soul. They didn't need to approach the woman to see the wine bottles. This was not Malt Wine which the students of Xia Feng had casually drunk on the mountains, instead, it was a strong wine that is brewed with grains as its main ingredient. The degree of the alcohol in malt wine is about four, whereas the degree of alcohol this kind of wine, is about fifty. An ordinary person can easily get drunk after drinking about a few liangs¹ of such a wine, and at about one jin², one cannot stand without a support. However, the table in front of the woman had six empty bottles on it, which makes

it a total of six jins, and she was still drinking the seventh. On top of that, she'd even shouted just a moment ago; such a tolerance for alcohol was truly frightening.

"Is this.....an ability of Pivot's soul?" Xi Fan, as if recovering from a trauma, looked towards Mo Lin and asked. He was specialized in the Essence's soul. Essence's soul is related to heart's emotions and mind control. Hence, a thing such as wine is one of the biggest fear of a cultivator of Essence's Soul.

"Don't tell me it's the Wine Sack mentioned in the legends." Mo Lin muttered to himself.

"Are you are making things up?" Su Tang said.

"No! This kind of ability exists. If you don't believe me, ask him." Mo Lin said and looked towards Lu Ping. The ability shown by Lu Ping when he left behind poison while drinking congee, caused Mo Lin to think that there might be a similar ability to leave behind the alcoholic part while drinking the wine.

"They are two different things, no?"

"Don't be this serious!" Mo Lin said.

The volume of their discussion was not loud. Clearly, they didn't wish it to be heard by other people. However, how could they have imagined that this woman, who had already drunk six and a half jins of wine, was not only full of energy, but her ears were also still extremely sharp. She suddenly slapped the table again and glared towards them:

"What can a bunch of little devils understand? Using an ability to drink wine, is just a waste of wine." Woman reprimanded the four of them.

"Eh?"

The four of them blankly stared.

She could hear their conversation and also knew about abilities, this should mean that she was also a cultivator, no?

"What realm...?"

This was the question every cultivator would instinctively ask himself after running into another cultivator. However, in the end, the four of them had to look towards each other.

“Cannot perceive.....”

Since they cannot perceive didn't imply that the individual in front of them didn't have any perception. Most of the times it implied that they couldn't perceive because the latter's realm was higher than theirs. For instance Wei Ming; they couldn't perceive his realm either, which means that guy was likely to have some strength.

“Eh, Wei Ming!”

Lu Ping suddenly said. They were thinking about Wei Ming just a moment ago, however, never did they expect that the guy would actually show up in front of their eyes. He'd entered the Congee shop through the side door. His brows were creased and face was disgusted:

“What's with this strong smell of alcohol?”

By the time he said these words, his vision was already on the woman. Though, the woman didn't even give him a passing glance.

“Congee coming!” Just at this moment, the owner of the shop personally carried a bowl of congee from the kitchen to the woman's table. His entire shop was drowned in a strong alcoholic odor and one of his tables was completely messed up with empty wine bottles, however, it seemed like these things weren't affecting him in the slightest.

However, Wei Ming was not happy at all. He quickly moved in front of the owner and said:

“With such a strong alcoholic smell, how are we going to eat?”

“If you can't eat like this, please wait for a few moments.” The owner smiled and did a polite gesture towards Wei Ming.

Still as before, Wei Ming only had his brows creased, however, he was extremely angry in his mind. If it had been the Xia Feng region, not a single individual would have dared to say such words to him. However,

this area belonged to Zhi Ling region, not Xia Feng.

Even if this owner knew the fame of the twelve Guardians of the Xia Feng region's City Master Mansion, he wouldn't possibly think that the individual in front of him is the Guardian ranked two among the City Master Mansion's Guardians, Wei Ming.

Wei Ming decided to teach a lesson to this shop owner. His mood was not particularly good today.

He moved his arm and was just about to raise his hand, but surprisingly, before his hand could even move a single centimeter, it had already been grabbed, by that woman who looked like a drunk with her drowsy eyes and flushed cheeks.

"Youngsters of nowadays, why are they so undisciplined." The woman seemed to be muttering to herself. Astonished Wei Ming immediately tried to apply strength and break free, however, he didn't expect that the woman would suddenly jerk his hand upwards. It seemed as if all the strength he'd applied to break free had been exerted upon his own body.

Wei Ming was blasted away; from inside of the shop, to its main entrance, and then finally crashing onto the street outside. He raised his head with difficulty and was instantly greeted with four astonished faces. Surprisingly, Lu Ping and the rest were also here.

However, they didn't seem to have much desire to appreciate his misfortune. Simultaneously, with even more astonished faces than just a moment ago, all four of them turned their heads towards the woman.

"You can't drink congee because of the alcoholic smell?" The woman was looking towards the Wei Ming who was still on the ground.

Wei Ming's face was also covered with astonishment. If, even at this point, he couldn't recognize how formidable this woman was, he didn't deserve to be called as the brains of the City Master Mansion.

"There is no smell of alcohol here. Open your mouth." Woman said.

"What are you....." Wei Ming could only speak these three words before the woman tilted the bowl in her hands, and the boiling congee directly

dropped onto his mouth and face.

“I offer this congee to you. You need not thank me.” By the time woman finished speaking, a bowl full of congee had been poured on Wei Ming. She casually threw the bowl and it fell down straight into the embrace of the shop owner. Subsequently, she raised the bottle of wine in her hand as a greeting towards the owner, gave a quick glance to Lu Ping and the rest, and left with a swaying and tilting figure, for Lu Ping and the rest to look at.

Chapter 45: Not Efficient Enough

Wei Ming's whole face was covered with congee, seeming extremely burned. Although this temperature was not enough to inflict injuries on him, the humiliation he'd suffered on the back of it was unprecedented. For a prideful individual like him, dying might sound a better option than suffering such a humiliation.

Wei Ming was an arrogant person without a doubt. However, the current him didn't seem to plan on taking any action; even after suffering this humiliation, all he did was quietly stand up.

His hair, his face, and even his neck were all covered in congee. His appearance looked wretched and comical. However, he didn't rush to clean immediately. By the time he stood up, he'd assumed a cold and indifferent expression; his usual expression. Though, this cold face along with the decorations of congee seemed even more comical.

He didn't take notice of Lu Ping and the rest who were witnessing his comical appearance, neither did he chase after that woman; he turned around, entered the congee shop where he'd been kicked out just a moment ago, and said to the shop owner in a tranquil voice:

"Bring me a bowl of congee. I am waiting for someone."

The shop owner looked at him with astonishment. Evidently, he didn't expect such a response from this youngster. While he was still in daze, Wei Ming asked him another question:

"Is it possible?"

"Wait for a moment." Shop owner recovered and returned to the kitchen. Subsequently, he brought back a bowl of congee with him.

"Thank you." Wei Ming faintly rose from his chair(Tl: as a polite gesture). He took out a handkerchief from within his chest and carefully wiped off all the congee from his hair, face and neck; accomplishing it with perfection.

Then he began to drink the congee. He was drinking very calmly, as if

nothing had occurred.

Lu Ping and the rest looked at each other blankly. Even Xi Fan, who could tell someone's frame of mind and thoughts by observing his expressions and actions, was unable to guess what Wei Ming's current thoughts were.

"Should we still go there?" Su Tang asked.

"We should. Don't tell me you guys are not hungry?" Lu Ping said.

"Come come." Mo Lin said and entered the shop first and the rest followed after him. They sat down at a table and asked for four bowls of congee. While eating, they continued to size up Wei Ming as if he was a pickle that would add additional flavor in their congee.

It lasted until footsteps sounded in the street outside, following which, two individuals arrived at the shop's entrance.

The two individuals outside the shop stared blankly, and four of the individuals inside the shop also blankly stared in return, however, Wei Ming was still calm. He stood up and made a little bow towards the individuals outside:

"Young City Master, you've arrived."

These two were actually Wei Tianqi and Wei Yang. Wei Ying had gone missing as usual. During the entire journey, he didn't travel with them at all. His only appearance was during his yesterday night's act.

"Why are they also here?" Upon seeing Wei Ming, Wei Tianqi's heart immediately relaxed by a lot. He was itching to look for trouble with Lu Ping and the rest.

However, in response, Wei Ming didn't even turn towards them. With a slight bow, he replied:

"It's probably because the prawn congee here is very good. Coincidentally they also knew."

"With them being here, I won't have the appetite even if the congee happened to be better than this." Wei Tianqi said.

“In that case, should we have the congee packed and take it with us?” Wei Ming seemed as if he sought Wei Tianqi’s opinion.

“What?” Wei Tianqi almost thought he’d misheard. Taking Wei Ming’s intelligence into consideration, he did not believe that Wei Ming had failed to understand the meaning behind his words. However, ‘by having the congee packed’, the latter had chosen to back off? To back off in front of these few individuals.

Wei Tianqi somewhat wished to flare up, however, as he recalled Wei Ming’s manner of taking action with extreme perfection, he felt that there might be some meaning behind this action of the latter.

“Let it be.” Wei Tianqi immediately restrained himself from bursting out. He believed that as long as Wei Ming was present, the end result will definitely satisfy him.

Soon afterward, another two bowls of congee were brought. Wei Tianqi took two bites. At this point, his mood was not bad. It might be because congee really had a good taste, or maybe because after meeting up with Wei Ming, the anxiety in his mind was eventually dissolved.

Then he began to wait for Wei Ming to display his plan and course of action. However, soon after, he saw Lu Ping and the rest settling their bills and about to leave.

Wei Tianqi looked at Wei Ming as the latter seriously drank his congee.

Steady, calm, and collected; the points which his father, Wei Zhong, had always liked the most about Wei Ming. He suddenly discovered that he truly could learn a lot from Wei Zhong.

In the end, what are his arrangements?

Wei Tianqi, while being full of expectations and making guesses, saw Lu Ping and the rest walking out of the shop and slowly disappearing from the street. Meanwhile, Wei Ming was still drinking his congee.

Wei Tianqi again waited for a short while to confirm that Wei Ming truly didn’t have any plans. Consequently, he immediately felt annoyed:

“Explain.” Wei Tianqi said.

He didn’t ask what; he just said explain. Because he knew the latter was a clever person. Talking with a clever person always saves a lot of trouble. The latter already knew what Wei Tianqi wanted him to explain.

“We have an important matter to take care of. Too many knots in a branch are not efficient enough.”¹

It sounded like a half-hearted excuse, however, for Wei Tianqi and even the entire City Master Mansion, this explanation was sufficient. In fact, no explanation could be stronger than this one.

Because the City Master Mansion emphasized efficiency. A matter that was not efficient enough, they will just not bother with it. This was their logic. Wei Ming was preserving the City Master Mansion’s way of dealing with things; even Wei Tianqi had no say in this matter.

This was also the reason Wei Ming had been able to quickly calm down recently. While congee was pouring down on him, he realized that all he’d been doing at that moment was increasing knots in a branch.

This kind of matters had to be stopped from hereon.

Thereupon, he regained his original way of doing things. He returned to the congee shop; the location they’d agreed upon to group up.

Therefore, afterward, when Wei Tianqi asked him to take action against Lu Ping and the rest, he preserved his cool. He will not allow himself to lose his temper again. He, who’d always acted with perfection before, had become too unsteady because of his plan’s failure yesterday. Previously, his actions had always been extremely successful and conducted extremely smoothly; he hadn’t expected that a single insignificant failure would have such a huge influence on him.

This one failure was enough for him to learn his lesson; he was a smart person after all.

Wei Tianqi had nothing to say; he could only silently drink his congee. Lu Ping and the rest stopped after a little while of walking on the street; they were also puzzled as they waited for the City Master Mansion’s

group to flare up and try to look for trouble with them. They never expected that the latter would not react at all. During the whole journey, they hadn't encountered any troubles from them at all.

"What's happening?" Mo Lin scratched his head in puzzlement. His medical expertise had already been deemed as wrong, and now even the inference he'd made by relying upon his 'Assassin's Experience' had turned out to be false?

"It seems he actually doesn't want to grow new knots in a branch." In the end, it was nevertheless Xi Fan. After carefully analyzing Wei Ming's attitude, he was able to come up with a conclusion which was pretty close to the truth.

"Then should we go back or not?" Su Tang turned towards Lu Ping and asked. Originally Lu Ping wanted to talk with Wei Ming. However, he was dissuaded by Mo Lin's 'Assassin's Experience'; something about: 'let the opponent strike first and find his weakness'² and all other kinds of confusing things. However, after arriving here, it turned out that the opponent didn't show any weakness at all.

"Let's forget it. I really can't walk anymore!" Mo Lin was thoroughly frightened by Su Tang's suggestion.

"We will do it later!" Surprisingly Lu Ping didn't insist further.

Mo Lin let out a sigh. When he said 'can't walk anymore', he suddenly recalled that scene when Lu Ping had resolutely advanced forward with Su Tang on his back, and subsequently thought that this guy wouldn't go as far as to put him on his back and march back to the City Master Mansion's group on the spot, would he? Fortunately, this terrifying possibility didn't occur.

"Let's first look for a place to stay. We should be able to arrive in Zhi Ling city tomorrow." Xi Fan said.

Basically everybody spent the night in the Wang Town. In the morning, as they continued their journey, Lu Ping's group ran into the students of Xia Feng at the entrance of the town. Both the groups were going in the direction of the Zhi Ling city.

At this point, a question rose amongst the students of Xia Feng. They were going to the Zhi Ling city because their Soul's Tower had collapsed and they had to take the Bipolar institute's Major Assessment, however, what were these guys of Zhai Feng doing? Why were they on the same road as them?

Chapter 46: Intruders

Zhi Ling city was the capital city of the Zhi Ling region. It was naturally distinct to Xia Feng region's capital Xia Feng city.

Xia Feng region was a mountainous region. Even its capital was constructed in accordance with the mountains. Since the city couldn't have extended past the mountains, its shape seemed long and narrow.

However, Zhi Ling region was different. It was located on plains. All the cities of the region were extended in all the directions and had roads coming and going through them in every direction. Roads in a particular direction coiled around the major road of that direction.

Zhi Ling city was not like Xia Feng city, which only possessed a single major road that wasn't even completed yet.

After they'd passed two villages and two rice fields following the road, groups of buildings began to appear more frequently. One group of the Xia Feng students entered the urban area surrounding the Zhi Ling city. They saw the tall and majestic City Wall of the city from afar. This was also not present in the Xia Feng city. The same mountains which had dictated the construction of the Xia Feng city also allowed to create an easy-to-guard defense mechanism by exploiting the shape of mountains. This was pretty much the only respect in which Xia Feng city was ahead of the Zhi Ling city.

After entering the street region outside the city, Lu Ping and the rest began to ask around for the whereabouts of the Tian Zhao institute.

Tian Zhao institute had an outstanding reputation in the Zhi Ling city and even in the entire Zhi Ling region. After asking around throughout the whole way without much effort, they eventually arrived at a lonely yet wide street. Lu Ping and the rest found themselves in front of the entrance of the Tian Zhao institute, while behind them was a lost student of Xia Feng institute who was sizing them up with a strange gaze. Diagonally across the entrance of the Tian Zhao institute was another entrance which wasn't the least bit less imposing than the former. On the

entrance's top were two big letters: Bi Polar.

Tian Zhao and Bi Polar, the two famous institutes of the Zhi Ling region, were surprisingly separated by just a single street. The poor student had never heard about it before.

Over at the side of the Bi Polar institute, the letter regarding the collapse of the Soul's Tower and the borrowing of their Soul's Tower had arrived before the arrival of students, thus, the students of the Xia Feng entered the institute without a hitch.

However, the Lu Ping and the rest had been stopped at the entrance of the Tian Zhao institute.

"Chu Min? There's no such teacher here."

After they'd explained their purpose of visit, they were rudely blocked.

"Hiccup... or perhaps, she is not a teacher; she is a dean." Xi Fan said while recalling the conversation with their Dean when the latter had handed them the letter.

"Looking for trouble, are you? Everybody know that the dean of the Tian Zhao institute is Senior Yun Chong. I'd voted him myself!" The guard had a proud expression. Although he was only a common man who'd been kept to stand guard at the entrance, he didn't seem to be taking these few youngsters, who appeared to be cultivators, seriously at all. He only knew to guard the rules of the Tian Zhao institute properly; in case someone really dared to look for trouble, he didn't have any skill, however, he didn't need to do anything as people will come on their own and sort everything out. The mountain like support behind his back was too hard!

"What's happening? Did old Guo made a mistake?" Mo Lin said. Behind his back, Mo Lin didn't call Godou Old Dean or anything like that, instead, he directly addressed the latter as Old Guo.

"Ah! That shouldn't be." Xi Fan fished out the letter. It only had 'To Chu Min' written on it.

"Uncle, is there someone else called Chu Min in the institute?" Su Tang stepped forward and asked.

As the guard looked at the sensible looking girl in front of him, his expression became much better. However, in the end, he still spoke with a helpless expression:

“In the whole institute, there are thousands of people, how can I know all of them? You should first clarify and then come again!”

“Can you let us in for a little bit?” Su Tang asked.

“That won’t do. Absolutely won’t do. The institute doesn’t allow strangers to casually enter.” The guard said while repeatedly waving his hand.

“All right!” Su Tang couldn’t tolerate any more and stepped down. However, Mo Lin was not happy with the guard’s style at all.

“How can you not slap his face?” Mo Lin instigated Su Tang.

“I can slap your face.” Su Tang glared at him.

“All right. Then what to do now?” Mo Lin changed the topic.

However, Lu Ping had already stepped forward.

“Let us go in and look for her!” Lu Ping said.

“This child. I told you that is not possible. Go and clarify first who do you want to look for.” Guard said.

“Chu Ming.” Lu Ping said.

“There’s no such person.” The guard waved his hand.

“You just said you can’t remember all thousands of people. How do you know there’s no such person?” Lu Ping said.

Guard stared blankly; he hadn’t expected that Lu Ping would talk in this manner, however, he quickly recovered back and said:

“Who knows if you are indiscriminately making up names? Go and clarify this person’s identity, then I will go and confirm.”

“We are not making up. We have a letter for her!” Lu Ping pointed towards the letter in Xi Fan’s hand.

“Who know’s if it’s fake or not?” The guard said.

“It’s real.” Lu Ping said.

“Since you say it’s true, it’s really true?”

“It’s really true.”

“Trying to put an act in front of me, huh? Letter or no letter I.....hiccup.”
Saying till here, the guard’s eyes blurred and legs went soft, seemingly about to collapse down. Lu Ping reached out with his hand and supported the guard’s body. Subsequently, after setting the latter against the wall, he turned back and called out to the other three:

“Go.”

“Should I call you really clever or really reckless?” Mo Lin said while wiping sweat.

“This is not good, is it?” Xi Fan said while daydreaming.

“You didn’t strike too hard, did you?” Su Tang was worried.

“No.” Lu Ping, however, only replied Su Tang and entered the Tian Zhao institute.

“My assassin’s intuition is telling me that we are in trouble.” Mo Lin said.

“I’m afraid if it takes too long to get in touch with the Dean, something unfortunate may truly occur.” Xi Fan said.

The rest followed behind Lu Ping and entered the Tian Zhao institute while conversing.

A wide boulevard was stretched directly up to the main building. They didn’t see a single individual as they walked on the pathway; the entire institute seemed calm and peaceful. However, this caused the four individuals to have a headache. Originally they were hoping to catch a passerby and get information from him, however, they didn’t found a single person on the pathway in the end.

“Try to look inside the house.” Lu Ping was walking at the front. He was

leading everyone with his firm and decisive actions, not providing them any time to think of a plan.

However, at this moment, a loud and clear voice began echoing in the entire Tian Zhao institute out of everybody's expectations.

"Intruders. We have intruders. Three males, one female. Essence's soul sixth heavenly layer, the youngster in the wheelchair; Pivot's soul sixth Heavenly Layer, the straw hat youngster; Strength's soul sixth heavenly layer, the girl in red clothes; and an ordinary passerby, the youngster in grey clothes.

Surprisingly, their distinctive features and the realms had been precisely described as if the speaker had seen them with his own eyes. Although the sound was covering the entire institute, Lu Ping and the rest were still able to determine its source without much difficulty. All the four turned around at the same time.

Behind them, a youngster was standing at the entrance gate. One of his hands was on his hips and other was holding a horn shaped thing in front of his mouth. However, it was clear that such a potent sound amplification could not be done by just relying on this simple toy. The youngster was relying on his extraordinary realm in Sound's Soul. Transmitting his voice in such a large area couldn't be done by possessing a few Heavenly Layers of Sound's soul, rather such a feat was only possible after possessing an ability produced through the Linking Up of the Sound's soul.

"The above mentioned was the intelligence obtained from the watch guard Shi Ao." The youngster added one more line.

Watch guard! This indicated that the youngster was certainly a student. Students of Tian Zhao had actually attained the realm of Linking of Souls. This institute's strength was truly incomparable to that of Xia Feng region's rural area.

Moreover, right after the youngster transmitted the information, a reply immediately came from the institute above:

"Announcement: Cultivation problem for the third grade. Seize the

intruders. The Youngster in the wheelchair: two points; the straw hat youngster: four points; red-clothed girl: six points; ordinary youngster: one point.”

“So less, How can this be enough points!” All kinds of grumblings began echoing in the campus above.

“Even one point counts!”

“First come, first served!”

In the midst of the voices, surprisingly, many figures could be already seen jumping straight out of the windows of the main building. Various sounds could be heard from all the other directions as well. Tian Zhao institute, which was calm and peaceful just a moment ago, had begun to bustle with noise and excitement within an instant.

“Sure enough, we truly are out of luck.” Mo Lin miserably shouted. In Zhai Feng, he was at the apex among the students with his sixth Heavenly Layer realm, however, here in Tian Zhao, judging by the playful voices resounding throughout the institute, his sixth heavenly layer certainly didn’t seem to be anything extraordinary. In his opinion, here strong people seemed as many as clouds.

“Don’t be afraid, we will explain the purpose of our visit to them.” Xi Fan said.

“And if they directly cripple you without asking anything at all?” Mo Lin said.

“First, run.” Lu Ping said.

“Run separately, otherwise, the target will be too big.” Mo Lin, with his background as an assassin, nevertheless had some experience.

“Do you have some enmity with me?” Xi Fan was gloomy. In ordinary times, he wouldn’t have minded running so much, however, at this moment, he was sitting in a wheelchair, how could he run faster than the other people?

“You stay behind and explain them the purpose of our visit!” Mo Lin

said.

At the far end of the road, a crowd rushing towards them could already be seen. As Xi Fan looked at the weapons in the hands of many and at the bald youngster in the lead who had a black tattoo on his head and a murderous expression on his face, he immediately felt his confidence going away.

“Run!” Lu Ping reached out with one of his hands, scooped up Xi Fan on his shoulders, and madly sprinted ahead.

“Haha.” Mo Lin still had the nerve laugh. He was recalling the scene he’d played in his mind yesterday; it was truly happening to Xi Fan at this moment.

“Still laughing, you should care about yourself!” Considering Mo Lin’s physique, ‘run’ word for him was not much better than the Xi Fan in his wheelchair. Su Tang was thinking if she should also carry this guy on her back.

“Hehe, what I rely on, is wisdom and experience.” While saying this, Mo Lin drifted off the road and entered the shade of woods at the side of the boulevard.

“I will go to this side.” Su Tang yelled towards Lu Ping, referring to the direction exactly opposite to Mo Lin’s.

“I will hide Xi Fan and then come back to look for you.” Lu Ping replied.

“Where do you plan to hide me ?” Xi Fan gloomily asked.

“I don’t know. I am not familiar with this place either. What do you say?”

“In my opinion, can we not run so brazenly on the road?”

“Attracting their attention will make it easier for the other two to escape.” Lu Ping said.

“Uh....” Xi Fan was ashamed. He was only thinking about himself, this realization caused him to feel too low about himself.

“However, there aren’t many people chasing after the two of us.” Xi Fan

said after observing the direction taken by various people chasing after them.

“Why?” Lu Ping also slowed down his pace and looked all around him.

“Our points are too low, we should be better off adding Mo Lin as well.” Xi Fan said.

Chapter 47: Quick Increase In Points.

This kind of point allocation by the institute was certainly reasonable. Lu Ping was an ordinary passerby, thus, one point for him was to ensure that everybody's effort will not be in vain; it could be considered as a kind of consolation. Xi Fan, even though had the realm of sixth Heavenly Layer in the Essence's soul, which was the most difficult soul to perceive, he would certainly have trouble moving due to sitting in a wheelchair, therefore, he'd only been allocated two points. Mo Lin had the sixth Heavenly Layer in the Pivot's soul and also had the ability to move freely, thus, four points for him. Su Tang had the sixth Heavenly Layer in the Strength's soul, hence, her movements and fighting strength would be comparatively better than Mo Lin's, thus, she'd two extra points, which also made her points the highest among the four.

The combined points of Lu Ping and Xi Fan amounted to a pitiful figure of three, thus, chasing after feeble Mo Lin seemed a much better option. Students in the Tian Zhao were numerous while the opportunities to score were only four. They had strength, confidence, and aspirations; they naturally wished to look for the six points, the four points was also next in the sequence. From the very beginning, not a single one of them had aimed for the two points or the one point.

"Intruders have scattered away in different directions. Six points, red-clothed girl eastward; four points, straw hat youngster westward; one point, grey-clothed youngster together with....hiccup...has abandoned the youngster in the wheelchair, and is going towards the north. This is the last time any information is being disclosed, after this, no more hints will be given. On the side note, the natural essence of the gray-clothed youngster's body is astonishing, his point count has been revised to one point five points." The voice once more echoed from the Tian Zhao institute above. From their approach and the details they'd given, they clearly didn't see these intruders as any sort of crisis, on the contrary, they'd turned this problem into a competition. No longer hints were also meant to increase the difficulty, and the increase in the point count of Lu Ping was evidently done after seeing him running as fast as lightning even

after carrying Xi Fan on his back. Although he didn't possess any soul's power, just relying upon his physique, he couldn't be taken lightly.

"Point five points, so stingy!"

"Can I get an extra point by directly killing them?"

Many voices resounded in reply to the new information.

After hearing these grumbles, Xi Fan once again looked at the expressions of the students who were rushing towards them and discovered that his decision to not stay behind and explain the purpose of their visit was only too correct.

"This institute's atmosphere is too barbaric! It seems full of trouble." Xi Fan said.

"Seems like the people chasing after us are increasing." Lu Ping said after surveying.

"Your point count has increased, and more importantly, the two of us are leftovers with our total count adding up to a total of 3.5 points; it is approaching Mo Lin's points." Xi Fan said.

"Moreover, we are so eye-grabbing...." Lu Ping slowed his pace. Behind him, some people had already walked past the spot from where Su Tang and Mo Lin had deviated in the left and the right directions. In his front, however, was a tide of people. A massive amount of students had hopped from the windows of the main building and were rushing towards them. Some of them had already inclined their direction towards left or right in an attempt to catch the six or four points, while some were moved by the 3.5 points worth leftovers. Being revealed so clearly on such a wide pathway, Lu Ping and Xi Fan needed to carefully plan their next move.

"No need to stop. Change directions at the next intersection, if you can reach there before them." Xi Fan shouted after analyzing the routes of roads.

"Ok!" Lu Ping agreed and immediately increased his speed. At that instant, Xi Fan, who was on his back, was almost helplessly thrown away due to the inertia. Immediately afterward, Xi Fan saw incomplete images

of quickly passing by trees on both the sides of the pathway. He tried hard to circulate the power of his Infusion's soul but discovered that he was still unable to see clearly. At this moment, Lu Ping's speed had already increased past the limits of what he could hold with his third layer Infusion's soul. One would probably require an eyesight with its movement-seizing ability enhanced by the fourth Heavenly Layer of the Infusion's layer to see clearly while moving at such a speed.

Will they be able to reach the intersection before the students rushing in their front?

Xi Fan discovered that he shouldn't be worried about this problem at all, instead, he should be worried if he could manage to maintain his consciousness at such a high speed.

Such a sudden boost in the speed astonished the students of the Tian Zhao institute. This guy actually wasn't using his entire strength? He can run so fast while carrying another guy? What kind of body is this? The students behind Lu Ping and Xi Fan stared blankly as the distance between the two sides increasingly pulled open. Only individuals still able to keep up were the cultivators having a high realm in the Strength's soul.

"Towards left!" Although Xi Fan was not able to clearly see the images of the passing by trees at his left and right, he could very clearly see the increasingly approaching scene in front of him. Students who had clustered ahead to block them were not too many; a large majority of them had deviated towards the left and right. In Xi Fan's observation, people going towards the left were rather low, hence, it was a much more convenient route.

However, Lu Ping, after arriving at the intersection in a blink of an eye, turned towards the right without the slightest hesitation.

"Hey hey....this is left." Xi Fan shouted, thinking that Lu Ping, in a hurry, had confused himself between right and left.

"I know." Lu Ping stated.

"Ah! There are more people this side." Xi Fan said.

"I know." Lu Ping still replied the same.

Xi Fan stared blankly but then quickly realized. Why did this side have more people? Because Su Tang had escaped to the east. The majority of the students wished to capture the six points, therefore, the majority of the students coming from the main building preferred to go towards the right. Lu Ping had decisively chosen the right side in order to create disturbances for the other side and even possibly act against them in order to reduce Su Tang's burden.

"You are biased....." Xi Fan urged, feeling pity for Mo Lin who was completely alone in the west.

"This is something I have to do." Lu Ping replied as such.

"Ah..I know." Xi Fan found himself completely incapable of refuting this. Su Tang and Lu Ping were indeed mutually dependent for life.

"But can't you gloss it over a bit?"

Meanwhile, a voice began resounding throughout the institute once again:

"Message: The speed of the grey-clothed youngster is extremely frightening; his point count has been revised to two."

"Your points has increased again." Xi Fan said.

"I heard."

"So laid back. I think your points will increase more." Xi Fan.

"Can you perceive where this sound, transmitting this information all the time, is coming from?"

"Are you being sarcastic with me?" Xi Fan replied with his own question.

"Uh....sorry!" Lu Ping said. Like Mo Lin's fault lied in the Strength's soul, Xi Fan's fault lied in the Sound's soul, as such, he'd no way of perceiving the location of this sound's source.

"I have a feeling it is somewhere above us?" Lu Ping said while looking

all around above him.

“You want to take care of it?” Xi Fan said.

“If there’s an opportunity.” Lu Ping said.

“Before that, look ahead.” Xi Fan said.

“I am.” Lu Ping said.

“Haha, four points!” Up ahead of them, a youngster, after quickly sprinting out of the woods at the side of the road, was excitedly standing right at the centre of the road. Clearly this guy was well-versed in speed as he was intercepting Lu Ping and Xi Fan much earlier than the rest of the students.

‘After collecting these four points, I will still have sufficient time to capture the six points. Collecting points with such ease; this is why speed is the way of a king!’

In his mind, the youngster was counting the chickens before slaughtering them as he prepared to greet the four points in front of him.

‘This guy, what kind of innate ability does he possess in terms of speed. However, I am Sonic Qiao Ying, in front of.....

Huh?

In front?

He is truly in front!’

By the time he’d said ‘in front’, Lu Ping was truly in front of him.

What’s going on?

Having speed as his forte, Qiao Ying’s judgement of speed was extremely keen and precise. He originally estimated that the other guy would arrive in front of him just as he would have finished speaking. However, at this moment, the other guy had already arrived in front of him before he could finish speaking; this was not an error in his judgement, rather the opponent had sped up....

After Lu Ping had displayed his extraordinary speed while carrying

another person, his points were increased from a consolation type one point to 1.5 points that posed a little difficulty. Consequently, when he increased his speed once again, astonishing everybody, his points were again revised to two points. And at this moment again, Qiao Ying was absolutely sure that the opponent's speed had increased one more time, and moreover, had increased instantaneously. It was an explosive increase to such an extent that he couldn't even feel anything before the opponent was right in front of him.

Qiao Ying didn't even have the time to completely display an astonished expression, before Lu Ping's hand had already pressed onto his face.

Am I going to die?

At this instant, this thought flashed in Qiao Ying's mind. Because he understood speed; such a speed was sufficient to snap his neck in a flash.

Lu Ping's palm left his neck.

Qiao Ying fell down facing the sky; dust scattered in all the directions.

The sky is blue and clouds are white; drifting along the winds without any restraints! How good would it be if I can see it again one more time.

Qiao Ying was thinking as such.

After three seconds....

"Qiao Ying, what are you doing?" A voice sounded.

Eh?

Qiao Ying stared blankly for a while and moved.

I am.....all right?

Qiao Ying sat up at a lightning speed. 'All right....I am truly all right.'

"Even you couldn't chase after them?" Students, who were a bit delayed than him, asked him in astonished voices.

Because Qiao Ying wasn't just talk. In terms of speed, if he was the number two among the third-grade students of Tian Zhao, then, no one would dare to call himself number one. His nickname 'Sonic Qiao Ying'

was made by himself. Although it seemed a bit exaggerated at present, everybody believed, with his talent and obsession with speed, one day he would truly attain this kind of speed or even surpass it.

“I....was careless” Qiao Ying put it as such.

“Oh... oh..... oh.” His fellow students were immediately relieved. If that guy’s speed could exceed Qiao Ying’s speed even after carrying an individual, that would be too ridiculous.

“What are you still chatting for, hurry up and chase after them!” Some people immediately recovered and sped off. At this moment, everybody had once again turned into competitors.

” Chase..chase...chase!” Everybody continued on with their chase, leaving one after another. The absolute majority was crossing over to the other side of the pathway. They wanted to catch the Su Tang’s six points, not these two and two points on the pathway.

Qiao Ying was a bit distracted. Originally, he was also going for the six points. By chance, he ran into two and two points here. He’d been rejoicing his good fortune, and the result was he’d to suffer a strike from the other guy.

Two and two?

Not enough!

According to the speed that guy had displayed, how could he possibly amount to an insignificant two points?

Moreover, that guy is also supposed to be an ordinary man. How can an ordinary possess such a speed?

Qiao Ying’s curiosity towards this thing far outstripped his desire for the six points. As if duty bound, he began to pursue in the direction of Lu Ping and Xi Fan.

‘This time, I will certainly see him clearly.’ Qiao Ying secretly resolved in his heart.

Chapter 48: Latest Information.

Sonic Qiao Ying; although this name seemed rather exaggerated, he was undoubtedly the number one student in terms of speed among the third graders of the Tian Zhao institute. This was an undisputable fact, and his superiority was fairly clear as well.

Therefore, when Qiao Ying resolved to capture Lu Ping and Xi Fan, they were indirectly being helped.

From the perspective of the outsiders, Lu Ping was nothing more than an ordinary man who ran very quick and Xi Fan, being seated in a wheelchair and unable to move, certainly wouldn't be able to fight very well, thus, the only thing needed to be done in order to take care of these two was to catch up to them.

Thereupon, when Qiao Ying left everybody in the dust as he rushed towards Xi Fan and Lu Ping, the students who originally wanted to try for these four points, immediately felt like giving up. As they saw Qiao Ying disappearing into a distance at a lightning fast speed, all of these students immediately and decisively changed their directions. Because not a single student among them thought that they were quicker than Qiao Ying.

"Hey hey." At this moment, Xi Fan yelled at Lu Ping.

Lu Ping had just changed his direction again at an intersection point. He was trying to lead the crowd of students behind him away from Su Tang. Xi Fan, whom he'd scooped up on his back, was seriously serving as Lu Ping's back-eyes despite being embarrassed. The latter astonishingly discovered that they had not diverted as much attention as they'd expected. According to their reasoning, it shouldn't be this way. Their points as of now added up to four points, which was not lower than Mo Lin.

"What?" Lu Ping asked.

"No one is chasing after us!" Xi Fan said. From the perspective of someone trying to shake off a crowd, this was obviously a good thing. However, Xi Fan knew that Lu Ping was not just trying to simply break

away from the crowd.

“No one is chasing?” Lu Ping immediately stopped his steps, turned around, and looked ahead. Not a single soul could be seen on the pathway on which they had just turned.

“Was I running too quick?” As Lu Ping was speaking, a figure emerged at the intersection at a lightning speed and rapidly turned.

“Someone came!” Lu Ping was just about to run again.

“He is the only one who came, that’s all.” Xi Fan said. Before they turned at the intersection, Xi Fan had already discovered that all the students of Tian Zhao except this student seemed to have completely given up on them. Only this guy had continued in chasing after them.

Although they only had one confrontation, Lu Ping and Xi Fan hadn’t forgotten Qiao Ying’s face. They soon figured out that this was the individual who’d blocked them just a moment ago.

“What is going on?” Lu Ping was puzzled, and Xi Fan was also at a loss. They were not too clear on Tian Zhao institute, thus, they were naturally unable to figure out the reason for all this.

However, Qiao Ying was getting closer at a very fast speed. He discovered that Lu Ping had surprisingly slowed down his pace and even seemed to have stopped. However, this didn’t cause much hesitation on Qiao Ying’s part.

“Are you confident because you rely on speed? Then I don’t have anything to say to you, because, speed is indeed the way of a king! Your arrogance is justified!” As Qiao Ying finished speaking, the distance between him and Lu Ping had already reduced to three meters.

“However, this time, I will not be careless again!” Qiao Ying shouted. Being three meters apart, he didn’t directly rush towards Lu Ping, instead, he turned and diagonally charged towards Lu Ping’s side.

Lu Ping immediately turned his body and caught up to his movement. However, Qiao Ying had already turned again; he scurried and jumped in mid-air without the slightest decrease in his speed, on the contrary, it felt

as if his speed had actually increased.

“Your speed is extraordinary, however, can your vision keep up with my movements?” Qiao Ying didn’t launch an immediate assault, instead, he kept making such quick movements and changing positions. At first, Xi Fan was following Qiao Ying’s movements, but soon after, he was only able to catch incomplete shadows in his eyes and was incapable of keeping up with Qiao Ying’s position anymore.

Too quick! Xi Fan’s third Heavenly Layer realm of Infusion’s realm was absolutely incapable of keeping up with such a speed.

“You should know, speed is not just for running!!”

Qiao Ying had already been preparing to launch a strike before he was finished speaking. Xi Fan, who had no foundation in Sound’s soul, felt this voice had arrived right next to his ears from some distant place within an instant.

Where?

His eyes only perceived Qiao Ying’s residual images. The latter was right next to his body and he was still unable to discern the location.

Lu Ping, who was originally following Qiao Ying’s turns and movements but hadn’t made any movements in the last few moments, suddenly moved.

He turned his body and raised his hand.

The movement of his hand was ordinary and very simple, however, those countless afterimages in the eyes of Xi Fan abruptly faded away and finally converged to his front.

Lu Ping’s right hand had once again grabbed onto Qiao Ying’s face. Amidst Qiao Ying’s rapid movements and Xi Fan’s absolute blankness, a hand casually stretched forward and accurately grabbed the former.....

Xi Fan didn’t know what to say; at this moment, he even sympathized with Qiao Ying a bit.

However, this time, Lu Ping didn’t just lightly push Qiao Ying down like

before. The instant Lu Ping had grabbed Qiao Ying's face, the former's body slightly sank, and while his left hand was still supporting Xi Fan on his back, his right hand shoved Qiao Ying towards the ground.

"Ha ha." Before the two sides could even exchange some words, a voice once again echoed from the Tian Zhao institute above, however, this time, the voice had surprisingly been substituted by a clear and crisp female's voice.

"Things have surprisingly become interesting!" The female's voice stated:

"Now issuing the latest announcement: Point count of the straw hat youngster has been promoted to six points; red-clothed girl's point count has been promoted to eight points; grey-clothed youngster's point count has been promoted to three points. Third-grade students, don't get taken out by our guests!"

Ah....I've already been taken out...

Once again collapsed on the ground and facing the sky, Qiao Ying was bitterly thinking. He could feel that the strength behind this time's throw was starkly different than the previously time's. Did I truly get taken out this time?

Who on earth is this guy?

Qiao Ying's face was being covered, fortunately, one of his eyes was still exposed to the outside. He carefully looked at the individual in front of his eyes; the latter seemed like a youngster of about his age, seeming completely ordinary without a single extraordinary feature.

Ah! I was careless.

Qiao Ying was feeling distress and anger. However, who could have imagined that an ordinary individual without a shred of Soul's Power not only had a speed comparable to him but could even capture him in a single hit while he was making such high-paced movements.

This cannot be blamed on me! In addition of being vexed, Qiao Ying was also feeling extremely aggrieved. The guy before his eyes was defying

every kind of reasoning.

‘Dying here is really unjust...’ He slowly closed his eyes and began to await death. However, at this moment, the hand covering his face abruptly left.

Huh?

Qiao Ying again opened his eyes in puzzlement. The grey-clothed youngster and the guy he was carrying, both of them, were looking at him.

“Don’t be nervous.” Xi Fan said with a smile. He’d approximately guessed Qiao Ying’s frame of mind by carefully observing the sequence of his movements and minute expressions.

“We are not bad guys, and we have not come to stir up trouble either.” Xi Fan discerned that the latter had an expression as if they were about to torture him, thus, Xi Fan first comforted him.

“Huh?” As soon as Qiao Ying heard these words, he let out a sigh of relief in his mind. Of course, he was still wary; who knows if the opposite side deliberately wanted to lower his guard in order to extract out some information from him.

“We are students of Zhai Feng institute in the Xia Feng region. The reason we intruded in Tian Zhao institute is also related to cultivation.” Xi Fan conversed in this manner. From his current observations, he estimated that this was a very suitable manner for conversing with a student of Tian Zhao institute.

“Oh!” Sure enough, Qiao Ying instantly revealed some expressions of realization, however, he blanked out soon after: “Zhai Feng?”

Clearly he had not heard Zhai Feng’s name before.

“A small institute. Our objective in coming to Tian Zhao institute is to look for a person. We are trying to find a person named Chu Ming. She is not a student; perhaps she is a teacher or isn’t, perhaps she once was and has left at present. Have you heard of her?” Xi Fan asked.

Qiao Ying shook his head. He hadn't heard this name before.

"This guy...." Lu Ping pointed towards the sky and said:

"Where is this voice announcing the information coming from?"

"Huh?" Qiao Ying immediately assumed a vigilant expression his face. Currently, the Transmission Room was only transmitting the information about the four intruders. Since the latter asked about this thing, they certainly had some plans. However, if he pretended to not know, it would sound too fake.

Qiao Ying sneaked a glance at his right. Not a single individual could be seen after he turned at the intersection. He wouldn't be getting any help, however, he quickly came up with a plan.

"It's the Transmission Room. You want me to take you there?" Qiao Ying said.

"All right!" Lu Ping nodded: "Where?"

"This way." Qiao Ying crawled up and about to lead them, when Lu Ping and Xi Fan, who was on his back, exchanged a glance and nodded together. Lu Ping's hand chopped out at a lightning fast speed and struck behind Qiao Ying's neck.

Plop.

Qiao Ying collapsed on the ground, and this time, he completely lost his consciousness.

Xi Fan let out a soft sigh. The faint expressions this guy made, while he was thinking, were too obvious, for him to not be detected.

"Transmission Room; at least we know this place's name." Xi Fan said.

"We can go there by asking around." Lu Ping said.

"You should put on that guy's clothes." Xi Fan said.

Lu Ping nodded. All the students of the Tian Zhao institute were wearing the same outfit. How can more than a thousand students know everyone amongst them? Just wearing an outfit of the institute would be

enough to pass off as a student. With this identity, they could easily ask around the location of Transmission Room.

“However, you are rather exposed. I won’t be able to carry you anymore.” Lu Ping said.

“I will wait for you here. You go and ask around.” Xi Fan said.

“Ok. I will be back soon.” Lu Ping set Xi Fan against the lateral side of the Main building. Actually, there was no hiding place nearby; shrinking back in a corner was better than nothing. Subsequently, Lu Ping hurriedly sped off to make inquiries, and after completing his inquiries and casually getting another Tian Zhao institute’s outfit, when he returned back, both Xi Fan and the unconscious Qiao Ying were nowhere to be seen.

Above his head, the female’s voice again echoed:

“Latest announcement: The wheelchair-youngster has been captured; congratulations fellow student Shen Chi for obtaining two points. Furthermore, straw hat youngster has been promoted to eight points, and the red-clothed girl has been promoted to ten points. Everybody, continue to work hard!”

‘Xi Fan has been arrested just now!’

Thereupon, without a second thought, Lu Ping rushed to the southern end of the road.

Chapter 49: Ten Times Promotion.

Shen Chi, like his name, was a little late and slow in everything he did. Therefore, a short while after the rest of the third students had swarmed in from every direction like a tide to search for the targets, he unhurriedly came out of the institute.

Su Tang and Mo Lin, these two intruders had already disappeared into the east and west side woods respectively. He turned his head and caught the figure of Qiao Ying turning at the intersection that was on the east side of the Main Building.

Shen Chi was always behind regardless of anybody, therefore, even though this figure was that of the third grade's fastest student Qiao Ying, Shen Chi was pretty much indifferent. He, slowly and unhurriedly, followed after him.

Afterwards, at this moment, he was unable to conceal his happiness.

Many people wouldn't put some insignificant two points in their eyes, however, for a guy like him who was always a bit late regardless of whatever he did, getting these two points with his cultivation made him extremely pleased.

"Therefore, they say that coming early is not as good as coming timely." He conceitedly said to Qiao Ying who was beside him.

Qiao Ying was carrying Xi Fan and was still running pretty fast.

"Because I helped you, you should carry him, and these two points are mine as well." Shen Chi had said these words to Qiao Ying after waking him up.

Qiao Ying didn't oppose; he only wished that Shen Chi could move a bit quicker.

"Since that guy has more companions, he seems like a person who would abandon his comrades. However, I think he will return soon to look for this guy." Qiao Ying said looking towards Shen Chi.

"Is that so?" Shen Chi turned more excited as soon as he heard.

“Then lower the speed.” Shen Chi said:

“If he will surely return, why not wait for the opportunity. We can equally divide these two points.”

“Because he can defeat me with a single hand. What about you? How many of his hands would you be able to take?” Qiao Ying said.

“Then why is he only two points?”

“I also want to know.” Qiao Ying wasn’t in a good mood. He naturally wanted to know why a two-point-ordinary individually possessed a strength that could defeat him in a single strike.

“Then we should go quicker.” Seldom would Shen Chi feel a sense of urgency. He was also very anxious for his hard to come by two points.

“He is here.” However, Qiao Ying, who had been continuously looking behind his back during this whole journey, had already spotted a figure, emerging out from the intersection they’d just turned, and rushing towards them at a lightning fast speed.

“Then fine!” Since the enemy was already in sight, Shen Chi began to make small movements, seeming like he was warming up.

“It looks like the only option left is I will hold him off while you escape! But keep in mind, these two points are mine.....mine!”

A wind current!

Shen Chi truly only felt a wind current. He didn’t see anything, while that distant human figure suddenly disappeared, only leaving behind a current of wind.

What type of speed is this?

Qiao Ying was extremely quick, but when he moved at high speed, he still left behind incomplete images. However, at this speed, nothing was left behind. It was so quick that the guy’s figure straightaway disappeared.

Shen Chi immediately turned his head saw Qiao Ying, who had run off to a short distance, flying in the air and crashing onto the ground, and the

fall seemed pretty hard too. Meanwhile, his two points were already on that guy's back.

Qiao Ying couldn't help but retreat back a step.

"Hello....." He forced out a smiling expression.

"Hello." The latter replied to him and sped off carrying his two points on the back.

Shen Chi didn't chase. He slowly walked up to Qiao Ying and slumped on the ground beside him.

Qiao Ying was lying on the ground like before, facing the sky. Apparently he didn't intend to move at all.

"He wasn't wearing grey clothes...." Shen Chi suddenly said.

"This is your main concern?" Qiao Ying wasn't in a good mood.

"In your opinion, how many points should he amount to?"

"I don't know. I am not going to chase regardless of any amount of points."

"You gave up?"

"Yes, I gave up."

"This is not like you. Although he is very difficult to deal with, I feel he doesn't have any ill will. You don't need to be afraid." Shen Chi said.

"True. He doesn't have ill will, otherwise, I would have died many times by now.

"However, my outfit is in pieces. Even ** is torn. My buttocks will come out, how am I supposed to chase?" Qiao Ying furiously said.

"Oh." Shen Chi nodded. He felt this reason was completely justified. He stood up and took off his jacket.

"Shield your buttocks!" He threw his jacket towards Qiao Ying: "I'll go and watch." He relaxedly and slowly walked towards the direction Lu Ping had just run off to.

“Hey!” Qiao Ying shouted from the ground.

“What?”

“They might go to the Transmission room.” Qiao Ying said.

“Transmission room?” Shen Chi raised his head and looked towards the sky: “That’s very high.”

That’s right. The Transmission Room was indeed very high, in fact, it could even be considered as the highest location in the entire Tian Zhao institute. The Tian Zhao institute had a Transmission Tower, and the Transmission Room was at the apex of this tower.

Such a construction was obviously very illustrious in the Tian Zhao institute, thus, Lu Ping was easily able to ask its location. Although the counterpart did feel a bit strange upon hearing such a question from a student of Tian Zhao, they didn’t think too much about it and subconsciously answered Lu Ping.

Currently, Lu Ping was sprinting towards the Transmission Tower with Xi Fan on his back. The Transmission Tower, which seemed to be piercing the clouds, was visible from almost anywhere inside the Tian Zhao institute, thus, Lu Ping didn’t have to worry about losing the way.

At this moment, from the Transmission Room, a sound once again echoed above the Tian Zhao institute:

“Ha ha...more and more interesting.” That female seemed very happy:

“Huge turnaround! Grey-clothed youngster, seemingly the most ordinary grey-clothed youngster.... Wen Yan warns everybody to be careful, he has deeply concealed himself. Announcement: Regretfully, the recently obtained two points by fellow student Shen Chi are temporarily taken back. In addition, the point count of the grey-clothed is promoted from two points to.....” That female calling herself Wen Yan stretched her voice and paused, building up climax for a full three seconds before again announcing in a loud voice:

“Twenty points!!!”

The astonished voices of countless experts having realms in Sound's soul echoed in the Tian Zhao institute. It should be known that even the Perceiver having the Strength's Soul sixth Heavenly Layer realm was only seen as six points at first. After that perceiver's actual display of strength did her points increased to eight points and consequently to ten points. However, currently, this grey-clothed youngster's point increased straightaway from two to twenty; a ten-fold increase! What on earth did he do?

"How is this possible?" Amongst those countless voices, one voice was exceptionally distinct. It was the same voice which Lu Ping and the rest had heard in the beginning:

"He is only an ordinary person. How can he amount to twenty points?"

"Fellow students Shi Ao, this question of yours is against the rules. I cannot answer you." Wen Yan replied through the air.

"In that case, can you let us, discipline squadron, get involved?" Shi Ao asked.

"Ok. Discipline Squadron is permitted to interfere. Same point count will be applicable for you, however, you are limited to students of the third grade."

"Understood." Shi Ao replied.

The conversation through the air was completely unrestrained, seeming like they absolutely didn't care that Lu Ping's group would hear them. They had clearly seen Lu Ping's strength, however, it only caused his point count to go up from two points to twenty points. Evidently his strength didn't draw too much astonishment from them. Apparently this only meant 'more and more interesting' for them.

"Tian Zhao institute's strength is really no small matter!" Xi Fan sighed with lament after analyzing their attitude.

"Apparently they can see my movements." Lu Ping said.

"So, this is just a game of cat and mouse for them?" Xi Fan said.

“We will go to the Transmission Room as soon as possible and explain the purpose of our visit.” Lu Ping said while increasing his speed.

“Oh...So it turns out you were actually.....Sure enough, it is the most direct solution.” Xi Fan repeatedly nodded his head; borrowing the Transmission Room to announce the purpose of their visit to the entire institute. Ever since Lu Ping heard the first voice transmission, he had a simple and peaceful idea to settle things.

Chapter 50: Transmission Tower's Apex

The Transmission Tower was circular and a hundred meters high. Apart from the Transmission Room at the apex, all Transmission Tower had was a circular staircase to climb these hundred meters.

By the time Shen Chi arrived under the tower, the transmission room had already made another announcement. The straw hat youngster and the red-clothed girl both again had a two points increase, which made their points as ten and twelve.

Were these increase in the points a provocation or reassessments based on their strength? At this point, nobody could say for certain. These announcements were not giving any definite information.

“Nothing on the grey-clothed youngster. Is he going to the Transmission Room or not?” Shen Chi, standing below the Transmission Tower, raised his head and looked up.

“I will go and take a look!” He mumbled to himself and walked towards the staircase. Neither was he lazy nor he was afraid of troubles; he was just phlegmatic, that’s all.

Transmission Tower’s Top.

Transmission Room was not just a simple room. It had equipment made of special materials, which could be enabled with the help of Sound’s soul, after which, the entire Tian Zhao institute could be covered with sound.

Wen Yan was sitting in the Transmission Room, seeming a little bored as she fiddled with the microphone in her hand that could only be initiated by the Sound’s soul. She hadn’t been able to issue a new announcement for quite a while now.

The Transmission Room had a circular framework completely made up of transparent crystal rocks. The hawk-vision from here was not much different than what one would be able to see after walking up to the observation deck at the top. However, a little bit of difference was that by

initializing the crystal mirror on the observation deck by Infusion's soul one could see distant things more clearly. However, Wen Yan was not fond of doing it, because, winds were too fast at the Observation deck, and it would mess up her hair. Of course, the more important reason was that she was a Linked One of the Infusion's soul, and by using the first level ability obtained after the Linking of the Infusion's soul, 'Distant Vision', she could clearly see any corner in the entire institute which she could see using the crystal mirror.

However, at this moment, she was feeling bored. Because the grey-clothed youngster, whom she'd been paying the most attention, had suddenly disappeared after entering an area of woods.

As for the straw hat youngster and the red-clothed girl, their abilities had more or less already been revealed. One had an extremely rich experience in fleeing, while the other had the sixth Heavenly Layer of the Strength's soul yet displayed an astonishing performance, however, this was all. These two didn't seem capable of producing any more surprises. Their points could just be increased with time in order to arouse everybody.

Only the strength displayed by grey-clothed youngster could astonish and puzzle people. This caused Wen Yan very curious; she looked forward to more such displays from him. However, unfortunately, they'd lost him in the woods. The students who wished to catch the thirty points¹ were obviously a lot, however, it seemed like none of them were making any progress. Now, the Discipline Squadron had already been involved. They were not like ordinary students who couldn't cooperate and instead competed against each other. Discipline Squadron had begun a coordinated search under unified instructions; this was their most distinctive feature than the rest of the students.

"Where the hell are you? Quickly come out." Wen Yan employed 'Distant Vision' and once again scanned all the positions that she could. She still didn't discover anything, thus, she had no other choice but to consider that the latter had already begun to move through the blind spots of the Transmission Room.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Wen Yan suddenly raised that costly microphone in her hand and knocked it against the metal pole beside her, and a sharp, clear voice transmitted to the Observation Deck above.

"You above, have you found the grey-clothed youngster?" Wen Yan yelled somewhat irritably.

"Senior sister Wen Yan...." A head suddenly popped down from the ceiling above. It anxiously looked towards the microphone in Wen Yan's hand as he continued:

"If you want to say something, you can directly speak. I can hear you; you don't need to use the microphone every time."

"Would you be able to hear me with such a wind above?" Wen Yan said in an irritated voice. Evidently, she was only trying to find something to vent off.

"Wind is...currently not too much. You want to come up and have a look?" That individual said.

"I asked you if you have found the grey-clothed youngster, and you are spouting so much nonsense!" Wen Yan said.

"No, not a single time. Don't know where did he run off to." That guy was gloomy, however, at this moment, he suddenly saw that at the end of the staircase behind Wen Yan's body, an individual, with another individual on his back, was, step-by-step, slowly emerging.

"Trying to find me?" That individual said as he walked out of the staircase's entrance with that other individual on his back. At this moment, he was not in grey-clothed, instead was fully dressed in the outfit of Tian Zhao. Of course, the Transmission Room and the Observation Deck was already aware of it. They hadn't disclosed this information, that's all.

"Oh?" Wen had already turned after she heard the voice. Her realm in the Sound's soul was not bad, thus, she'd already heard someone coming up. It's just that the Transmission Room was not a restricted area, anyone

could come here as long as he/she didn't dislike the heavy work of climbing so many stairs too much. Therefore, she hadn't cared about this thing too much. As she discovered that the individual who came up was the grey-clothed youngster whom they'd been searching for all along, her entire being suddenly perked up.

"Hah! Interesting." Her listless eyes suddenly shined.

As Xi Fan and Lu Ping heard that this was the same woman who was making the announcements, they couldn't help themselves from sizing her up a few times either.

She was undoubtedly an extremely pretty girl. Especially, her skin's texture was very good and complexion was very white. This vastly differed from the mountainous Xia Feng region's girls. Of course, this was not Lu Ping and Xi Fan's main concern. They were about to start the conservation, however, the girl was much faster than them.

"Surprisingly, the guy we were searching for has come here." Wen Yan stood up and continued:

"However, the problem is that I am a fourth-grade student. I won't be able to obtain any points by capturing you, and junior brothers and sisters will blame me as well. What should be done?"

"Senior sister, you can capture them and give them to me." That head stretching down from above said with a smirk.

"Seems like the only option is to let you have the profits." Wen Yan sighed.

"Good luck, senior sister!" That guy yelled.

"I can't be careless." Wen Yan said. However, there wasn't a little bit of caution visible in her, because, she'd made her move even before she finished talking.

"Hey..." Xi Fan didn't expect that upon arriving after so much trouble, without being provided with a single opportunity to talk, he would see the latter directly charging towards him. This girl's speed didn't seem any less than the speed of that third grade's student reputed as 'Sonic'.

“At our Tian Zhao institute, we fourth graders are something different.” Wen Yan said and stretched her hand out aiming directly for Lu Ping’s face; this was the same method that Lu Ping had used on Qiao Ying several times.

Lu Ping quickly dodged and stretched out his hand in return. However, the strike which Qiao Ying was absolutely incapable of resisting, returned with air when used against Wen Yan.

“It’s nothing new!” By the time Wen Yan’s voice transmitted out, she’d already reached behind Lu Ping.

Lu Ping, without withdrawing his arm, turn around and struck. Wen Yan brought up an arm. However, the excessive power coming from Lu Ping’s strike immediately changed her expression. She hurriedly borrowed its momentum to move her body to the side. With a staggering body, she directly clashed against a table and knocked it over. The force of Lu Ping’s strike had finally been neutralised.

Although this dodge from Wen Yan was somewhat pathetic, just the fact that she was instantly able to determine that she would not be able to resist the force in Lu Ping’s strike and moved her body to side using this force, already made her extraordinary.

Her face was covered with astonishment. In the end, Lu Ping had exceeded her imagination. However, her expression, nevertheless, reinstated quickly.

“It’s only interesting this way.” She said and immediately launched another round of attacks.

She was very quick. However, her quickness did not resemble Qiao Ying who tried to look for an opening by distracting the opponent with his quick movements. Her quickness lied in delivering quick attacks. Her movements were quick and her attacks were also quick. Her instantaneously flickering fists and kicks coming towards Xi Fan, caused his two eyes to be dizzy, which almost caused him to throw up.

She was quick, however, Lu Ping was not slow either.

“Take care!” Lu Ping said to Xi Fan and began delivering punches and kicks with a speed that was not inferior to Wen Yan’s speed. Within an instant, their blows collided in succession, though, its sound was not too much. Wen Yan knew that Lu Ping’s strength was astonishing, thus, she did not fight him with strength, instead, her blows, just after making contact or even before making contact with Lu Ping, went astray, consequently, she again launched a high-speed attack from a different angle.

Evenly matched?

From the perspective of an observer, it certainly seemed as such. However, a smile emerged on Wen Yan’s face.

She didn’t know how she should describe Lu Ping’s strength. In short, he ought to possess a heavenly body. His manner of employing his strength seemed too crude and too simple to Wen Yan. It could even be said that he was using his strength as he pleased; not a single bit of skill was involved. Otherwise, with a strength that she couldn’t resist and a speed equal to her, how could he not have already won?

“You still have a lot to learn!” She said. She had already discerned Lu Ping’s weak points and strong points. She prepared to finish this; she punched with both of her hands seemingly a fancy move. Not out of her expectations, Lu Ping’s both arms easily stretched open.

“It’s like this!” A palm shot out to take hold of Lu Ping’s head. This time Lu Ping was unable to dodge. Resist? After being deceived by her false move, he didn’t have enough time to do so.

“Your thirty points!” She said and thought about turning Lu Ping with her right hand which was grabbing the latter’s neck. However, it didn’t move.....

This...

Wen Yan was again astonished.

She was already clear that she couldn’t compete with Lu Ping in terms of strength. However, she truly didn’t expect such a difference in their

strength that even after taking hold of the opponent, her strength wouldn't have the slightest effect on him.

Without having enough time to use an increased strength again or employ an ability, Wen Yan immediately retreated. Wen Yan hurriedly retreated. However, Lu Ping's both hands, which were tricked open, had already turned back. However, in Wei Yan's eyes, Lu Ping's moves were always full of loopholes, and this time was no different.

Dodge!

Wen Yan inclined her body in the gap and dodged Lu Ping's strike. She was about to retreat and make some distance, however, a strong gale of wind attacked her neck with extremely distinct Strength's soul reverberating inside it: 'This should be....third Heavenly Layer strength's soul?'

The realm of Strength's soul was simply unworthy of mentioning in Tian Zhao institute. However, at this moment, a strike of this realm had been delivered at the best moment and the best position.

Two Point youngster....

Xi Fan, who had been relying on Lu Ping to not get captured all along, with this strike, actually caused Wen Yan, who had been completely confident against Lu Ping, to find herself in huge trouble. Because she was unable to find any means to block this strike.

The chop struck the target.

'Third Heavenly Layer of strength's soul, I should be able to resist, right?'

This was the final trace of hope in Wen Yan's mind, however, couldn't....

If one were to say the Lu Ping's skill was very bad, and he was not able to display even fifty percent of his strength in his strikes, then this two-point youngster's strike in timing, the accuracy of position, and control of speed and power was exceedingly outstanding. This was a skill of displaying more than hundred percent of the one's complete strength.

Third Heavenly Layer of the Strength's Soul, was already sufficient.

Chapter 51: Impure Soul's Power.

From the beginning, Wen Yan had always been interested in the grey-clothed youngster. She never expected that the final strike, that knocked her down, would be delivered by the most useless individual among the four intruders, the two point-youngster, who, in order to escape, had to be carried by the grey-clothed youngster throughout the entire way.

The strike containing the perfectly controlled third Heavenly Layer Strength's soul followed by the sixth Heavenly Layer Essence's Soul had struck on Wen Yan's nervous system. She was down; consciousness, but not in control of her body

"Restrain her!" Xi Fan was not complacent just because of this. He was able to create this opportunity only because Lu Ping's consideration and the opponent's complete disregard for him. Otherwise, going by her lightning fast fists and kicks, he would have been beaten black and blue by her long ago. Xi Fan was completely uncertain on the extent of the damage his strike had caused to the opponent, after all, he was absolutely unable to discern Wen Yan's realm. The only thing he knew was that she was a Linked One; the strength of the students of this institute was truly too frightening.

Upon hearing Xi Fan's words, Lu Ping stepped forward. Wen Yan's injury was evidently much higher than what Xi Fan expected, thus, Lu Ping restrained her in a relaxed manner. Subsequently, Lu Ping looked up. That head was still hanging down. At first, it was all smiles, however, at this moment, it was completely stunned. It suddenly shivered and disappeared inside as it saw Lu Ping looking in its direction.

"Senior Sister Wen Yan, I will call reinforcements!"

Along with the sound of these words, a figure suddenly streaked down the crystal window in front of Lu Ping and Xi Fan. That guy had actually directly jumped from the observation deck!

"Don't tell me....." Astonished Lu Ping and Xi Fan immediately rushed forward to take a look. Jumping down straight from a hundred meter

tower, what extraordinary ability did this guy have?

“You don’t need to look, he isn’t some amazing guy.” Wen Yan said while still being restrained by Lu Ping.

Leaning forward, Xi Fan and Lu Ping were also able to see that the guy didn’t have some extraordinary flying ability. He was only climbing down in circles on the tower’s circular surface. Of course, this kind of feat was absolutely impossible for an ordinary individual. However, for a cultivator possessing courage and sufficient Strength’s Soul, this kind of feat was no big deal. Going by this guy’s skill, he would be able to make many such trips in the time one would have to take by using the staircase.

After seeing that this wasn’t something extraordinary, Xi Fan and Lu Ping turned their head back inside the Transmission Room. Xi Fan glanced around and saw a soft whip hanging down from a hook on the wall.

“Try that one.” Xi Fan said pointing towards the soft whip. Wen Yan’s strength was extremely formidable. Although his attack on her nervous system using Essence’s Soul seemed successful, he didn’t know how long would it last. Relying on Lu Ping to restrain her all the time didn’t seem a good idea. However, from their perspectives as cultivators, a common rope would not be of much use; they had to use special tools. Xi Fan and Lu Ping obviously didn’t have any such tools, but, luckily, they were able to find this soft whip. Since it seemed created by cultivators, it would be at least better than an ordinary rope.

“What good luck.” Wen Yan mumbled. Lu Ping placed Xi Fan on the chair and fetched the soft whip. He sampled it and nodded towards Xi Fan, before saying:

“Very sturdy.”

“Of course, this is made up of Tian Luo wine.” Wen Yan said.

“Our luck is truly too good.” Xi Fan said. Tian Luo wine is an extremely rare plant. It was soft and flexible, yet, extremely tough. Be it bow strings, soft whip, or any other thing, just by relying on the fact that a thing was made up of Tian Luo wine, it could be easily ranked as third level tool.

Lu Ping refrained from commenting and swiftly return back, before tying up Wen Yan's hands and legs. While Lu Ping was busy tying her, Xi Fan was persuading her:

"Don't be anxious, we do not have any evil intentions."

Wen Yan smiled. She was evidently clear that they were tying her because they were apprehensive of her, and not because they had wicked thoughts.

"It goes like this. We are from Zhai Feng institute of Xia Feng region. We came in Tian Zhao institute to look for a person named Chu Min. Perhaps she is a teacher or once was. Do you know her?"

"I don't." Wen Yan replied.

"All right.....in that case, can you explain our side to the institute?" Xi Fan.

"That won't do." Wen Yan shook her head.

"Why?" Xi Fan was somewhat flabbergasted.

"Because that would be just boring." Wen Yan smiled.

"You...are you confident because of your backing?" Xi Fan said.

"Right. What can you guys do to me?" Wen Yan said while twisting her body as if trying to look for a comfortable position. She didn't seem anxious due to being tied up at all.

Xi Fan and Lu Ping looked at each other's faces. What Wen Yan said was correct. They truly didn't have any means to deal with her. Who asked them to say that they didn't have any malice and were only trying to look for a person?

"How is this toy used?" Without any better options, Lu Ping and Xi Fan began to explore the Transmission Room on their own and soon discovered the microphone that Wen Yan used previously.

"Hello! Hello!" Lu Ping picked up the microphone and tested it. His voice was only heard by Xi Fan and Wen Yan.

“Hehe...” Wen Yan laughed.

“It’s definitely not that simple.” Xi Fan had been reading the expressions of Wen Yan all along. However, she was only smiling. When Lu Ping picked up the microphone, she only laughed and didn’t mind it at all.

“If one has to take help of an equipment even after using abilities, then, Sound’s soul would certainly be required to initialize this microphone, right?” Xi Fan said while carefully paying attention to Wen Yan’s expression.

“True.” In return, he didn’t have to decipher anything because Wen Yan very delightedly admitted this fact.

“Of course, it’s the Sound’s soul.” Xi Fan said.

“Of course!” Wen Yan smile became more cheerful. Xi Fan knew why was she so happy. She knew that his Sound’s soul was insufficient, and Lu Ping? Ordinary people don’t possess Soul’s Power!

But this time, Xi Fan also cheerfully smiled.

“Hey! Sound’s soul!” He said to Lu Ping.

“Huh?” Wen Yan astonished looked towards Lu Ping. Although Lu Ping’s strength was very strange, he didn’t have any Soul’s Power; this had been extremely clear.

However, Lu Ping, in an extremely confidently manner, had already placed the microphone in front of his mouth.

“Hello!”

Hello!

Suddenly, this word echoed everywhere above the Tian Zhao institute. It was extremely loud and extremely clear, however, subsequently....

Peng Peng Peng Peng....

Such noises began echoing inside the entire Transmission Room in an unbroken succession, from the microphone in Lu Ping’s hand to many

other components inside the Transmission Room. The entire room turned absolutely chaotic. Parts of the components exploded and flew all around, causing the three individuals inside the room to lower their heads and cover them with their hands.

After a short while, Transmission Room gradually returned to normal. The three individuals blankly stared all around. The Transmission Room had turned into an absolute mess. The microphone was just a part of the room's Sound Transmitting Equipment, however, at this moment, not only the microphone in the hand of Lu Ping, but the whole Transmission Room seemed as if it had suffered a devastating strike.

Wen Yan was stunned, and remained as such for a long time. However, eventually, she burst out in laughter. She was laughing so much that she began gasping for breath.

"You...." She looked towards Lu Ping.

"What is happening?" Xi Fan was completely blanked. Lu Ping also had no idea.

"Sound's Soul! This is a special material used for Sound Transmission. It can only transmit the Sound's Soul. What the are you trying to do?" Wen Yan said.

"Only Sound's soul?" Lu Ping scratched his head.

"That's right!"

"What are you doing?" Xi Fan looked towards Lu Ping.

"Uh....My Sound's soul is probably not pure enough." Lu Ping said.

It wasn't that Lu Ping didn't want to have a pure Soul's power. However, under the restrictions of the Intense Lock Soul, just the fact that he could sneak out Soul's Power, and, moreover, even sustain it long enough to employ, was already a miracle. Under such circumstances, if one wished to even achieve purity, that was just too difficult. The current Lu Ping was absolutely unable to accomplish such a feat. Therefore, even if he wanted to employ Sound's soul, a part of other souls would unavoidably be mixed with the Sound's soul during the process of stealing the Soul's Power

under the Intense Soul Lock. As a result, this equipment made of special material to transmit the Sound's soul had to immediately suffer a devastating blow.

"This time, I wouldn't be able to help you guys even if I wanted to." Wen Yan's smile became much more delighted. Previously, just because Wen Yan had struck the microphone once, that third-grade student had seemed as if his heart was aching. However, at this moment, the entire Transmission Room had been wrecked, and Wen Yan didn't seem concerned at all. For her, this all was just extremely interesting.

"What to do now?" Lu Ping and Xi Fan looked at each other in dismay. Originally, they'd expected that coming to the Transmission Room and explaining the purpose of their visit in Tian Zhao institute was an extremely simple matter. However, who could have imagined that running into this girl would be so unfitting for them, that, at this moment, their entire plan and hopes were completely destroyed.

The two were looking out the window blankly, however, at this moment, Lu Ping's expression suddenly changed.

Being tied up, Wen Yan was unable to move her hands or legs, thus, she arrived beside the window with the help of bounces. Evidently her nervous system had already been recovered, and being tied didn't cause her any trouble in using her abilities.

"Huh!" employ 'Distant Vision'. She could look much clearer than Xi Fan who was only at third Heavenly Layer of Infusion's soul.

"Oh, the straw hat youngster is already captured. Who captured him? Show me your face...." Wen Yan kept on talking.

"Oh, that girl is also more or less done!" Wen Yan said after looking in another direction.

"Actually, I admire her very much. Extremely brave and fierce. However, being like this would cause more sufferings as well, ah!"

As she was talking, along with a whoosh sound, she suddenly saw a figure sliding down outside the window.

“What demon!” Wen Yan jumped in fright. She quickly leaned forward and looked all around in the downward region. What she saw was that, Lu Ping’s figure, following the example of that third-grade youngster, was quickly climbing down the Tower. She turned her head, sure enough, only Xi Fan was left behind in the Transmission Room.

“What is that girl to him?” Wen Yan asked Xi Fan.

“Perhaps a person he had to protect even if he died!” Xi Fan said.

“Oh...then that’s, even more, interesting.” Wen Yan again looked outside, full of zest while incessantly muttering ‘hurry up...hurry up!’.

“Being slow is not bad either...!” At this moment, a voice came from the end of the staircase. Wen Yan turned her head and saw Shen Chi approaching in very slow steps.

“How come you are tied up like this?” Shen Chi smiled upon looking at Wen Yan’s appearance.

“None of your business!” Wen Yan ignored him and continued to look outside.

Shen Chi moved his vision and immediately spotted Xi Fan.

“How come it’s you again....” Xi Fan forced out a smile.

“Yes. It’s me again.” Shen Chi excitedly asked:

“Where is the other guy?”

“Just left.” Xi Fan answered.

“Oh.” Shen Chi let out a sigh of relief. Next moment, he turned even more excited.

“That’s why I just said: being slow is not bad either !”

“Two points... have been recovered.” She Chi declared his victory.

“Grow up!” Wen Yan turned around and rolled her eyes.

Chapter 52: Unstoppable

Southeast!

Lu Ping climbed down the Tower at a lightning fast speed; a single thought and a single direction in his mind.

Shen Chi had untied Wen Yan. Both of them watched Lu Ping as he sprinted ahead with a speed that had already become inconceivable for them.

“Did he not use his full power just now?” Wen Yan suddenly turned around and asked Xi Fan.

“I don’t know.” Xi Fan said.

This was not a lie. He truly had no idea what would Lu Ping’s full power feel like.

“Can you support me, so that I can also look?” Xi Fan said.

“Are you joking?” Shen Chi said. Though, he did place Xi Fan along with his wheelchair beside the window nevertheless. Together, the three people watched Lu Ping.

“How is that girl doing over there?” Xi Fan asked. His realm was not high enough to see at such a distance.

Wen Yan, who was only watching Lu Ping until now, turned her head and looked in Su Tang’s direction upon hearing Xi Fan’s question.

“Uh...she is surrounded...but tenaciously resisting...oh!..” At the end of her sentence, Wen Yan exclaimed.

“What?” Xi Fan asked.

“What a ferocious fist. Is this truly Strength’s soul sixth Heavenly Layer? Hard to imagine...”

Wen Yan found it hard to conceive, so did the other students of Tian Zhao institute who were chasing after her.

Infusion’s soul third Heavenly Layer, Sound’s soul third Heavenly Layer,

Qi's soul first heavenly layer, Pivot's soul first Heavenly Layer, Strength's soul sixth Heavenly Layer, and no realm in Essence's soul.

This realm was not much in the eyes of the students of the Tian Zhao institute. Although the sixth layer of the Strength's soul could produce strong battle capabilities, as far as these students were concerned, no other individual could possibly be this hard to subdue. Now they had realized that, what they considered as the sixth layer of the Strength's soul, had some disparity from this girl's sixth layer of Strength's Soul.

Peng!

Fist vs Fist. Strength vs Strength

A muffled sound rang out.

This sound was not produced by a quick exchange of blows, instead, this was a repressed sound produced due to a resolute collision between two fists that were under the influence of rapidly moving power of Strength's soul.

Immediately afterward, one individual was blown away upside down. Subsequently, he fell on the ground and rolled once, before crashing into a tree.

Su Tang had to retreat two steps back as well. Her fist was still clenched as before. It had a few bloodstains; some of her opponent, some of her own.

Su Tang sucked in a deep breath and retreated back a step in a very natural manner.

No one stepped forward.

The students of Tian Zhao had her surrounded. All of them were thoroughly astonished by her strength. Not just her fighting strength, but, her stamina to preserve until now, was astonishing as well. Although her appearance seemed weary, if someone else were to take her place, he would have found it difficult to even stand. And her? Her fist was still clenched and raised, and her figure moved back and forth around her position. She didn't seem out of her fighting shape at all.

Tian Zhao students were looking at her, and she was looking back at them. They hadn't attacked in groups because if they had done so, dividing Su Tang's point count would have unavoidably created some troubles among themselves. However, after seeing several students blasted away one after another, none of them hastily charged.

"Truly useless!" In the Transmission Room, upon seeing such actions of these students from afar, Wen Yan subconsciously turned around to look for the microphone, intending to scold them a little. However, as she turned around and looked at the completely messed up room, she realized that the Transmission Room had already been destroyed by Lu Ping.

A situation that had ruined Wen Yan's mood, in Xi Fan's opinion, was obviously a good news. However, the next moment, he heard Shen Chi saying:

"That girl won't be able to preserve much longer!"

Xi Fan was not much surprised because Shen Chi could also clearly see that side's situation. He was unable to sense the latter's realm as well; a Linked One without a doubt. The realms of the students of the Tian Zhao institute were too high compared to the students of their Zhai Feng or the Xia Feng institute.

"All depends on whether this youngster would be able to hurry in time or not." Wen Yan again looked towards the darting figure of Lu Ping.

"That girl has opted for a defensive retreat as well!" Shen Chi said.

"Is that so?" Wen Yan again turned her head in Su Tang's direction.

Su Tang was retreating; calm, collected, and unhurried. She had already retreated back three steps. She was attentively watching the movements of every student surrounding her, prepared to welcome charge of any student at any time. None of the students made any move. They only advanced three steps, keeping up with Su Tang's three steps. They seemed to have decided not to confront Su Tang head-on anymore.

In return, Su Tang suddenly turned around and swiftly dashed ahead.

"Trying to run!"

Of course, some students were already attentively keeping an eye on her path of retreat. At this moment, not stepping forward to obstruct her won't do. One left and one right, two students rushed out and immediately arranged themselves as a closed door.

However, Su Tang was already prepared. She immediately extended her two fists, one left and one right, attacking the two individuals who were in front of her.

The two individuals didn't dare resist her strikes head-on. They immediately dodged sideways while stretching out their hands and jabbing at Su Tang's fists. However, Su Tang suddenly pulled her fists in and sent elbow strikes towards both sides.

This time, the two individuals were unable to defend and were struck head-on. One was blasted away left, one right. Su Tang's speed didn't lower in the slightest. She directly jumped across the several stairs that were in front of her. She was greeted by an ancient looking building in front of her. She contemplated on whether to directly charge into the building or not.

The masses of students chasing behind her would obviously not miss such an opportunity. This old and simple construction surrounded by the woods was their Tian Zhao institute's library, not a restricted area. They were about to charge inside, however, they suddenly heard a pleasantly surprised shout from the woods behind them: "Thirty points!"

"Ya! Thirty points."

A figure of a man flew past them.

Everyone was about to step forward. With the appearance of thirty points, they didn't mind temporarily setting aside the twelve points at all.

However, subsequently, everybody clearly saw that this figure was not some thirty points, rather was a student of Tian Zhao just like them, who'd flew all the way here due to being struck.

"This guy is so ferocious as well!" Everyone was astonished. In the beginning, everybody had ignored Lu Ping. Furthermore, when Qiao Ying

fixed his attention on Lu Ping, everyone believed they won't be able to fight over Lu Ping, thus none of them had personally seen Lu Ping's strength. How did he get thirty points? They were extremely curious as well.

However, they found out soon after.

Even more formidable strength, and even more quick speed!

By the time that figure dropped down, another figure had already emerged out from the woods behind at a lightning fast speed. Following the figure's appearance, various kinds of shouts and cries could be heard. Apparently, these were the voices of a group chasing after him, and going by their shouts, they seemed quite far off.

"It's these guys!"

Five students had been standing afar from the very beginning. Their uniform was somewhat different than the rest of the students. On their collars was a golden circle, and on their back, two words were embroidered in an extremely clear manner which betrayed their identity:

"Discipline Squadron."

They had been attentively watching the exchange between the two sides, but had no intention of joining. And in return, rest of the students hadn't paid any attention to their existence.

Lasting until the appearance of Lu Ping.

After which, they immediately sprung into action. While the other students, feeling that Lu Ping's strength was strange, were retreating and discussing among themselves, these five immediately charged out of the crowd with extreme tact.

As they emerged out, they'd already arranged themselves in a V-shape, open towards Lu Ping's charge, and shouted in chorus:

"We are..."

Peng!

They were all ready to announce their identity, however, they were only

able to say two words, before the individual at the core of their formation had already been blasted away.

“It’s the exact same feeling!” Inside the Transmission Room, Shen Chi slapped the table in front of him and exclaimed.

“Just like a current of wind!”

That’s right, a current of wind.....

The five individuals in V formation had this exact feeling. They were announcing their name and were about to execute their operation, however, how could they have ever believed that their opponent would be so quick that their V formation would not be able to resist in the slightest. The individual in the core of their formation was blasted away, and what they felt was truly a wind current and appearance of an indistinct human figure.

Peng!

The individual who was blasted away directly flew over the stairs and crashed against the big old-fashioned door of the library. Along with a snap sound, the door sprang open and vertically flew inside along with that individual.

Lu Ping swept past the stairs at a lightning fast speed. However, at this moment, from beyond that collapsed wooden door, a voice came through, furthermore, many students who had good realms in Qi’s soul sniffed an alcoholic smell:

“Who is creating trouble here?”

Chapter 53: The Drunkard Woman

The library was simple and old-fashioned. In the beginning, the library just had a circle of tiny saplings around it. With the time, these tiny saplings had now turned into gigantic and dense trees, and the library concealed in between them seemed to emit a special aura. Though, in terms of illumination, this library couldn't be praised at all.

Out of the two of hinged doors, one was already down, and the other was opened flat out wide. Inside was a wide and extremely dim corridor. Fortunately, all the people present were cultivators. Just the realm of second Heavenly Layer in Infusion's soul was sufficient to clearly see in such illumination. All the people present were sniffing the smell of wine with their stretched out noses, and their vision was inside the library. Subsequently, they saw a woman emerging out of the darkness. She was holding a bottle of wine in her left hand and clasping a girl under her right arm; it was the red-clothed girl who'd just entered a moment ago. Apparently, the girl was already unconscious.

"Huh?" All the students of Tian Zhao were stupefied.

When they'd sniffed the smell of alcohol, they were faintly aware of whom did it belong to. However, when they saw that her appearing with the red-clothed girl in such a way, they found it somewhat hard to believe.

In their knowledge, this individual was a nonsensical depressed woman who did nothing but drank all day. Their only curiosity lied in the fact that why was this woman allowed to stay at the institute.

However, at present, the red-clothed girl whom they were absolutely unable to subdue, had been so easily captured by this woman within a moment after the former entered the library.

'This drunkard woman...could it be that she'd been concealing her strength all along?'

All the students remained silent in their astonishment Which left behind only a single cold voice:

“Let her go.” Lu Ping said.

Only three words sounded, however, each word was filled with a courage and determination that disregarded everything. Everybody knew that these words were not just for show. Because, by the time Lu Ping had finished speaking these words, he was already rushing ahead. It was a reckless charge that disregarded everything

“Careful!” Everybody subconsciously shouted. Everybody had witnessed Lu Ping’s velocity and strength themselves.

However, the drunkard woman only frowned slightly. Her expression, as she watched Lu Ping, did not have anxiousness or caution, but had curiosity. The reason for her curiosity was that how could a youngster who’d absolutely no Soul’s Power, possess such a tyrannical explosive strength.

Lu Ping had already waved his fist, and at this moment, a strong Soul’s Power eventually emerged. It continuously collided with the air, producing rumbling sounds like that of a hurricane.

The students of Tian Zhao lost colors from their faces.

‘What kind of strength is this? Under the attack of such an intense Soul’s Power, is there any other option except dying?’

Transmission tower’s top; transmission Room.

When Lu Ping punched out, Wen Yan’s expression immediately transformed.

“Sure enough...” She glanced at Xi Fan, before continuing:

“He didn’t use his full strength at all.”

“This is not the limit.” She Chi said. The strength in Lu Ping’s fist was clearly still increasing.

“What is that?” Wen Yan, as if having seen something strange, astonishedly asked.

Xi Fan had faintly guessed. Although he’d also seen and heard that thing only twice, it had left behind an extremely profound impression on

him.

‘When this thing appeared, Lu Ping should be at his full strength’. Xi Fan had always speculated as such.

His judgment wasn’t wrong. At this moment, Lu Ping was exhibiting the greatest possible strength.

This was because Lu Ping knew this woman. She was the same woman, who, in Wang Town’s congee shop, had thrown out one of the twelve Protectors of the City Master Mansion, Wei Ming, with a lift of her hand and had furthermore poured congee all over his face.

This woman was very strong. However, the more important point was, Su Tang had been captured by her.

Therefore, Lu Ping employed his entire strength without holding back.
Clang....Clang...

Along with the colliding sounds, the chains revealed themselves.

“What’s that?” All the students astonishedly looked at the chains that had appeared out of nowhere. The brows of the drunkard woman, which were pressed together, completely stretched out at this moment.

“Amazing.” She said and paused for a bit, before adding one more line:
“But, it’s a complete mess as well.”

Bang!

Hurricane like Soul’s Power berserkly swept past, and the woman’s figure was immediately torn apart into two halves. The bottle of wine in her left-hand was immediately smashed apart. But astonishingly, her right half, which was holding Su Tang, was still mobile.

Everyone had their eyes opened wide. In the next instant, woman’s right half again turned into a complete figure.

Afterimage?

Everyone realized that the Soul’s Power had only struck woman’s afterimage. She was so quick that no one had seen her movements and

had only been able to see the result of her movements.

With the Soul's Power being left behind her body, she stretched out her left hand, which had abandoned the bottle of wine, and grabbed Lu Ping's throat, before she lifted him up and pushed him down.

Bang!

There was once again an extremely loud sound due to the collision of Soul's Power from both sides. The stone slabs in front of Library's door began to crack and split apart. The upper half of Lu Ping's body was actually completely drilled into the ground.

Chi...along with a sound, a blood wound opened up on the woman's left cheek along with blood splashing. In the end, she was slightly affected while evading Lu Ping's strike. However, everything had happened so quickly, that the wound on her cheek only opened up at this moment.

However, her expression didn't change at all. Her attention wasn't disturbed by this tiny wound at all. Her eyes were fixed on the chains on Lu Ping's both hands and both legs. Apparently, she didn't care about prevailing over Lu Ping at all.

However, Lu Ping's both eyes had always been on the captive of the woman; Su Tang.

This woman was extremely strong; the strongest he'd ever seen. However, regardless of how strong she was, he couldn't give up. He had to save Su Tang regardless.

His tightly squeezed throat didn't seem capable of passing air, however, it somehow still managed to let out a low growl. The hanging chains which were becoming increasingly indistinct, at this moment, once again turned clear and began to shake and bounce. Amidst chaotic clanking sounds, Soul's Power berserkly surged forth once again.

Infusion's soul? Sound's soul? Strength's soul? Qi's soul? Hinge's soul? Essence's soul?

Previously, the students of Tian Zhao students were unable to perceive any kind of Soul's Power on the body of Lu Ping. However, at this moment,

they could sense a tyrannical existence of all six kinds of Soul's Power, which gave off a feeling as if it would swallow everything. They felt an unprecedented threat and involuntarily stepped backward. Thirty points? Even three hundred, or three thousand points, would be unable to make them move forward; that would be just throwing their lives away.

The drunkard woman, who didn't have much change in expression till now, also had a huge transformation in expression at this moment.

"Enough!" She withdrew her left arm that was squeezing Lu Ping's neck, so as to remove the threat which Lu Ping might have been feeling. However, the Soul's Power still kept on increasing.

The woman stared blankly. Subsequently, as she glanced at the girl clasped under her arm, she eventually realized that the youngster in front of her was never concerned about his own condition, but only cared about the girl she captured by her.

"Be at ease. She is all right." The woman softly said and injected a stream of Soul's Power into Su Tang's body.

Upon hearing these words, Lu Ping's intensity reduced as expected. Immediately afterward, he saw Su Tang waking up.

"Ah, you came." Upon seeing Lu Ping as soon as she opened her eyes, Su Tang was happy.

"Yes. I came." Lu Ping said.

"That's good." Su Tang's face was relieved.

"You all right?" Though Su Tang had been released by the woman, Lu Ping was still somewhat uneasy.

"I'm all right." Su Tang smilingly replied and glanced at the woman, before saying:

"You remember her?"

"Hm.." Lu Ping sounded his agreement. The Soul's Power forced out by him, at this moment, was slowly returning back. Eventually, after a moment of being completely relaxed, the chains abruptly stood upright,

as if applying strength and tightening on something. A faint painful expression flickered on Lu Ping's face, however, biting his tongue, he didn't utter a sound. Even the blood rushing up his throat was forcefully swallowed back by him.

"How are you?" However, Su Tang could make out that his expression was strange.

"It's nothing." Lu Ping shook his head.

"Idiot." Though, the woman also shook her head and suddenly stretched her palm at a lightning fast speed and struck on top of Lu Ping's head.

"You." Su Tang, in panic, waved her fist. Even after being extremely tired, this fist carried an unprecedented might. Its wind was even felt by numerous students who were standing several metres apart. However, the woman only gently raised her right arm, and Su Tang was instantly once again clasped under it. She also lost consciousness.

Clasping Su Tang under one hand and dragging Lu Ping by arm with the other, the woman turned around went inside the library.

Tian Zhao students foolishly watched and didn't dare make a single sound.

The red-clothed girl was troublesome, and the grey-clothed youngster was even more frightening, however, nobody expected that the strongest was the drunkard woman who had always been in their institute, but whom they never took seriously and even despised somewhat.

Chapter 54: Invitation.

Tian Zhao institute. Top of the main building. Dean's room.

Dean Yun Chong's mood could not be considered as good. He never expected that a small disturbance created by four unremarkable intruders, which was originally supposed to be a training for the students, would eventually require his personal intervention.

The straw hat youngster with Hinge's soul sixth heavenly layer was adept at escaping and using poison. During the chase, poisoning of a total of eighteen students had been reported so far. But the youngster had already been captured and sent straight to the Dean's room. Surprisingly, his body was completely covered in Tian Zhao's uniform, and on his face was a vehement and heroic smile.

The red-clothed girl with Strength's soul sixth Heavenly Layer had an astonishing battle strength. Particularly, the strength she displayed was far above the sixth Heavenly Layer Strength's soul that was known to everybody. During the chase, thirty-one Tian Zhao students sustained injuries, of which, nine suffered fractures. The red-clothed was still not captured to this moment.

The youngster in the wheelchair with Essence's soul sixth Heavenly layer couldn't move freely and had relied on the grey-clothed youngster to escape. Though, the grey-clothed youngster, even with a burden, eventually went from a mere consolation type one point to thirty points. Clearly, he was quite capable. Surprisingly, no one came back with heavy injuries from his side, which actually made the dean gratified. However, Wen Yan, who'd just brought Xi Fan, brought a heartbreaking news with her in addition:

Transmission Room's equipment has been destroyed by the grey-clothed youngster.

Upon hearing this news, Shi Ao, who'd brought Mo Lin, prepared himself to slip away through the door. The intruders were first discovered by him, thus, his judgment became the basis of Tian Zhao's initial

intelligence. However, it was extremely clear that his judgment was somewhat wrong. Especially, because of his wrong estimation of their strengths, many students were injured. However, this could be passed off as a learning experience. But the destruction of the Transmission Room? Being a member of the Discipline Squadron, he had a general idea of what kind of loss this was. He knew that if the dean were to be assumed gloomy until now, this news was sufficient to evoke his wrath.

Run for it!

Shi Ao was about to continue towards the gate. Yun Chong was asking Wen Yan all the details and had surprisingly not noticed him. However, how could he have expected that after secretly reaching up to the door's side, as he was just about to slip away, someone suddenly started banging the door. All the eyes immediately converged towards the door. Shi Ao didn't even get the time to straighten his sneaky posture.

"Cough..." Shi Ao cleared his throat, before pretending to be calm and pretending as if he'd come by the door upon hearing the knocks. He removed the gate's belt and fiercely stared at the guy who had ruined his plan.

Shen Chi.

He should have been with Wen Yan, however, he was always a little late. However, this time difference proved fatal to Shi Ao, who was just about to slip away after hearing Wen Yan's information.

Shen Chi entered the room in very slow steps and positioned himself beside Wen Yan. The dean, Yun Chong, looked at him while guessing whether this guy had brought good news or bad news. Consequently, he saw Shen Chi pointing the youngster who was sitting in the wheelchair, before saying:

"These two points are mine!"

Yun Chong's heart flared up. Even when he'd heard destruction of the Transmission Room, he'd not been so angry.

'So many students were injured, Transmission Room was destroyed, but

you didn't see ten point student, or twenty point student, or even thirty point student to capture. Now you are here to discuss two points with me?'

Yun Chong flicked his sleeves and stood up. He fiercely glared at Shen Chi, before turning his body and facing the window. Compared to Zhai Feng's Godou and Xia Feng's Baliyan, Yun Chong was a lot younger. He was full of vigor and determination. Today, at the hands of four nameless individuals, the institute took a fall that could neither be considered as too small nor too big. He was annoyed! And a student of his own institute was discussing the rightful distribution of insignificant two points; this was just like pouring oil on a fire.

Although he'd turned around facing the window to calm himself, the few people behind his back were still busy.

"I feel, being capable of striking you down, this guy actually should not be worth just two points!" Shen Chi, with a shine in his usually dull eyes, was still energetically arguing over the number of points with Wen Yan.

However, Wen Yan, seeing that dean's complexion was not looking good, instantly made a 'shut up' gesture towards Shen Chi.

Shi Ao, feeling that the opportunity was too big to miss, quietly opened the door and slipped away through the narrow crack.

Meanwhile Xi Fan, who was just brought, was chatting with Mo Lin.

"Are you alright?"

"I am fine. Ah, it was important to not to go heavy, otherwise, I truly wouldn't have been captured."

"Even managed full body clothes, pretty clever, huh?"

"Trivial matters. They never expected, being as crooked as.....uh.....you know the next." Mo Lin almost said 'Assassin', before suddenly recalling that the time and place seemed somewhat wrong, and had to forcefully swallow back his identity.

"What about Lu Ping?" Mo Lin subsequently asked.

“He went to look for Su Tang?”

“Oh, that shouldn’t be a problem, right?”

“Hard to say...” Xi Fan’s expression was not relaxed. Relying on his third Heavenly Layer Infusion’s soul, he hadn’t been able to see the fight outside the library. Wen Yan and Shen Chi didn’t explain anything to him. He could only observe their expressions. However, in the end, all he observed was astonishment, astonishment, and more astonishment. Anything happening on that side would only astonish Wen Yan and Shen Chi.

Xi Fan asked, but neither of them said anything. Even, till now, they had not mentioned the fight outside the library to the dean. The students of Tian Zhao were completely unaware that the drunkard woman had such a formidable strength. Wen Yan didn’t know if this was some secret of the institute, thus, she would naturally not discuss this with Xi Fan or mention to the dean in the presence of outsiders.

“Impossible. How could this be?” From Xi Fan’s expression, Lu Ping’s condition seemed somewhat troublesome, thus, Mo Lin was immediately astonished.

“You people are just never going to stop!”

Yun Chong was furious, truly furious! He originally wished to calm himself. However, this bunch of guys, from the students of his institute to these intruders which were more like little devils, each and every single one of them considered themselves above the world. What was this place? This was the room of Tian Zhao’s respected dean. Here, he spoke and the rest listened. Only when he asked, the rest could speak. And this bunch of little devils was treating this place as their tea house!

“Finally, who are you people?” Yun Chong asked. He didn’t want to lose control, however, at this moment, he was truly unable to do so.

“We are from Xia Feng region’s Zhai Feng institute, and have come to Tian Zhao institute to look for a person.”

“Zhai Feng institute?”

Yun Chong was surprised. Being a dean, his knowledge obviously couldn't lack too much. Zhai Feng institute and Xia Feng institute were not famous, but they were, after all, neighbors with each other. He couldn't not know about them. Furthermore, back in the day, Zhai Feng's dean, Godou, opened an institute in a desolate region and proclaimed to surpass the four major institute. This joke was spread around in the entire Zhi Ling region. Despite Yun Chong's age being small at that time, the memory was actually extremely clear in his mind to this day.

"Who are you looking for?" Yun Chong asked subsequently.

"Chu Ming. Perhaps she is a teacher, or once was...." Xi Fan said.

Yun Chong stared blankly. Though, this expression of his was different than those students who had no idea. Xi Fan let out a sigh of relief.

'Seems like the trip has not been in vain.'

'Even if Chu Ming is not at the Tian Zhao institute, there would be some information, right?'

"What are you looking her for."

"Recieve instructions on cultivation." Xi Fan said. He knew that the individual present before his eyes was the dean of Tian Zhao institute, thus, he naturally didn't hide anything.

"Chu Ming.... receive instructions on cultivation? Ha ha ha ha ha...." After being astonished, Yun Chong laughed, and laughed for a long time; laughed so much that he totally lost his composure, before finally saying:

"Who informed you to receive instructions on cultivation from her?"

"Our dean."

Yun Chong repeatedly shook his head and said:

"That's not possible. She has already turned into a wastrel. Though, by the talent of you four, I can actually make arrangements for your advanced cultivation at Tian Zhao."

Advanced cultivation; ordinary institutes would seldom have the confidence to force out these words. For many famous institutes, this

word as a beautiful pretext to rob ordinary institutes off their talented students. Furthermore, seldom would a student invited by a famous institute decline the invitation. For the former, advanced cultivation was akin to progress.

Although Tian Zhao institute was not comparable to the four big institutes, it was known in the continent. Just by looking at the strength of students, one could tell the enormous difference between Tian Zhao institute and Xia Feng institute or Zhai Feng institute. As far as two students of Xia Feng region were concerned, Tian Zhao institute definitely had the confidence to invite them for advanced cultivation, furthermore, they would not be rejecting it either.

Although the realms of these four students were not very high, they all had their special features. In Yun Chong's opinion, disregarding the former enmity and offering them such an offer was already extremely generous of him. At this moment, he was awaiting their impatient nods.

Sure enough, the latter were extremely patient. Without thinking, both of them scrambled for their chance:

"Advanced cultivation? That would not be necessary. We are here for teacher Chu Ming's instructions." Xi Fan said.

"Advanced cultivation? What advanced cultivation? The main reason I stayed at Zhai Feng was curiosity. What advance cultivation will I do here?"

"En....en....?" Yun Chong had almost nodded without hearing the replies of them. In his opinion, the chances of students from rotten Xia Feng region declining the invitation of Tian Zhao institute was infinitesimally close to zero. They could only regret that Tian Zhao institute was not impressed by them, not decline the invitation.

However, Yun Chong heard.

Infinitesimally close to zero, in the end, is not zero. These two guys had rejected his invitation. Moreover, actually rejected almost seeming as if fighting over to be the first one to reject. Each guy's every word was of rejection.

After blankly staring for a while, Yun Chong suddenly smiled.

‘So, these two country bumpkins, who’d come from mountains, didn’t know what does an invitation to advanced cultivation represents?’

Yun Chong faintly shook his head. He’d to personally entertain a few little devils who also happened to be country bumpkins? Truly ridiculous! Though it was fortunate as well, as he would be able to speak bluntly to his content!.

“You two, do you know the position of our Tian Zhao institute in the Zhi Ling region or even the entire continent?”

“Ah, yes. In the last year’s Feng Yun list of all the institutes in the continent, Tian Zhao was ranked second in the Zhi Ling region and thirty-ninth in the continent.” Xi Fan replied.

Yun Chong was astonished. This implied that the latter knew Tian Zhao’s position and influence in the continent. Where did their Zhai Feng institute stand in the ranking? Yun Chong hadn’t even bothered to pay attention to this point and reckoned it to be beyond three hundred or four hundred. Even after this, these two declined the invitation of their Tian Zhao institute, which was ranked thirty-nine?

Chapter 55: Extraordinary Temperament

The refusal was completely out of Yun Chong's expectations. It was illogical even for the rest of Tian Zhao institute's individuals. Wen Yan thought that their dean would immediately explode, however, she never expected that the latter wouldn't even show the slightest amount of displeasure or any other expression. He only said 'oh', as if he'd talked about a simple matter, and had received a proper and reasonable reply in return.

The people capable of sitting on the seat of an institute's dean at a mere age of forty could be counted on fingers throughout the institutes of the entire continent, let alone a reputed and influential institute like Tian Zhao which was ranked among the top fifty.

In many students' opinion, interacting with Yun Chong seemed very easy. But, Yun Chong was not a simple character. They felt as such only because Yun Chong didn't feel necessary to display his shrewdness in front of students. It could also be said that being easy to interact was also a shrewdness he displayed in front of students.

'Such an unexpected rejection has disrupted his normal conduct?'

This was just looking from a student's point of view.

Yun Chong was not in a turmoil, not at all. In fact, he had actually begun to size up these two students of Zhai Feng seriously.

The truth was, although these few intruders created trouble and displayed some skill, the Tian Zhao institute was ranked thirty-nine in the Feng Yun list. It attracted people from all over the continent and had no shortage of students brimming with talent. Yun Chong was not desperate or anything for good students.

If Xi Fan and Mo Lin had immediately accepted the invitation, he wouldn't have paid too much attention to them. He might have even forgotten them the next day. However, their rejection, on the contrary, caused Yun Chong to feel that they were somewhat special. He began to re-evaluate them.

Xi Fan and Mo Lin suddenly felt uncomfortable. Originally they were not too concerned about the current situation and were feeling quite comfortable. However, they suddenly felt Yun Chong's vision penetrating through them. They felt that their entire body, from head to toe, was being permeated by something, which caused them to feel extremely uncomfortable.

What kind of ability is this?

Mo Lin and Xi Fan both had some experience. They knew, this time, Yun Chong was certainly employing some strange ability. However, neither of them was a Linked One, thus, they had no ability to resist.

Mo Lin was aghast. He raised his eyes, wishing to see what strange ability Yun Chong was using and which Soul's power was being employed.

"Don't look!" Xi Fan, who was beside him, immediately warned Mo Lin as soon as he noticed latter's movements.

Yun Chong smiled. Apparently, the youngster on the right was a little more knowledgeable. Or, perhaps, he was a bit sharper because of his realm in the Essence's soul. However, 'don't look', a defensive measure such as this was rudimentary up to an extent of being a little funny. But, Yun Chong didn't wish to make things too difficult for them either. Employing the skill up to this extent already seemed sufficient.

The youngster to the left had sixth Heavenly layer Pivot's soul but completely lacked Strength's soul. This kind of disposition was not suitable for tasks related to fighting. However, relying on this disposition, he was able to survive in the huge battle of third graders who were fighting over points like hungry wolves. Escaping, hiding, exploiting surroundings, poisoning, and swapping his clothes with Tian Zhao's uniform right at the beginning, these things were not just talent and wisdom, but also experience. This youngster didn't have the slightest aura of an institute's student. Such carefree attitude and awareness actually had an air of wilderness mixed within.

The youngster on the right was unable to move freely due to a serious

injury. However, even in such condition, he displayed an extraordinary talent and skill, and knocked down Wen Yan, who had a much higher realm than him, in a single strike. This youngster had the demeanor of a fairly influential family. The temperament he displayed did not correspond to an insignificant institute like Zhai Feng at all.....no.....it was even above the Tian Zhao institute. Even though he mentioned they had to find Chu Ming to receive instructions, he hadn't seemed filled with expectations, but rather seemed as if he had been accomplishing a task; abiding by a promise, that's all.

Yun Chong faintly smiled and gently tapped the table in front of him. He seemed to be pondering over something, but at the same time, he also seemed not to be doing that at all. The room turned completely quiet. Xi Fan and Mo Lin didn't talk again, and Wen Yan and Shen Chi also preserved silence. They could also sense Yun Chong's formidable strength and aura.

Silence continued for a long time.

Yun Chong didn't speak again, and neither he focussed his attention particularly on any of the four. However, their every action, every movement, and even the minute variations in their frame of mind, were completely seen through by him.

The youngster to the left was waiting. He didn't have the ability to eliminate this choking and unusual feeling, however, he had patience. He patiently awaited the passing of this phase. This choked and ill kind of feeling didn't waver him and neither evoked any anxiousness.

And the youngster to the right? He complied. He was feeling choked and ill as well. However, it didn't cause turmoil inside him. A part of his heart was still clear. This had nothing to with his realm. This was because of his temperament. A trace of arrogance was concealed in his heart. However, even he himself was not willing to confront this arrogance, but at this moment, precisely this arrogance kept him from bowing his head. He couldn't oppose, therefore, he was complying, and would comply until death.

Comparatively, the two individuals from Tian Zhao, however, disappointed Yun Chong.

Wen Yan and Shen Chi, both, were far above Xi Fan and Mo Lin in terms of realm. However, the current silence was driving them crazy. They both had to make small movements here and there to dispel the restlessness in their hearts so as to make through this phase.

Yun Chong sighed in his mind. He suddenly wished to obtain these two students of Zhai Feng for himself. Such temperament was even rarer than talent. Wen Yan and Shen Chi were well-known figures in the Tian Zhao institute. Possessing excellent blood vessels of their clan, both had realms which were far above their peers. However, they didn't have such a temperament. Not at this moment, or perhaps not even in their entire lives.

How long could these two little devils preserve?

Yun Chong was pretty desirous to find out. However, he also knew, in this case, the first to give up would be the two outstanding students of his institute.

Should I revise the barrier a little bit?

As Yun Chong was pondering, the gate of the room opened up with a bang sound.

Who is it?

Yun Chong was alarmed in his mind.

The entire room was covered with the barrier laid down by him with the help of combined use of Infusion's soul and Essence's soul, with both souls being linked. Controlling the range with Infusion's soul and producing the effect with the Essence's soul. The barrier wouldn't stop anyone from entering, but when the gate opened, he felt a part of his barrier splitting open at that position.

"I heard someone is looking for me?"

An individual entered the room along with a strong alcoholic smell.

This smell of wine had always made the Tian Zhao students retreat three steps away from her. They always avoided her. However, at this moment, this smell, disturbing Yun Chong's barrier, actually caused Wen Yan and Shen Chi, who were extremely restless, to feel much better.

They already knew the identity of this individual without turning their heads.

'She is Chu Min these people are trying to find?' This was the common thought of Wen Yan and Shen Chi at this moment. Xi Fan and Mo Lin immediately recognized that this was the same woman who'd easily taken care of Wei Ming at the congee shop. Subsequently, they saw, a red clothed girl clasped under her arm; Su Tang, and her other hand holding a leg while a body slid behind her as she entered the room. Who could it be, if not Lu Ping?

Chapter 56: Three Sentences

Everybody's vision simultaneously turned towards the drunkard woman who was one step inside the room. Wen Yan and Shen Chi, who happened to be in her front, involuntarily opened a path for her. They were not even aware of their action.

The woman, however, didn't take a step further. After taking a single step inside the room, she remained stood at her position and swept her gaze through the room. Shen Chi, Wen Yan, or even the dean, her gaze didn't pause anywhere before it finally settled on Xi Fan and Mo Lin.

"You are teacher Chu Min?" Xi Fan said.

"I am Chu Min." The woman replied as such.

"We are from Xia Feng region's Zhai Feng institute. We have a letter for you from our dean. He requests you to assist our cultivation, so as to take part in Zhi Ling region's Grand Soul Convention."

Grand Soul Convention?

Upon hearing this word, Wen Yan, Shen Chi, and even Yun Chong's complexion changed. Wen Yan and Shen Chi were agape, while Yun Chong had already begun to faintly smile. Though his smile was a disapproving one.

'These children had a pretty good disposition and potential, however, going by their current realms, wishing to participate in the Grand Soul Convention after a month is a bit too naive. It seems that this is the wish of the Zhai Feng's dean. This Godou is the same as he was before twenty years. At that time he'd started an institute at a desolate region and had proclaimed surpassing the four great institutes, and this time, he has dispatched a few students with the realm of a single-sixth-heavenly-layer-soul to take part in the Grand Soul Convention.'

'Given his identity as someone from the four major institutes, he has such a little knowledge? His identity is not fake, is it?'

Yun Chong seemed as if he'd heard a funny joke, however, he quickly

restrained his smile and said:

“Participate in the Grand Soul Convention after one month? Have you ever seen it before? Do you know the level of confrontations there? You think it’s like an institute’s major assessment? With your current realm, I dare guarantee you, you won’t even be able to keep your life. You think one month is sufficient to change this thing?”

“You have pretty good dispositions. Cultivate two years.... or one year, at Tian Zhao, and you will have some accomplishments in the Grand Soul Convention.”

They didn’t reply. They knew Yun Chong’s words were true. Participating in Grand Convention with their current realm was truly overestimating their capabilities.

Two individuals exchanged a glance. Mo Lin shrugged his shoulders in an indifferent manner. He had a different motive in entering the Zhai Feng. He naturally didn’t feel much about Godou’s arrangements. He would just casually drift along. However, Xi Fan was different. He was serious. After looking at Mo Lin’s indifferent attitude, he earnestly showed his attitude:

“One month...I want to try.”

Courting death!

Yun Chong didn’t say anything, however, his eyes were betraying this thought.

Xi Fan and Mo Lin simultaneously looked towards Chu Min.

“Ah, Grand Soul Convention...” Chu Min’s entire body reeked of alcohol, however, she didn’t seem intoxicated at all. She seemed as if she’d just recalled what Grand Soul Convention signified.

What would be Chu Min’s attitude?

All were looking towards her, however, she’d already turned her body.

“Follow me out.”

What does this mean?

All people stared blankly. However, Chu Min, with Su Tang clasped under one arm and dragging Lu Ping with the other hand, left the room.

Xi Fan and Mo Lin looked at each other in dismay. One couldn't move, while the other was still tied; Chu Min came in and said three sentences in total:

I am Chu Min.

Ah, Grand Soul Convention...

Follow me out.

Walk? Walk how? Two looked at Yun Chong.

Yun Chong's face had a thoughtful expression. His concern seemed to have already shifted from the Mo Lin and Xi Fan. He waved his hand without looking. Wen Yan stepped forward and untied Mo Lin. However, consequently, Mo Lin's face hadn't relaxed. He looked Xi Fan with a bitter face and asked:

"You are not thinking about me carrying you, do you?"

Xi Fan showed a helpless expression. Mo Lin stepped towards him with clenched teeth and said:

"All right, come!"

"Farewell." Xi Fan didn't forget to nod his head and greet the rest before getting onto Mo Lin's back. Mo Lin, with Xi Fan on his back, walked out of the room with a swaying figure.

In the dean's room, Wen Yan and Shen Chi didn't want to leave at all. They had a belly full of questions. In particular, they were brimming with curiosity towards the woman.

"Dean...." Wen Yan began. Though Shen Chi was also present, however, that guy was extremely slow. Who knows how much time he would take to ask.

"Who is that woman?" Wen Yan asked.

Yun Chong didn't reply her, instead asked:

“why would she appear?”

“Eh!” Wen Yan suddenly recalled that she had still not told dean about the fight outside the library.

She carefully described that time’s situations. Yun Chong turned extremely serious as he heard. However, the thing that caught his ultimate attention was not Chu Min, but a particular detail about Lu Ping.

“Chains? What kind of chains?”

“Seemingly rather ordinary, black chains...” Wen Yan had already described to the finest details and had not added something extra. Those chains seemed strange, but she couldn’t make out the exact peculiarity.

“Don’t tell me...” Yun Chong thought a certain possibility. But then how could there be Soul’s Power? This matter went completely against the reasoning.

‘If this is the case, perhaps this youngster is the most worthy of attention.’

Yun Chong was contemplating, however, Wen Yan and Shen Chi were only curious about Chu Min. Particularly since the individual in front of them could provide them with answers.

“Because of some events that occurred many years ago, teacher Chu Min has become somewhat depressed. If she could pull herself together once again, in that case, our Tian Zhao institute...” Yun Chong said up to here and sank into his thoughts. Wen Yan Shen Chi were surprisingly tacit as they didn’t bother him with details and silently left.

After contemplating for quite a while, Yun Chong stood up from his seat. He left the dean’s room and looked outside, standing beside the corridor’s window. He saw Chu Ming, along with the four intruders, walking towards the library, before they disappeared into the woods.

Library.

After passing through an extremely long corridor, Chu Min led the four individuals into a small cabin. As soon as she opened the door, they were

greeted by an extremely strong alcoholic smell hitting their faces. Chu Min entered while dragging Lu Ping. The bottles of wine, that were on the ground, incessantly rolled around while making noises.

Mo Lin followed behind while gasping. His waist almost seemed as if it would never straighten again. He himself didn't know how did he gather such a strong willpower. He was itching to place Xi Fan down. And then he saw that he couldn't even find a single spot to place his feet.

Chu Min casually waved her hand and threw Lu Ping to a corner, where he knocked into slanted piles of books. Books rummaged down one after another and buried down half of Lu Ping's body. On the other hand, Su Tang was placed down by her on the single bed in the room. Finally, not a rough treatment like that of Lu Ping.

"I truly can't continue..." Mo Lin was finally unable to hold on. He threw down Xi Fan and himself also sat down with his back against the wall, before he took huge breaths while wiping his sweat.

Chu Min returned back to them. With both hands, Xi Fan handed over the letter he'd already taken out and said:

"This is the letter from our dean."

Chu Min accepted it, kneaded it into a ball, and just like Lu Ping, casually threw it away. The letter disappeared somewhere.

"Grand Soul Convention?" She was speaking extremely calmly:

"When did Godou become so ambitionless? Didn't he say he would surpass the four major institute twenty years ago?"

Chapter 57: To Protect.

Anyone while mentioning Godou's slogan of surpassing the four major institutes, when he'd just established the Zhai Feng, would mention it as a joke. This included Zhai Feng's teachers, students, even the currently focussed Xi Fan and Mo Lin.

However, Chu Ming hadn't done so. Her voice was extremely tranquil and contained no ridicule as she mentioned this slogan, just as if she'd merely stated a fact. A little bit of regret in her voice was not because of 'surpassing the four institutes', but because Godou's target had become Zhi Ling region's Grand Soul Convention.

Of course, in comparison to the four major institutes, Zhi Ling region's Grand Soul Convention didn't amount to anything. Some people would even say that this kind of regional convention's level was same as about a random test in the four major institutes, not to mention the Dou Soul Convention which was combinedly hosted by all the four major institutes and happened only once in four years; being one of the gatherings of the continent's most renowned and the strongest people. It could be compared to the three grand empire's Selection Of Geniuses.

The three grand empire's Selection Of Geniuses occurred once in three years. Since it was the selection of geniuses, it required even more detailed judgement with respect to participant's capabilities. Therefore, for all the six souls, separate assessments were conducted, namely: Soul Selection.

Dou Soul Convention and the Soul Selection were the two most renowned conventions on the continent and were considered to be the highest accomplishment for a cultivator. On the other hand, gatherings like Zhi Ling region's Grand Conventions were plenty. A region, a city, or even a cause, could pull together such gatherings.

Zhi Ling region's Grand Soul Convention, among continent's numerous gatherings, was considerably influential. In the southern region, it was the most influential gathering. Occurring inside the Mysterious Arms

empire, aside from the Soul Selection, it was one of the most highly valued gatherings by the empire. Even, the Cheng Phoenix and Cyan Peak, the other two empires would also dispatch secret scouts during this time period to observe the strength of every year's participants and coerce geniuses.

Participating in Zhi Ling region's Grand Soul Convention was already akin to a proof of strength in the minds of numerous cultivators. However, Chu Min seemed quite disapproving towards the Grand Soul Convention.

Xi Fan and Mo Lin once again exchanged a glance. They didn't know what to say. Perhaps Chu Min had the strength to look down on the Grand Soul Convention, however, with their current strength, even this was overstating their capabilities.

"Ah! First, settle down." Chu Min said:

"Outside the door, two rooms, left and right. Help yourselves."

"How are these two?" Xi Fan said.

"The girl's strength soul is extremely formidable, but the burden it puts on her body also exceeds ordinary people's. She is at her limit." She said and turned her vision towards the corner of the room where Lu Ping was half buried inside books.

"This one... is a fool." Chu Min said without a trace of politeness. However as she spoke, her vision displayed a trace of liveliness which had never been seen. It seemed like delight, hope, or something else. What was it? Xi Fan couldn't discern.

"You should first go back and rest." Chu Min commanded.

"Yes..."

The two individuals went to the rooms outside the door. Both rooms were approximately the same; both had a lot of books and dust. However, this moment, neither of the two cared about these things. Even Xi Fan, who'd used another people as a means of transportation, was mentally exhausted at this moment. He sank into deep slumber almost

immediately.

Early morning.

Lu Ping immediately sprang up to his feet as soon as he woke up.

Hua!

A lot of books rummaged down. Lu Ping found himself in an ocean of books. Wherever he looked, he only saw books.

However, Lu Ping wasn't concerned about this fact at all, his only thought was Su Tang. However, no other individual was present in the room.

Surrounded by gigantic trees, the entire library always seemed dim regardless day or night. However, in this room, one spot was exceptionally illuminated.

Lu Ping, who could not find anyone in the room, hurriedly went towards that spot.

At that spot was a window. The gigantic trees were sparing a passage connecting the window to the sky. The window was facing east. Due to the eastward morning sun, this was the time when the window was the most illuminated throughout the entire day, and the sunshine wasn't obstructed in the slightest as it entered. As Lu Ping stood by the window with his reflection being laterally extended, he suddenly felt that this window might be an exit.

Subsequently, he heard voices of conversation and saw people outside the window.

Su Tang and that drunkard woman were at an empty piece of land in the woods outside the window. He jumped out of the window. Soon after, Su Tang spotted him and waved her hands:

"Lu Ping."

Lu Ping hurriedly stepped forward. He'd obviously not forgotten what occurred before he'd passed out.

So, what's up with this woman?

“Lu Ping, this is teacher Chu Min.” Su Tang introduced Lu Ping as he arrived a bit closer.

‘She is Chu Ming?’

Lu Ping had his vision on Chu Ming. She still looked the exact same as she’d at the congee shop; whole body reeking of alcohol and a bottle of wine in her hand.

Upon seeing Lu Ping’s vision was still somewhat reserved, she suddenly took a step and was instantly behind Su Tang, with her hand placed on Su Tang’s shoulder. She was so strong that she wouldn’t have faced any difficulty in taking Su Tang’s life with just this move had she wished to do so.

Lu Ping immediately clenched his fists. He hadn’t moved, but was extremely frustrated. He could discern that Chu Min had no malice, but what if she had? What if she had not stopped and had claimed Su Tang’s life? Could he have stopped it?

The answer frightened Lu Ping.

However, Chu Min smiled.

“You can certainly achieve if you have the determination in your heart? This is just a naive and childish thinking. You need true strength. Whether the opponent is treacherous, calm, cunning, desperate, nothing could gain the slightest upper-hand in your presence; the true strength. A strength no one could contest. Only then you will be able to properly protect what you want to protect without any regrets.”

“Teacher Chu Min...” Su Tang, who had been pretentiously captured by Chu Min, spoke at this moment.

“I won’t just be protected....” Before finishing, her head suddenly struck backward.

Using head as a weapon is undoubtedly dangerous. However, Chu Min could discern that Su Tang had not been so audacious just because she was being pretentiously threatened.

It was because what she just said; she would not just be protected. She was striving to protect Lu Ping as well.

Chu Ming quickly dodged the strike. However, at this moment, Lu Ping had already arrived and was standing alongside Su Tang.

None of them cowered, and none of them wished to be just protected. These two individuals, if one happened to be inside a fire, the other would also certainly be inside a fire as well. They supported each other, relied on each other, and protected each other. They would only choose to advance or retreat together.

For them, protecting oneself was protecting the other, and protecting the other was also protecting oneself. Between them, there was no characterization of weak and strong based on strength.

Chu Min could have continued to act. She could still have defeated them. She wouldn't even have to use any strength.

But she stopped, and her face revealed an unfeigned smile.

“So it actually turned out like this.”

“You are very good. You are also very good. You both are very good.”

Chapter 58: The Realm Of Linking

“Teacher Chu Min.”

Xi Fan’s voice sounded. His wheelchair had been retrieved, and Mo Lin was pushing it towards Chu Min and the rest two. Just now, Xi Fan and Mo Lin saw that final smile of Chu Min. Compared to the yesterday’s hard-to-guess expression, which only flickered in her eyes for a moment, the joy this smiled carried was much clearer.

Chu Min turned and gave them a glance while the expression in her eyes resumed the usual. The four students from Xia Feng region’s Zhai Feng institute had eventually gathered in front of her. Chu Min’s vision alternated from person to person, and they, in return also looked back at her. They were brimming with curiosity regarding this teacher. Even a fool could tell that she had quite a story behind her.

However, Chu Min had no intention to introduce herself in detail. After she glanced the four of them once, she immediately started:

“I am Chu Min. For this month, I will guide you all.”

“Eh?” Mo Lin was astonished.

“You have a problem?” Chu Min glanced at Mo Lin. That expression seemed to say that if Mo Lin said ‘Yes’, he would immediately be killed.

“No. Not at all.” Mo Lin hurriedly said and foolishly exchanged a glance with Xi Fan.

After analyzing her yesterday’s mood, the two of them had concluded that she might not take them under her. But they didn’t expect that her will would change so much. Yesterday, she’d seemed so depressed while today she seemed like a today different person.

What’s the reason?

It was obviously not due to Godou’s arrangements. She’d not even looked at Godou’s letter before throwing it away. Clearly, she didn’t care about Godou too much.

Is it because Lu Ping and Su Tang?

Xi Fan was thinking. After all, Chu Min had only smiled while talking to them. She had been moved by them once, before she once again became spiritless right after. From this, it could be said that she had an extremely strong will-power. Whether she wanted to be spiritless or pull herself together, it only depended on her mood. Others could not affect her at all.

As Xi Fan was analyzing her, she was attentively looking at him as well. As if she'd seen through what he was thinking, she said:

"No need to think too much. This month, you have to focus all of your attention on cultivation. Otherwise, after one month, you will only have one option... to die."

After speaking these words, she pointed towards Lu Ping and said: "Including you."

"No way!" Mo Lin was astonished.

"That is because your conditions and skill are messed up to the extreme. If you continue to maintain this situation, even if you have ten times Soul's Power as of now, I will still only require a finger to kill you." Chu Min said.

"Isn't it too exaggerated?" Mo Lin continued to shout as if rebelling against injustice for Lu Ping.

"As for you three..." Chu Min, however, as if hadn't heard Mo Lin's words at all, continued:

"Sixth Heavenly Layer Soul's Power; you need to achieve linking as soon as possible. Before that, I think you should have already understood what is Excellence's soul. Excellence's soul is..."

"Hold on! Hold on!" Mo Lin once again cried out: "We've already begun cultivation?"

"You interrupt once again, and I will kill you!" Not just an expression, Chu Min had truly issued a warning this time. Mo Lin immediately closed his mouth.

Though Chu Min, on the contrary, didn't let him:

“You like to talk so much. So, you speak, with respect to a certain form, what is the Excellence's soul?”

Certain Form was not a precise reference, but a rigorous description. Excellence's soul was Excellence's soul; Infusion's soul was Infusion's soul. For the sake of convenience in understanding, people assigned them another sense which corresponded to the human body. Infusion's soul was assigned the visual sense, Sound's soul the sense of hearing, Qi's soul...so on.

This assigned meaning was the so-called 'Certain Form'. Since it had become habitual, the terms 'Certain Form' had been omitted. Many people even used eyes, ears, nose, tongue, and hand; the even simplified version of referring to the Soul's Power.

However, Chu Min had not done so. Instead, she even emphasized these two words.

Though, in the end, the implications of the question were the same, and thus, the answer was also the same:

“Excellence's soul is the memory.” Mo Lin replied.

Infusion, Sound, Qi, Pivot, Strength, and Essence; six souls are the six intellects and are also the six senses. The seventh soul Excellence's soul, however, was the memory.

This, of course, couldn't be regarded as some profound meaning. Even many ordinary people could recite the referential meaning of the seven souls from what they frequently heard. To smoothly explain why the Excellence's soul was the ultimate direction of the six souls:

What a person saw, heard, tasted, smelled, touched, and thought, ultimately, transformed as a memory. Essence's soul was precisely the memory.

The principle was so simple, even many ordinary people were also able to find their way to perceive some Soul's Power. However, in the end, they were unable to breakthrough and didn't have any realm, because of these

two words:

‘Certain Form.’

The vision was a certain form of Infusion’s soul.

The hearing was a certain form of Sound’s soul.

However, if one were to say that the vision was Infusion’s soul and the hearing was Sound’s soul, that would be wrong.

And when one could truly reflect this difference, that would be the realm of Linking.

“The realm of perception is strengthening and advancement. However, the realm of Linking is an entrance to a completely new domain: ‘Control’.” Chu Min said.

“Why control? The abilities produced by the cultivation of Realm of Linking is a ‘control’. If you wish to possess such abilities, first you must be clear on what could you control.”

“Vision covering more distance, hearing clearer, increase in strength? These are not ‘control’. These things could be upgraded by your body itself. So, what would be the true control?” Chu Min said all of this in one stretch and suddenly raised her right hand, before continuing:

“Is Qi’s soul just the sense of smell; it only allows your nose to be sharper? Of course, not. Qi’s soul allows one to control the airflow.” As she spoke, a sphere of air slowly gathered above her palm.

“Infusion’s soul is just the smell; it only allows one to see more clearly and more distance? Carefully think... ‘See’, during this action, what are you truly perceiving? For example say, color.” As she spoke, the sphere of air above her palm gained color and soon turned into a fiery-red sphere.

“Strength’s soul, strength? speed? Your two hands and two legs can only perceive these few pieces of information? Relying on your sense of touch, can you perceive weight or not? As Chu Min again spoke, the air mass suddenly sank down, as if it was completely pressing down on the center of her palm. Chu Min raised her hand before she gave it a wave, and the

air mass, going in an arc, arrived at Lu Ping's feet. It exploded with a muffled sound and scattered apart, surprisingly, leaving behind a small hole in the ground.

She looked towards Lu Ping and said:

“Your Soul's Power is that of the realm of Linking. However, can you manage this trifling control?”

Trifling?

Xi Fan's and Mo Lin's face looked green. This is called trifling?

Within a short duration, Chu Min had displayed three linked up Soul's Power. This meant that she was at least a Linked One of three souls.

Three Souls Linked!

This was not as simple as one soul Linked plus another soul Linked plus another soul Linked. Otherwise, for not a single Linked One of six souls to not appear on the continent, wouldn't have been possible.

With the Linking of every soul, the strength and the difficulty of further cultivation increased by multiple folds. This was not a simple addition of one plus one plus one.

How much strong this woman actually is?

Mo Lin, who had originally joined in just for some fun, was also somewhat filled with expectations at this moment.

Chapter 59: The Crux Of Linking

A Linked One of three souls could astonish people. But the current abilities she displayed wouldn't surprise people too much. These four, after all, were not new students who'd recently joined an institute and didn't know a thing about Soul's Power. Although their own realm was lacking, in any case, they had seen Linked One's using their abilities. And this theory of 'Control' was same everywhere. As long as one was not too stupid, taking an approximate guess about things was not too difficult.

However, thinking much about these things before attaining the realm of Linking was not useful. Chu Min's demonstration clearly focused mainly on Lu Ping. Though Lu Ping already possessed the realm of Linking and his Soul's Power was extremely formidable, but he'd never been seen using an ability.

"You possess the Soul's Power of the realm of Linking, but your employment still resides in the Perception realm." Chu Min pointedly revealed Lu Ping's current predicament with a few words. During his few outbreaks, he'd only relied on Soul's Power to directly crush the opponent and had not displayed any other ability at all.

"I believe, it's not that you have never tried, but you must find it very hard, yes?" Chu Min continued.

Lu Ping nodded.

"Where is the problem, huh?" As Chu Min spoke as she once again flipped her palm and a sphere of air assembled in her hand. However, this time, she neither add color nor weight. She swept her palm, suddenly stretching the sphere of air. Looking at the hand of Chu Min again, the sphere had astonishingly turned into a sword.

"What is this?" She asked.

"Sword." Lu Ping said.

"How do you perceive it as a sword?" She asked.

Lu Ping started. This question seemed very tasteless. Imagine someone

presenting a chicken in front of you, and then ask why is this is sort of like a chicken.

This is a chicken.

This is a sword.

What's the point of why?

Chu Min suddenly swept her palm again, transforming the air sphere once again. The sword, which was originally crooked and had edges on both sides, suddenly thickened at one side.

“What's this again?”

“It's a single-edged sword.” Lu Ping replied without thinking, but subsequently, he started and seemed thoughtful.

“Why was it a sword just now, while a single-edged sword at this moment?” Chu Min said.

“Because they appear different.” Lu Ping said.

“Correct; appear. How do you know its appearance?” Chu Min asked.

“I saw it.”

“Good.” Chu Min nodded, “As such, it's only so simple. Appearance is what you see, but not what you hear, not what you smell, and not what you taste?”

Lu Ping understood. He'd learned a lesson regarding this respect just yesterday. The equipment in the Tian Zhao institute's Transmission Room required the power Sound's soul to operate. However, Lu Ping's Soul's Power was not pure. He'd wished to employ Sound's soul, but when he tried to do so, the power of other souls also snuck its way in, resulting in the complete destruction of the equipment since it could only be operated through Sound's soul.

Linking-abilities were the same. An ability derived through controlling Soul's Power should only have that Soul's Power which one wished to employ and the rest should not mix at all. However, the current Lu Ping could not accomplish this point, and this was the principal cause he

couldn't control Soul's Power to derive abilities.

"Ah!...However....the form might not just be what one sees." Su Tang suddenly asked.

"Correct. The form might not just be what one sees. It could also be touch; not only this, it could even be one's imagination. Thus, a Linked One of two souls is much stronger than that of one soul, and a Linked One of three souls, in turn, is much stronger than the former." Chu Min said.

All the four immediately realized that Chu Min's demonstration, which had focussed on the form, was not just to make Lu Ping aware of his problem, but to make all of them clearly and quickly understand the limitless possibilities of Linking.

The form is a detail that could be controlled by Infusion's soul, Strength's soul, and Essence's soul.

However, if some detail required two or even three souls to accomplish the required control, clearly, such an ability could not be grasped by a Linked One of one soul or two souls. The realm of Linking was not a simple additive superimposition. Since such sort of arrangements could result in infinite possibilities, as one's Soul's Power increased, the styles derived would also increase correspondingly.¹

Just unimaginable, not accomplishable!

This was a widespread, famous quote in the cultivation world. However, the majority of the people only took it as a notion. However, the fact was, this line was the representation of the realm of Linking's abilities in a nutshell. By the combination of six type of Soul's, how many abilities could be derived? There was no limit. It was unimaginable.

Admittedly, Lu Ping and the rest were no newborns, still, this was the first time they had understood things in such a depth. A portal to a new world had been suddenly opened in front of them. It was as if they had suddenly found a new direction.

"However, first of all, you will need to attain the realm of Linking." Chu

Min's words, without a doubt, seemed like a splash of cold water in their faces.

After attaining the sixth Heavenly layer in a soul, one could try to break through into the realm of Linking. Su Tang, Xi Fan, or Mo Lin, all of them had spent quite a bit of time at this step. Thus, for them to not have their own ideas about the realm of Linking was not possible. However, they were, in fact, still stuck on the sixth Heavenly layer of their respective souls. Evidently, the breakthrough was not that easy.

“Breaking through into the realm of Linking, forming the link with the Excellence's soul, or finding the power of Excellence's soul; the crux lies in concentration, focus.”

Concentration, Focus.....

A pretty ordinary term. Even if one learns to simply read and write, he/she would be advised to concentrate and focus on teachings. However, after going through Chu Min's demonstration, and explanation to Lu Ping, the four individuals didn't even take a wink before understanding the idea behind the concentration and focus meant by Chu Min.

Just like controlling Soul's power to employ abilities required a pure Soul's power, the concentration and focus meant by Chu Min also required a pureness.

Being able to control this pureness after the realm of Linking and understanding this pureness in the process of the breakthrough were not unrelated.

However, this matter was in no way easy or simple.

In terms of implied meaning, the six souls were the six senses and the Excellence's soul was the memory. What one saw, heard, or thought ultimately transformed into a memory. However, in order to realize this pureness, the memory of a certain instant should only consist a single sense and the rest all should be stripped off.

This was hard; too hard. The six senses of an individual always operate together; wishing to choose a single node, wishing to retain a single sense

and peel off the rest.....this was just too hard to control.

However, the perception was just a concise way to represent Soul's Power. Soul's Power was not so simple. At this point, Chu Min's vision fell on Mo Lin:

"So, now can you feel a certain superiority of your blood vessels?" Chu Min said.

Mo Lin started.

Mo family's blood vessels, the blood vessels innately incapable of cultivating the Strength's soul, are superior? Never would he have ever thought such a thing, but at this moment, he understood.

This was a kind of pureness.

It was only a single soul lacking, but still, other people while Linking had to concentrate on a single soul and strip off the rest five souls. Controlling abilities after the Linking was also the same. But their Mo family while Linking and concentrating on a single soul, only had to strip off four souls. Because there was a soul they couldn't possess anyhow.

While it was true that they would never attain the peak realm of the Linking of six souls, however, as far as Linking of five souls was concerned, they could always achieve that much easily than the others. Because they innately lacked a soul.

Chapter 60: Unusual Method

Complete absence and being unable to perceive...are two completely different concepts.

Complete absence, hence being unable to perceive.

However, unable to perceive didn't mean complete absence. Often times, it was nothing more than cultivators being too slow in perceiving a certain soul.

For example, the currently focused four individuals:

Su Tang didn't have any realm in the Essence's soul and Xi Fan in Sound's soul.

Not having realms didn't mean not having Soul's Power. It was just that they were too slow in their perception of these souls, and thus, ultimately trailed far behind compared to the rest. Likewise, the Soul they excelled in had already reached the realm of sixth Heavenly layer, which was far above the rest.

However, saying that Mo family's members were slow or incapable of perceiving Strength's soul in truth was: Non existence.

However, currently, the Mo family's blood vessels, which innately lacked one soul, had actually become an asset.

Upon realizing this fact, Mo Lin was utterly dumbfounded.

He'd never heard this argument before. His entire family had always lamented due to their deficiency of one soul. Since they lacked Strength's soul, they couldn't perform well in fighting and killing. Being a cultivation clan, the majority of their members eventually had to take up supportive works. Being strong; apparently, this had been a concept that had nothing to do with them.

However, upon a meticulous thinking, the number of Mo family's members breaking through into the realm of Linking was indeed big. In this respect, they were indeed outstanding than a lot of other clans.

However, none of them realized that his was due to their advantage of lacking one soul. On the contrary, this made them lament their deficiency of the Strength's soul even more and feel that they were so talented in cultivation but were being held down by their blood vessels.

This was not a limitation, but the cause of Mo family's talent!

Mo Lin was somewhat overwhelmed. He was itching to return back to his home and tell his brothers, sisters, and all the members of the family.

Perhaps Mo family would not be able produce the strongest of the cultivators since they could never attain the Linking of six souls.

However, they could pump out a lot of strong people since they lacked one soul.

This....This is truly..."

Mo Lin's words somewhat seemed non-sensical. He understood that this was the biggest turnaround in his life. At this moment, his entire attitude and behaviour underwent a heaven-shaking transformation.

"Thank you..." Mo Lin suddenly bowed facing Chu Min and didn't straighten up for a long time. At the side, Xi Fan's line of sight was somewhat lowered, having clearly seen tears flickering in the eyes of Mo Lin.

Crying?

Xi Fan was not astonished. He could easily imagine how many complications a cultivator who didn't understand his own blood vessels, which lacked one soul, must have to face.

Mo Lin, a cultivator who didn't have Strength's soul and yet assumed a dangerous job such as assassin which required fighting and killing, claiming that he did so because he was interested?

Why such an interest?

Was it not because, by being an assassin when he was assumed to not be suitable for it due to the lack of Strength's soul, he was trying to prove something?

Mo Lin never talked about it, and they didn't ask. Some matters do not need to be asked nor needed to be said.

"No need to get excited too early," However, Chu Min was not willing to heed Mo Lin's sudden change in mood, "Even though you hold an advantage due to your blood vessels, attaining the realm of Linking within a month is not likely."

"If we receive your instructions?" Xi Fan said. He could see that Chu Min would not talk such words without a reason. By saying not likely, she obviously pointed towards a situation, and thus, she was certainly capable of creating a different situation.

"Within a month, you can die, thrones can change, and thus, you can also breakthrough into the realm of Linking." She said.

"What should we do?" Xi Fan said.

"Completely sever your Soul's power." Chu Min said.

She didn't explain, but after the stage she'd set previously, the four individuals immediately understood.

In order to breakthrough into the realm of Linking, one had to perceive purely a single Soul's power, and Chu Min would help them to do so from outside.

"Soul's power is not the six senses, but when I strip off your Soul's power, you will also lose the corresponding senses. However, I will hold back a little on the Essence's soul, so that you can think and experience."

"Usually, I will recommend this kind of method for those who had to Link their Strength's soul. Therefore, generally I would have picked Su Tang for this method. However, since Mo Lin innately lacks Strength's soul and need not be stripped off it, he can preserve the strength for activities. What he will lose is the sense of vision, hearing, and smell. Apart from this, he will also be able retain the sense corresponding to the Hinge's soul. Thus, his condition will be even better off than Su Tang." Chu Min said.

"Haha, this is the amazing blood vessels of Mo family!" Mo Lin was

already complacent. Perhaps many would argue that Mo family would never accomplish the Linking of six souls, thus, their situation was quite regrettable nevertheless. However, Mo Lin would not do so. This was because Mo family was used to lament anyways, and currently, after discovering superiority in something regrettable, Mo Lin was already very gratified and satisfied.

However, after hearing Chu Min's words, everybody's vision converged on Xi Fan.

Being a cultivator who had to Link the Essence soul, this method was not recommended for him. So what sort of situation would he face? Putting up two and two together, everybody could tell: He was going to be stripped off of all the five senses. He didn't have any realm in the Sound's soul, but that was only because he hadn't yet made the breakthrough. This was completely different from Mo Lin's situation. He would only preserve his consciousness. Chu Min had already explained this. So comparatively, a method such as breaking through with the help of Essence's sou was too troublesome for him.

Regarding this point, Chu Min had begun to specially instruct Xi Fan:

"You will be in the most danger. You would lost strength for activities, signifying you will lose your ability to eat or excrete, even your lungs and heart would gradually lose the strength. However, you will not be able to feel any of these things. Your consciousness would only superficially hover. The only thing you would be able to feel is time, and that is the only thing you need to feel. Because under such circumstances you will be able to live seven days at best. I think three days is your current limit without being sustaining a serious injury."

"After three days, stripping of the Soul's power one more time after healing back should be possible, right?" Mo Lin asked.

"This is precisely the point I want to make absolutely clear. Once the Soul's power is stripped off, regaining it back through external means is not possible and only relies on you alone. And the method to do so is also only one: Breakthrough into the realm of Linking. After Linking, you

would be able to regain the Soul's Power relying on the power of Excellence's soul. If you failed to breakthrough, very regretfully, you will have to continue being in such circumstances, and you will....die."

Chapter 61: Always On His Own

And you will.....die.

Not the least bit of emphasis, not a threatening intention, and neither a warning tone, but truthful and as clear as the rising sun.

The morning birds chirped in the woods but the small plot of land had suddenly become silent.

Xi Fan raised his head and looked towards the azure sky.

Three days, life or death. If he failed he would not have the opportunity to see the sky again. Of course, he could also choose not to hurriedly promote himself using such a method. Participation in the Grand Soul Convention, which occurred every single year, didn't seem much of an issue against life and death. He absolutely didn't need to be as desperate as to resort to such means.

Or perhaps, after a few days when his injuries would be better, he might have a higher chance to succeed.

It wasn't as if Xi Fan didn't have any choice. When confronted with a situation concerning his life and death, he could always choose to avoid. Apparently, there was no reason that required him to take such a huge risk. At least, not external reasons.

What about his own?

"You have the morning to consider. Return here by the noon, and in case you give up, just leave on your own." Chu Min said.

The few individuals preserved silence, each lost in his/her own thoughts. Xi Fan wasn't the only one who had to decide. Mo Lin and Su Tang were only a little better off than him. Stripped off of so many senses, they would be under an extremely frantic condition. Whether they would be able to preserve, and complete the Linking on top of that, the risk was too great. Unusual method would naturally come at the expense of an unusual danger.

Mo Lin, pushing Xi Fan, left in silence. Su Tang, however, hadn't moved.

“I have already decided.” Su Tang said with a smile.

“Because I have to become strong! Become strong quickly!”

“So, I can start just now.”

“Ok.” Chu Min nodded but didn’t not say anything afterward. She stepped forward and arrived before Su Tang as a sphere of Soul’s Power gradually swirled above her right hand. Light? Air? Before it could be clearly distinguished, Chu Min’s right hand waved and the sphere flashed. At the side, Lu Ping was absolutely unable to make out where did the sphere actually hit Su Tang.

However, at this moment, Su Tang’s eyes had already lost its luster, seeming aimless.

Her head, however, was actually still precisely aimed at Lu Ping.

“Lu Ping, you over there?” She said.

“I am here.” Lu Ping said.

“I can’t see!” Su Tang giggled. Chu Min’s hand once again waved, as if severing something. Su Tang’s world suddenly became quiet.

She inclined her ear, no sound. She opened her mouth, no sound either.

Sound’s soul had already been severed. This time, Chu Min didn’t pause and waved her hand extremely quickly. Instantaneously, Qi’s soul and Hige’s soul had also been completely severed. A part of Essence’s soul had been left behind, and only Strength’s soul had been left completely intact.

Su Tang tried to walk. This time, she was completely clueless of the directions. Just after three steps, she started to walk off line. She tried extending her hand, but this time, she was immediately able to grab what she wanted.

Lu Ping was holding her hand as she laughed. Being already deprived of four of her senses, she could still laugh.

She nodded. Lu Ping also shook her hand, as if nodding back.

Subsequently, she let go of Lu Ping’s hand and slowly, fumblingly

worked her way around. She was adapting to her current circumstances at an extremely fast pace. She even turned around and laughed once more. Although her direction was wrong, laughing at a tree, Chu Min was moved.

She had seen many cultivators whom she had allowed to attain Linking through this method. On their faces, she saw panic, restlessness, or perhaps determination and certainty. However, a smile, a heartfelt smile at that, was something she had never seen before. Even those who managed to regain their four senses back after the Linking didn't possess such a smile. Despite being happy, they would be repressed by the traumatic experience. Some were even unable to get rid of the fear. Even after accomplishing the Linking, being in such circumstances left behind a nightmare that they couldn't get rid off, breaking their will power and ultimately turning them into a cripple.

However, this ten-something girl in front of her eyes, not only agreed on the spot, but even laughed under such circumstances. Chu Min could see this smile was genuine and not hypocritical.

She could definitely do it!

Chu Min never had such confidence in someone. The determination to assist each other and the mutual belief they had was actually this strong. This was Su Tang, but what about the other?

Chu Min looked towards Lu Ping. He was looking at Su Tang. Upon feeling Chu Min's gaze, he turned his head.

"What about you?" Chu Min suddenly said.

"I also want to get strong." Lu Ping said calmly and seriously.

"Your circumstances are far more complicated than them, and so will be the accomplishing the control."

"What should I do?" Lu Ping asked.

Chu Min casually threw something at him. Lu Ping caught it and checked it out. It was a strange-shaped chip which didn't seem to be of any use.

“This is the trash you made yesterday.” Chu Min said.

Lu Ping started before recalling the Transmission Room. The equipment he’d wrecked yesterday had also seemed made of this material. Currently, it seemed to have transformed into countless chips.

“Inject your Soul’s power and give it a try.” Chu Min said.

Lu Ping attempted. He already knew where the problem lied. However, when he cautiously drew out his Soul’s Power:

Bang...

The chip in his hand had broken. Since the injected Soul’s Power was not strong, it was not destroyed too badly, but it still broke in the end.

“Do you know what you need to do?” Chu Min said.

Lu Ping nodded while trying once again.

Bang...

Before the chip had two parts, now it had three.

“There are many more over that side.” Chu Min pointed with her fingers. Lu Ping turned his head where chips in all shapes and sizes were piled up like a mountain. He didn’t know when did Chu Min collected and brought them back.

“Once you have accomplished this, look for me again.” Chu Min said, Evidently, she was not a teacher who taught with words.

“Yes.” Lu Ping immediately turned and stepped towards the pile while looking at Su Tang who was trying some movements not too far away.

Begin, together!

Lu Ping picked up a chip; his eyes full of anticipation.

In the past, he had always tried to work his way around by himself. In Zhai Feng institute, he searched through some books and other resources, but couldn’t find anything relevant to him. His situation was, after all, too unique.

Infinitesimal Separation, Wen Gecheng, was the first person who

allowed him to learn the value of teachings. However, unfortunately, he met the former a little too late. His current condition had already stepped beyond the point where Wen Gecheng could help him. Even when Godou sent them to the Tian Zhao institute, to Lu Ping his instructions were still that he had to rely on himself.

On his path, he could only rely on himself.

Lu Ping had the determination, however, it was hard for him to not feel a little sad. Actually, he was quite envious of the institutes' students. They had teachers to guide them, fellow students for mutual reference. Lu Ping longed for a guy who was also confined with Intense Soul Lock, with whom he could exchange pointers.

He longed for such a person!

Lu Ping again poured the Power of Sound's soul before the chip in his hand exploded. Due to his emotions, this time, the explosion was quite fierce and even scratched his hand a little bit.

However, Lu Ping didn't mind at all. He again picked a new chip and cheerfully tried again.

Chapter 62: Crazy Cultivation

Bang.....Bang.....Bang....

The rhythmic sounds were echoing in the woods. A big pile of broken material stood beside Lu Ping's left foot, and very soon, another small pile could be seen beside Lu Ping's right foot, of which the material was even more fragmented than the previous one.

Success cannot be obtained so easily. Every time, Lu Ping proceeded with more caution, however, the result was nevertheless the same; an explosion and the material becoming even more fragmented.

However, he was not discouraged.

He broke one piece, picked up another one, and repeated. He didn't feel bored at all as he gladly worked with his entire concentration. Wen Yan, leaning on library's window, had been watching this for almost half an hour. However, he didn't sense anything at all. After half an hour, he paused, seemingly contemplating. Subsequently, he turned his head in another direction where Su Tang, without any sense of direction, was still aimlessly walking and trying all sorts of movements. Lu Ping withdrew his vision when he saw Wen Yan leaning on the library's window. Wen Yan also seized the opportunity at once and asked:

"What are you guys doing?"

She couldn't make anything out of SuTang's actions.

The actions of Lu Ping, who was near the window, were also indiscernible for her in the beginning, but she was able to infer some clues later on.

However, Lu Ping's reply was quite simple:

"Cultivation."

As soon as he finished speaking, he picked up another fragment, gathered his concentration, perceived the Sound's soul and proceeded on to inject it with extreme caution.

“Hey, you should take a rest!” However, he suddenly heard Wen Yan talking once again.

Peng...

A soft sound, like that of someone’s gasp, marked Lu Ping’s defeat again.

Lu Ping would not be vexed because of simple defeat, however, if the defeat were to be caused due to external factors, he would naturally mind it a lot. He raised his head, and his vision, which was on Wen Yan, was full of reproach.

“Blaming me?” We Yan said.

“Of course, don’t make noise.” Lu Ping said.

Wen Yan was angry. She had been watching them so patiently for half an hour. Over there, what sort of weird cultivation Su Tang was doing, she had no idea. Here, she could see some hope in what Lu Ping was doing. Yesterday, when Lu Ping destroyed the equipment in the Transmission Room, she had been present. Apparently, at this moment, he was using the yesterday’s destroyed equipment for his training.

However, how could it be so easy? The control over the purity of Soul’s Power was a necessity for the breakthrough into the realm of Linking. She had to spend full eight months after attaining the sixth Heavenly layer in the Infusion’s soul. Just on the basis of this fact, she was considered as a genius in the Tian Zhao institute. These guys, coming from some institute in the Xia Feng institute, said that they wanted to participate in the Soul Convention. Apparently, from their attitude, they truly intended to breakthrough into the realm of Linking in a month?

Wen Yan had always been a troublemaker. Anything that caught her eye would be regarded as interesting. However, what currently transpired in front of her eyes didn’t feel interesting to her at all. She only felt it absurd. And this guy actually blamed her for this absurd matter. She didn’t feel like apologizing at all, instead, she felt a little wronged.

However Lu Ping evidently did not have any intention to reason with her

since he seemed as if he was about to continue his training. However, as he lowered his head and looked at the chip in his hand, he was astonished.

The fragment in his hand had cracked, but not completely snapped off. It was still whole somehow. Half of it was snapped, which suspended from the other half.

This never happened. All the fragments, having the same material and same tolerance, always completely snapped. However, what did this imply, progress?

Progress was naturally worth celebrating, however, how did it actually happen? Just now, nothing was different about his control. At the last moment, while injecting the power of Sound's soul, he suddenly heard Wen Yan's voice. Subsequently, the fragment snapped off as usual, but the extent of damage was somewhat less this time.

Was it coincidence? Or, hearing that voice instead strengthened his proficiency of control.

Lu Ping couldn't say for sure. He somewhat perplexedly raised his head, just to see Wen Yan, leaning forward on the window, angrily staring at him.

"Currently, you can't even control a single Soul's power, yet you wish to breakthrough into the realm of Linking in one month, isn't this too naive?"

Opportunity!

Hearing Wen Yan speaking again, Lu Ping immediately picked up another fragment. However, he wasn't hurried. Instead, like every time, he completely focused his attention, and this time he was hearing what Wen Yan was saying.

"You are really strange. Such a strong power, how could you not accomplish such a simple matter? Even more strange is why can't I perceive your Soul's Power most of the time?"

Bang!

With a soft sound, fragment in Lu Ping's hand once again cracked.

"Hey, you are not hearing what I say!" Wen Yan yelled.

"I am hearing, I am hearing!" Lu Ping was quite excited since he had confirmed his conjecture. It had not snapped completely, just like before.

"You can keep going." Lu Ping said, when he had already picked up another fragment.

"What keep going! You have to reply me, all right? I just asked you something, you didn't hear?"

Bang!

This time was also the same. Now, he was sure that this had something to do with Wen Yan speaking.

"Which ability are you using while speaking?"

He wished to understand it one step further.

"What ability!" She was not in a good. She could infer seeing Lu Ping's two attempts. She was but a Linked One of Infusion's soul. Her eyesight was quite keen, and from the extent of damage of fragments, she could tell that Lu Ping had some progress.

"You are hearing my words; this is related to perception. Thus, it unknowingly increased your attention on Sound's soul. However, its effect will be only this much. It's not that useful." Wen Yan could not only discern, but she was even clear on the reason behind it.

"Oh, then you continue speaking." Lu Ping had already picked up another fragment and seemed eager to try his hand.

"What continue!" Wen Yan was angry. She had the illustrious identity of the big sister, a celebrity in the institute. How had she turned into a servant in the eyes of this country bumpkin, bossing her around as he pleased?

She glared at Lu Ping and naturally didn't continue speaking. She reached out with her hand and pulled out a round, circular thing from her pocket and patted it on the window's ledge, "Use this."

“What is this?” Lu Ping asked.

“You haven’t seen Sound Preserving Device?” Wen Yan was astonished. How destitute is this Xia Feng region?

“Eh... I’ve heard about it.” Lu Ping recalled that Su Tang did mention such a thing to him.

“Too miserable....” Wen Yan was somewhat sympathetic. Heard but not seen.....isn’t this a bit too pathetic?

“This thing goes like this,” Wen Yan’s tone suddenly became much gentler, “Using the power of Sound’s soul, this thing can store sounds, which can be utilized later using the Sound’ soul.”

While speaking, Wen Yan’s finger softly clicked on its upper side. It didn’t seem like she had controlled any Soul’s power, but a melodious sound came out of the oblate thing.

“How about it?”

“En, using this stuff will certainly make cultivation much easier!” Lu Ping was regretfully sighed.

Cultivation.....? Who said this thing is for cultivation?

Wen Yan couldn’t keep up with Lu Ping’s reasoning at all. Lu Ping had already picked up another fragment. This time, he was controlling his Sound’s soul while listening to the melody.

“If this sort of cultivation had any use, why would everyone suffer so many hardships?” Wen Yan muttered.

Bang, a soft sound.

That’s what I said! Wen Yan was thinking, however, as she shifted her vision, she saw that the fragment in Lu Ping’s hand had not even snapped. The fragment was just cracked. Although the crack was deep, it clearly represented progress.

“Very pleasant to hear.” Lu Ping appraised the melody coming out of Sound Preserving Tool.

‘Because he was able to increase his focus by listening to the melody?’

Wen Yan was thinking, but soon after, her face turned dark again.

Didn’t Lu Ping’s words were the same as saying her voice was unpleasant and people didn’t want to hear it?

“Absolutely shameless juvenile!” Wen Yan cursed in muffled voice, but didn’t disturb Lu Ping this time. She had seen the progress Lu Ping in such a short duration. What he was doing didn’t seem too absurd now!

It might not be impossible.....As Wen Yan was thinking, an extremely dense Soul’s Power rushed at her. She hurriedly jerked herself back from the window’s opening.

Bang!

A wave of dust could be seen at the window’s ledge. Wen Yan blankly shifted her vision, only to discover that her Sound Preserving Tool had already been turned into dust.

“You need to pay attention to the process, not the result.” Early in the morning, far away from her, the drunkard was drinking while instructing Lu Ping.

Chapter 63: Crazy Cultivation

“My Sound Preserving Device.....” Wen Yan somewhat wished to cry. The device itself didn’t matter, but the melody inside was what she had carefully hand-picked through several years, and of which she was extremely fond of. However, at this moment, it had already turned into dust.

“Uh.....” Lu Ping was at a loss for words. Wen Yan handed him the device out of her good-will to assist him. So he was responsible in a way. He wanted to say that he would compensate her, but how much did it cost? If he said and couldn’t afford the cost, that wouldn’t be good. Thus, Lu Ping was hesitating.

“Don’t speak....Let me cry for a moment.” Wen Yan withdrew into herself in silence. If anyone else had done this to her Sound Preserving Device, she definitely wouldn’t have left the matter be. However, when confronted against a person with unknown origins and depth such as Chu Min, she didn’t have the courage to go reason with her, and she knowingly withdrew.

“Continue.” Chu Min didn’t mind her at all as she yelled from afar.

“Yes.” Lu Ping immediately resumed his cultivation.

The process, not the result?

Contemplating on these words for a short while, Lu Ping understood. His aim was not to breakthrough into the realm of Linking, but to grasp the power of Control. A lot of people could already grasp it during the Perception realm. External means could only help one to achieve the final step. In the future, every time he fought and he had to use the Sound’s soul, he couldn’t listen to the melody from the Sound Preserving Device first, could he? Though it did present quite a picture.

Bang!

This time, Lu ping was quite distracted. Due to the terrible control, the fragment in his hand immediately snapped into four pieces.

Lu Ping sucked a deep breath, turned his head, looked at Su Tang and moderated his thoughts before proceeding.

The sun was increasingly ascending. Although the woods had the shade of trees, but the climate was gradually becoming hot. Although Lu Ping was doing something quite unsophisticated, controlling the Sound's soul uninterrupted was actually quite taxing. His forehead was covered with sweat, but he didn't seem to mind at all.

Bang...

An unknown amount of time passed before Lu Ping let out a long sigh, paused for a second to wipe the sweat with his sleeves. After losing the assistance of conversation and the Sound Preserving Device, he had once again returned back to the starting point and didn't make any progress whatsoever.

At the window's opening, a wooden stool appeared.

"Take a seat!" Wen Yan said.

She had not left at all. She had randomly found herself a book in the library, and she was reading it while keeping a close eye on Lu Ping and Su Tang's cultivation.

She was still not clear on Su Tang's situation, however, she could no longer bother them. Seeing the two individuals being so serious and so focused, she had started to feel troubled. At this point, Wen Yan was somewhat moved. She was only curious about what was the motivation that allowed them to be so resolute. Grand Soul Convention? In Wen Yan's world, the Grand Soul Convention couldn't be this big of a motivation.

Seeing that Lu Ping had stopped cultivating, she immediately passed him the wooden stool beside her. Lu Ping's cultivation didn't depend on posture, thus, sitting could be regarded as saving energy.

"Thank you." Lu Ping didn't reject Wen Yan's good will. Though standing did not cause him much trouble either.

He continued his cultivation. Chu Min only sat under the tree, drinking

wine. She did not provide any further instructions. She had actually consumed three entire bottles in one morning.

At this point, the sun was about to hit the middle. Wen Yan's stomach had started to churn. However, she could see Su Tang and Lu Ping didn't have the slightest intention of stopping.

Isn't this too crazy? She thought, but didn't dare bother them.

Gulululu....

The sound of wheels rolling suddenly entered her ears at this moment. She saw the two individuals from yesterday who had been in the Dean's room had also arrived; one pushing the other.

Under the tree, Chu Min finally shifted her vision from the wine and looked at the two individuals who had arrived. Lu Ping, who had single-mindedly cultivating this whole time also stopped for the time being and looked at them.

"What are you playing at?" Mo Lin was stupefied as he looked at the pile of garbage beside Lu Ping's right and left feet.

"Cultivation." Lu Ping said.

"Innovative." Mo Lin sighed admiringly before eventually asking:

"Did you eat?" He raised the handbag in his hand. He'd casually brought some food back.

"Ok." Lu Ping nodded.

"Su Tang, teacher Chu Min, have some food." Mo Lin shouted all around.

Dang it!

Being already hungry, Wen Yan was gloomy.

Chu Min also came over. However, Su Tang still hadn't responded.

"Su Tang, have some food!" Mo Lin shouted in a louder voice. Su Tang still didn't show any response as she awkwardly and clumsily walked about and made all sort of movements.

Xi Fan's complexion was slightly changed. He already knew. Mo Lin, after Su Tang had not replied him again, also revealed an astonished expression.

"Ah? She has already begun?"

"En." Lu Ping nodded.

"When did she begin?" Mo Lin asked.

"When you two left." Lu Ping said.

"In other words, she immediately agreed?" Mo Lin was astonished; astonished at Su Tang's decisiveness, astonished at her determination.

Lu Ping went over to Su Tang and patted her.

Su Tang ceased her movements and cocked her head, as if asking what.

Lu Ping pulled her in the direction of Chu Min and the rest. Su Tang immediately understood. As she walked, her steps were although still cautious, they were evidently a lot more confident and stable. Because, someone she trusted her was guiding her.

Mo Lin and Xi Fan were silently looking at Su Tang.

They returned, which signified their consent. Su Tang's present condition was precisely what they were about to go through. Of course, for Xi Fan, it would not just be limited to this.

Lu Ping led Su Tang back and helped her to sit down.

Food's aroma, flavour.....she couldn't sense any of it. However, food has temperature, and Strength's soul, Hinge's soul could sense temperature. Su Tang immediately sensed the food's temperature. She stretched her hand and felt the steam before smiling.

Lu Ping placed a spoonful beside her mouth. Su Tang could feel the temperature as she opened her mouth and ate from the spoon.

No flavour, no smell, nothing at all. Su Tang shook her head, apparently telling everybody about this feeling.

By that time, Wen Yan had arrived beside them. She had not been able

to understand what was Su Tang was doing, but after Lu Ping guided her back, she understood a little. In the end, her curiosity got better of her, and she walked over. After getting closer, she was almost sure that this girl had lost a lot of her senses.

“How is she like this?” Wen Yan astonishedly asked. Is it because of yesterday’s injuries? If that’s the case, this would be too unfortunate.

“Lost four senses. Only Strength’s soul and a smidgen of Essence’s soul is left behind.” Lu Ping said.

“How so?”

“Cultivation.” Lu Ping said.

“You people.....are you insane?” Wen Yan dumbstruck.

“Even more crazy one is here!” Xi Fan smiled.

“You...” Wen Yan looked at Xi Fan. She was not stupid, in fact, she was quite intelligent. After learning that Su Tang was only left behind with Stregnth’s soul while cultivating, she was already aware of the crux of such a method of cultivation. As such, now Xi Fan was also saying the same thing, then it meant he would lose all the five senses and would only be left with consciousness. This is undoubtedly much worse than Su Tang’s situation.

“This is your way of instructing?” Wen Yan asked, looking at Chu Min.

Chapter 64: Correct Determination.

“Quite cruel method, but usually quite effective as well.” Chu Min said without a change in her expression. She ate quite slowly. In comparison, she drank wine much faster.

“Is this really necessary?” Wen Yan asked, not only Chu Min, but also the other four.

“It’s only a Grand Soul Convention. There was one last year, one is this year, one will be next year and also the next of next year.” Wen Yan said.

“Of course, Grand Soul Convention is not not that important,” Xi Fan said, “We all have our own reasons.”

“You have also decided?” Chu Min looked at Xi Fan and asked the final confirmation. Evidently, Xi Fan’s choice was the most grave.

“Decided.” Xi Fan said without the slightest hesitation.

“So, begin?” Chu Min asked.

“Begin.” Xi Fan said.

“Ok!” Chu Min nodded.

Xi Fan had shown the correct determination.

If he had given up, Chu Min wouldn’t have said a word. If he had decided to wait for his injuries to heal, Chu Mn would have rejected him.

Waiting for injury to heal was fine, and it would increase his chances of succeeding substantially. However, for Xi Fan, his cultivation was like being placed on a field of death where one could only move forward in order to survive. He couldn’t retreat a single step and could not have a relaxed attitude. Waiting for the injury to heal was already a kind of retreat. With such a mind set, he might be able to win him some more time for cultivation. However, it wouldn’t help him much. This sort of attitude was itself a fatal weakness. After all, Xi Fan had to undergo the Linking of Essence’s soul.

“Eat a bit less.” This was Chu Min’s last moment advice for Xi Fan. As

for Mo Lin, she didn't even ask him. Among the three individuals, Mo Lin's situation could be considered as the best.

Thereupon, in the afternoon, two more figures could be seen in the woods.

Mo Lin sat under a tree. He didn't resemble Su Tang who was trying every possible movement. He wished to Link Pivot's soul. This moment, he was chewing on a grass root, which was quite bitter. However, Mo Lin seemed as if he was tasting some delicacy and was thoroughly experiencing the taste within.

The sense of taste was a specific perception of Hinge's soul. Arousing the feeling of taste could initiate a certain effect on control. This was the same argument as Lu Ping while listening to Wen Yan's words or music had an slightly increased control over the Sound's soul. However, the emphasis of Lu Ping's cultivation was different. He needed to learn the control itself. Thus, Chu Min didn't allow him external help. While Mo Lin's and the others' main aim was the breakthrough into the realm of Linking. Thus, using external means to arouse the control was a simple and easy method. Although this method was not much effective than Wen Yan's words for Lu Ping, it was better than nothing.

As for Xi Fan, he was motionlessly lying down under a tree.

Sun shined, wind blew, small grass caressed his face, however, he didn't feel any of this. After losing his Strength's soul, he had already lost the basic sense of touch. He couldn't see, couldn't hear, couldn't taste, and couldn't not even feel something.

He wished to cultivate the Essence's soul. Essence's soul was consciousness; it was state of mind. After losing his five senses, no information from outside could be transmitted to him. He also had no way to obtain as minute of an assistance as holding a grass root as Mo Lin was doing. He was just quietly lying down, without a single individual knowing how hard of a struggle the consciousness inside that body of his was facing at this moment. On the exterior, his cultivation seemed the most tranquil among the three, but in reality, his cultivation was the

most ruthless one.

Wen Yan had been watching them all along. She saw Mo Lin and Xi Fan losing their senses with the help of Chu Min and also saw them striving under such circumstances to make the breakthrough.

She didn't know what could possibly be their reasons for doing this, but such a determination and attitude astonished her greatly.

Bang.....Bang.....Bang....

Here, Lu Ping was still holding a fragment. Big pile had turned into the small pile, and small pile had turned into the big pile. Although he wasn't trapped into a frightening situation like the other three, his seriousness was not inferior one bit.

Did she put in such an effort?

They were cultivators who were far inferior to her in terms of realm, yet they evoked a feeling of crisis in her. At Tian Zhao, her fellow genius classmates never caused her to feel such a sense of inferiority.

Cannot relax!

As she thought about how she had spent her whole morning going through books and watching other people cultivate, Wen Yan felt that she was indeed a bit too wasteful of time. She didn't wait anymore and resolutely left to focus on her own cultivation.

Only five individuals remained.

Su Tang continued to roam about, Mo Lin continued to taste all sorts of things, Xi fan was still quiet as before, Lu Ping was still seriously training on fragments, and Chu Min, at a position from where she could see every single one of them, opened a new bottle. The smell of alcohol once again permeated the woods.

Bi Polar institute.

Diagonally opposite to Tian Zhao. The two institutes had been fiercely competing from the day they were established. However, even after several hundreds of years, neither of the institutes had managed to win.

Both the institutes had progressed quite fast and had always been ranked next to each other in the continent's Feng Yun List. As for the Zhi Ling region's list, they combinedly occupied the first and the second positions.

However, at this moment, outside the gate of Bi Polar institute was a group of listless and dispirited students. Some of them even had minor bruises and scars.

These students were precisely Xia Feng institute's first grade and third grade students who had rushed from the Xia Feng region to borrow Bi Polar's Soul's Tower.

Their assessment went smooth, but as if inferior creatures who had entered a group of a high level species, they suffered discrimination. A moment ago, they finally couldn't endure anymore and incited a group fight. Subsequently, they were beaten black and blue by the students of Bi Polar institute and were chased out of the institute.

They had originally planned to leave today, but ended up in such a condition. They all felt quite sullen. But then again, they didn't have a choice either. They were far inferior in terms of realm. They could only bear grudges in their hearts and curse inwardly before leaving with tail between their legs.

"Ha ha ha ha." The group of Bi Polar institute's students who had chased them out of the institute had enjoyed themselves quite a bit as well. At this moment, looking that none from the side of Xia Feng institute was running their mouths, the Bi Polar students did not continue to tangle with them anymore.

"A bunch of country bumpkins...wasting time." Someone said while spitting on the ground. Today's fight also broke due to a similar taunt. Some people taunted the students of Xia Feng institute on their low realms, saying that regardless of how they cultivated, it would be a waste of time. Both sides entered an argument, and fight broke out. Students of Xia Feng were turned into sorry figures, seemingly affirming the previous statement.

"Who are these people?" Some students of Tian Zhao also happened to

walk out of the entrance diagonally opposite to that of Bi Polar institute. They felt quite curious as they saw a group of people spiritedly walking away and asked facing Tian Zhao institute.

The two institutes although had a competitive relationship, the students wouldn't be as 'you die, and I live'. They still had normal interactions between each other.

"A bunch of country bumpkins from the Xia Feng region. Reportedly, their Soul's Tower was destroyed, and they rushed to use our Soul's Tower for assessment. With such a level, they were really asking to be disgraced."

The individual who answered did so in a loud voice, obviously, wishing to be heard by the Xia Feng students. Xia Feng students replied something, but accelerated their steps.

"They're so bad?" The students of Tian Zhao stared blankly.

"Of course, they are. Our institute heard that yesterday four intruders came and created quite a scene? Who were they?" The students from the side of Bi Polar asked.

"They were also the students from Xia Feng region."

"Xia Feng region's students, and they made you bounce around like chickens? We heard they even damaged your Transmission Tower?"

"Your mother! Who said that! Isn't it standing just fine? Can't you see it?! Students of Tian Zhao furiously pointed towards the Tower, which could be clearly seen even with the separation of several roads due to its height.

"It hasn't dropped, but is it fine?"

"What nonsense!"

The students of the two institutes could interact, but it didn't mean they were friends. The conversation went on the wrong track, and an explosive atmosphere began to spread around.

"What, you wanna go at it? That's pretty fortunate since tidying up that

bunch of rubbish was not satisfying enough, we'll use this opportunity to teach you a lesson?"

"Just you? Would you even know how you died? Tian Zhao students rushed ahead, and a new fight had already erupted.

The street separating the two institutes was quite spacious. However, rarely would someone be seen walking on it. This was because the last year, the average number of fights that occurred on this street per day....amounted to thirty two.....

Chapter 65: City Master Mansion's Resources

As the Xia Feng students, who had almost left the street, turned their heads upon hearing the commotion behind them. They were immediately somewhat frightened by the scene before them.

A quiet street instantly turned into a battlefield. All sorts of abilities of different Soul's Power dancing in the street, and following it, blood rippling.

At this moment, Xia Feng students were silent. They had acknowledged that as cultivators, they were indeed inferior. This moment, all sorts of abilities obtained after the Linking of the souls could be seen being used by the students of these two institutes. What about them?

"We should...leave.." Someone said.

His tone was quite emotional as if he was seeing a completely different world. The identity of Xia Feng students, the heaven's proud children, was nowhere to be seen on this street. As they left, no one even glanced at them. All were already immersed in one of the three point two fights that happened every day on this street.

However, for other students passing through this street, it seemed as if this fight did not pose any inconvenience at all. Some would sneak a few glances, then busy themselves with their own affairs, while some would excitedly join in the fun. This scene had continued through several centuries. Never ever had been a victor, and both institutes also treated it as a part of their training. No one tried to interfere or shouted to stop. Sometimes, even teachers joined in.

As for injuries, blood, critical condition..... of course, such things couldn't be avoided in a fight of this scale. Killing; this was beyond the bottom line of both sides. Occasionally, amidst chaos, even if such a thing happened, a search would be launched to find out the culprit and dealt accordingly. However, every year, some students and teachers of

both the institutes would disappear and were never seen again. Both sides would accuse the counterpart of underhanded murders. However, neither side had ever been able to find proof. After so many years, with so many cases being accumulated over time, neither side had a proper account of such cases.

Even this street and the high walls of the institutes had been baptized unaccountable times. Within Zhi Ling region, this street was already a legend. A legend of the growth and the fights of the two institutes.

“Senior Zhushu, finally!”

“Fang Wu!”

“Senior sister, Qin Sang.”

As the fight progressed, various heavyweights began to join in. Some boosted their side’s morale, some attracted other side’s hatred, influencing the drift of the fight in different ways. The fight was becoming increasingly serious. However, the two institutes were indeed evenly matched. Both sides had their advantages and disadvantages. However, on the whole, neither side managed to suppress the other. One side would gain an advantage, then one more person would join the other side, shifting the advantage, and so on.....

“Tian Zhao and Bipolar, their reputation is indeed well-deserved.”

Wei Ming, who had also come from the Xia Feng region, was watching the scene on the street with Wei Yang. His knowledge was naturally far above the superficial knowledge of those Xia Feng students who had only mixed within the Xia Feng region. He knew how big this world was and to what level Xia Feng region lagged behind. Tian Zhao and Bipolar, this was the level of the institutes standing on the top of this continent.

Beside him stood Wei Yang. He was still wearing his mask, but inside his revealed eyes, astonishment could be clearly seen.

In experience, he was undoubtedly far behind Wei Ming. Sheltered by the City Master and trained into a cultivator, his time had been too lacking. However, in comparison with the person standing beside him and

especially the students of Xia Feng region's two institutes, his talent was simply unrivaled. At his age, not a single person in Xia Feng region had attained the realm of Linking beside him.

Everybody said that he was a genius, and he agreed. However, being in the City Master Mansion, he had inevitably heard of many external affairs.

However, what he felt upon hearing couldn't be compared to the shock he received upon seeing with his own eyes. Before him, on this street inside Zhi Ling region, he could see so many individuals of his age and some even smaller than him. Each and every one of these individuals possessed realms that were not inferior to his. If this level of achievement could make one genius, then this street was full of geniuses who were fighting a battle where their bones broke and blood flew.

Wei Ming was calmly watching.

They would obviously not join in, but he didn't seem to have the slightest intention of leaving either.

Xia Feng region's assessment had concluded, but they had not rushed from Xia Feng region to take the assessment. The assessment was something they casually did along the way. Following would be the Grand Soul Convention which was the main purpose of their visit. They also needed to cultivate beforehand. Especially Wei Ming and Wei Tianqi who only possessed the sixth Heavenly layer of Qi's soul.

They would be cultivating in the Bipolar institute. However, this favor was not obtained through Baliyan. The latter only had friendly relations with Bipolar institute. However, Wei family had a deep relationship with Bipolar institute. Whom they had come to look for was but the individual who was guided by Wei Zhong back in the day and had already become an illustrious figure in Zhi Ling region, the Bipolar institute's current dean, Tang Mu.

As the two watched the chaotic battle on the street, suddenly, a figure appeared out of nowhere and stood beside Wei Ming.

Wei Ming said without turning his head, "Is everything arranged on

young city master's side?"

"Yes." Wei Ying answered.

"For the following twenty-one day's closed-door cultivation, the young master could only rely on himself." Wei Ming stated.

They were quite clear that as far as cultivation was concerned, Wei Tianqi's talent was not outstanding. However, as the son of the City Master, the cultivation resources he could access was not something ordinary people could even hope to attain.

All sorts of cultivation methods, medicines, and secrets had been at the service of Wei Tianqi from the beginning of his cultivation. Through such means, he'd attained the sixth layer of Qi's soul which was already the peak achievement in the Xia Feng institute.

However, in the institutes of Zhi Ling region, this level of achievement was evidently insufficient. However, all this had already been arranged by Wei Zhong. He, who liked efficiency, had already forged the most efficient road for Wei Tianqi's cultivation from the very beginning. Although Wei Tianqi lagged somewhat compared to the level of Zhi Ling region, after attaining the single soul sixth Heavenly Layer, the next breakthrough could be attained. This cultivation would require the guidance of Bi Polar institute's dean Tang Mu. This was one of the main objectives of We family's delegation during this time's journey.

"You have benefited from young city master this time." Wei Ming said to Wei Yang.

Wei Yang nodded. Although it was only Wei Tianqi's left behind resources, for ordinary people, even such an opportunity was almost impossible. The members of City Master Mansion were no different. If not for the similarity of his and Wei Tianqi's ages and the high compatibility with the cultivation method prepared specifically for the latter, this opportunity of picking up the leftovers wouldn't have befallen him, Wei Yang, who had a low seniority in the Wei family's twelve protectors.

However. Efficiency is efficiency. Letting him have this opportunity had

the most efficiency. Thus, he obtained it. From tomorrow, he would also undergo a twenty-one-day explosive closed-door cultivation. He looked forward to it as well.

Wei Ming and Wei Ying, who wouldn't have any specific tasks in the subsequent short time-period, also wouldn't sit idle. Raised in the City Master Mansion, their habits wouldn't allow them to waste the most precious resource, the time. They would fully exploit every minute and every second.

"Those four individuals from Zhai Feng have reportedly entered Tian Zhao institute." Wei Ming said.

"A lot of people saw them." Wei Ying said.

"I will see the matters of Grand Soul Convention. You look for an opportunity to scout them." Wei Ming instructed.

"Yes." Wei Ying nodded.

Subsequently, the three turned their back on the intense fight going on and left without the slightest hesitation. City Master Mansion's personnel would never waste time on some excitement.

Chapter 66: Day One

Today, the battle occurred on the street could neither be regarded as too big nor too small. After the number of injuries increased, the fight was left unsettled as always.

The curtain of night descended. For many people, it represented the end of their daily cultivation, and probably the time to relax. During this time, many students would slip away from the institutes and go to the market to have some fun. Fighting with the students of the other institute also meant fun in the dictionary of many students. Thereupon, after the big fight in the day, two small fights occurred on the street during the night. The guards of the two institutes napped, not interested in watching the lively scene at all.

Lu Ping and the rest had been cultivating throughout the entire day. Apart from a little rest during the dinner, the night didn't affect them whatsoever. It lasted until Chu Min called an end to the day's cultivation.

Lu Ping helped in settling down Mo Lin and Su Tang. The situation of the two looked good. Especially Su Tang; she fell asleep almost as soon as she lay down. Her sleep seemed quite deep while her face had a smile on it.

Even though she had lost four senses, she was still calm and serene. Because something that was even more important to her had begun.

However, Xi Fan's condition couldn't be discerned. Su Tang and Mo Lin could still use facial expressions to convey their feelings. However, Xi Fan couldn't. For him, the time seemed to have stopped from the moment he lost his senses. Apart from a cultivator of Essence's soul, who had some ability like talking through thoughts, nobody could communicate with him. Had he stopped cultivating to have some rest? Had he encountered some trouble? Was he still continuing with his greatest effort, or was he discouraged?

Didn't know, and couldn't tell.

Lu Ping looked towards Chu Min. Chu Min, knowing his thoughts, could

only shake her head. She couldn't tell either.

The night passed, and the first day of cultivation was over.

For many people, this was an ordinary day.

According to the last year's incomplete statistics, humankind's average life expectancy was 113 years, which is 41245 days. One day was the forty-thousandth part of one's life, but for Xi Fan, this one day amounted to one-third of his total life.

Because if within the next three days, he couldn't undergo Linking, he could only die.

As soon as Lu Ping woke up early morning, he specially went to Xi Fan and looked at his condition. Although he was aware that he wouldn't be able to discern anything, perhaps Xi Fan had already obtained success and had already regained consciousness?

However, he had not.

Xi Fan's face was tranquil, so tranquil that he almost felt dead. Lu Ping couldn't help but reach out and try to feel his breath.

"He is living." From behind came Chu Min's voice.

Lu Ping let out a sigh.

"Your perception is too lacking." Subsequently, he was ruthlessly exposed. In order to check someone's breath, a cultivator had to reach out with his hand? There were thousands of methods to check someone's breath distantly.

"I was only confirming." Lu Ping explained. Although his perception was not too sharp, it was not as lacking as Chu Ming implied either.

Chu Min was also aware. Hence, she didn't reply;. She was holding a bottle. The first glimmer of light had barely reached the ground, and she had already begun to drink.

Lu Pin made a round trip to bring breakfast, then helped Su Tang and Mo Lin to eat. Mo Lin was especially happy while eating. Being able to retain Pivot's soul was simply a joy to him. He savored every bite. For Su

Tang, no matter how delicious the food was, this moment, it held no meaning. She ate quickly, then immediately began to cultivate. Just after one day, her movements were no longer that shaky and strange and had begun to look natural and smooth. Evidently, her control of Strength's soul had already gone up a notch. Her control over her movements and sense of touch were becoming increasingly sharp.

Lu Ping, however, didn't seem to have made any improvement. Only that small pile had become even smaller. Even that tiny bit of improvement, when he heard music or Wen Yan's talk, couldn't be seen at this moment.

A bit of disappointment was hard to avoid, but he was not discouraged. He moved his stool, sat before the small pile and began the new day.

"You have improved. Since your perception is too bad, you can't sense it yourself." Chu Min suddenly said to him.

"Right!" Lu Ping was excited. So the situation was not as bad as he'd thought. This boosted his spirit as he immersed himself in the new day's cultivation.

"This child is really simple, so easy to trick." Early morning, Wen Yan had again arrived. Upon hearing Chu Min's words, she somehow managed the courage to come beside Chu Min and speak. She was clearly not much older than Lu Ping, but as if she had experienced all sorts of ups and downs of life, she referred Lu Ping as a 'child'. Apparently, she wanted to reduce the distance between her and Chu Min.

Chu Min glanced at her and said without a change in her expression:

"Your perception is also not much stronger than him."

"What?" Wen Yan said.

"Because I didn't deceive him. He really has some progress." Chu Min said.

Wen Yan started. She thought that Chu Min, upon seeing Lu Ping not making any improvement at all, said some words to comfort and encourage him; a white lie. However, it turned out to be her own wishful thinking.

Wen Yan's face blushed for a second. After a while, she again managed to summon enough courage:

"Teacher Chu Min, in your opinion, what are my shortcomings in cultivation?"

She had already interacted with all the teachers in the institute. From them, she had not received many new things. Currently, having discovered that this drunkard woman, whom everybody had always avoided like plague, was actually this strong and so courageous that she allowed students to train in such a manner, Wen Yan also wished to ask guidance from her.

"You?" Chu Min again glanced at her, and again without a change in expression, she said:

"Reduce your fun a bit, and you would be much stronger."

"I..." Wen was left speechless, and she blushed again. In Tian Zhao, She was notorious to create trouble and enjoy watching it unfold. This drunkard woman also seemed to be holding a similar opinion. She didn't expect that the latter also knew this fault of her. If she valued time and exerted herself fully into cultivation, she would certainly make a huge improvement. Wen Yan herself was also aware of this reasoning. However, this was her nature. If in order to become stronger, she changed her nature, would she still be herself?

This problem was Wen Yan's own. She had to solve it herself. No one else could help her.

Wen Yan sighed, then looked at Xi Fan:

"How is he doing?"

"Only he himself knows." Chu Min said.

"You are incapable of communicating with as well?" Wen Yan said.

"My Essence's soul is quite ordinary." Chu Min said.

"You are guiding him through the Linking of Essence's soul, though?" Wen Yan said.

“Not guiding. I only have a method for them. From this point, they can only rely on themselves.” Chu Min indifferently said.

As she said these words, her head cocked at an odd angle and vision shot towards the treetop of a tree in the southwest.

What is there?

Wen Yan shifted her vision after Chu Min and looked at that tree's top. However, apart from the treetop faintly swaying due to the wind, she didn't find anything else.

“You look after them for a while.” Chu Min said and suddenly moved towards that direction.

“Where are you going?” Wen Yan felt puzzled. As her vision returned, she saw a figure flickering. Her vision turned towards that figure, but not a soul could be seen.

Where?

Surprisingly, Wen Yan couldn't find Chu Min's trace. That treetop was still faintly swaying, and nothing seemed to be happening there.

Chapter 67: This Is Floating As Well.

Discovered!

This moment, Wei Ying truly felt like crying but no tears came.

Within the city master's twelve Protectors, as far as killing and fighting were concerned, he wouldn't dare to claim the number one title. However, in terms of trailing and assassinating, if he was number two, then no one would dare call himself number one.

This was his specialty. From the very beginning of his cultivation, he had trained following this direction. He was not a student of some institute who grew under the meticulous care of his teacher. He chose the cultivation according to his own wish. From the beginning of his cultivation, he had always aimed to be an assassin. His fundamental Soul's Power, Linked Soul's power, and even the ability after the Linking, all perfectly complemented him to become the number one assassin of the City Master Mansion.

Tian Zhao institute was unlike Xi Feng region. The level of students here was quite high, and many teachers with extraordinary abilities were present here. While infiltrating Tian Zhao, Wei Ying was quite cautious. He then extremely prudently explored before eventually discovering the whereabouts of Lu Ping's group.

He didn't dare move too close. While scouting, he heard the terror of a certain drunkard woman. However, the students were too uncertain and imprecise. Thus, he was unable to get a proper hold of this mysterious individual's depth. He could only be as careful as possible. During whole night, he carefully scouted the tree-filled region surrounding the library. Weighing all advantages and disadvantages, he eventually decided on a tree that conformed to his hiding technique. In his opinion, this position was an absolutely safe spot. Subsequently, before he could rest properly, the morning had already arrived.

Extremely cautious.

Extremely prudent.

The hard work of an entire night.

However, in the end, he was discovered in a single glance.

A casual glance, not unusual or strange in the slightest. Even before he could infer the meaning behind this glance, the woman was already on the move. With an inconceivable speed, she was diagonally rushing towards him.

Run!

Without any time to think and courage to fight, Wei Ying turned his body and decided to escape.

His preparations were ample. He looked at the direction from which the woman was coming after him and immediately chose the optimal escape route.

He drifted down the tree. Wen Yan, a Linked One of infusion's soul who had been looking in his direction, didn't feel the slightest abnormality.

Body technique: Dropping Leaf.

Wei Ying, from the very first day of his cultivation, had begun to lay his foundation. In the end, he trained in an ability of Strength's soul.

As if a leaf fallen from a branch, the woods encompassed his figure.

Dropping Leaf. The control required for this technique was not of strength, velocity or agility, but of weight. Wei Ying's own weight.

This moment, although he was not as light as a leaf, he was not too far off. He drifted through the woods in this manner, making use of trees and branches to conceal his figure.

However, he couldn't break free from the strong pressure locked onto his body which was coming from the woman chasing behind him. He hadn't felt this pressure when the woman was still at rest. However, at present, she was not glossing over it in the slightest. Did this pressure emerge because she had begun to use her full strength, or was she deliberately doing it?

However, as far as Wei Ying was concerned, either former or latter, both

were detrimental. Both meant that he would not be able to escape from this woman easily.

Inside the institute, the trees were neither big nor small. Wei Ying's body technique was soft as well as swift. Soon, he could see light coming from the front. This signified the end of the woods. Once he left the woods, he would have no cover.

However, Wei Ying was not tense. He continued to drift along the trees. Borrowing the momentum from branches, he began to jump. Each jump increasingly higher. At the edge of the woods, he stood at the top of a tree.

A deep breath, jump up, and windborne!

This moment, Wei Ying had fully employed his Falling Leaf technique. At his moment, he almost resembled a leaf. Sunlight, the direction of the wind, the altitude of the jump, everything had been precisely calculated by him.

This moment, Wei Yang resembled a leaf fluttering along with the wind, and the direction of his drift had already been planned by him. He went past the Tian Zhao institute's high wall.

The instant he was over the wall, he saw a woman rushing out of the woods. The same woman who had been chasing him all along. They were quite far apart from each other, and the distance between them was still increasing. However, subsequently, Wei Ying saw the woman performing an action. The woman raised the wine bottle in her hand and beautifully took a big gulp.

One would do this kind of action after completing the task. However, the woman didn't seem to have any intention of stopping. She continued to advance while drinking from the bottle in her hand.

Not intending to give up, still pausing to drink wine? What did this signify? This signified absolute confidence!

Chu Min quickly advanced two steps then suddenly jumped up. In mid-air, her body rapidly spun.

Wind.....turning?

Wei Ying, who had been traveling with the help of wind, had an extremely keen perception. He could detect the slightest of the changes in the direction of the wind. With Chu Min's feet rapidly spinning, he could hear a faint whistling sound followed by a gale.

Wei Ying hurriedly discontinued his body technique. Immediately resuming his weight, he dropped down. In any case, he had already gone past the boundary wall of Tian Zhao. However, as he dropped, he heard an explosion of a whistling sound behind him. Subsequently, he turned around and saw the woman's figure, which was on the other side of the wall, rising up at a great speed and rushing towards him.

This was floating too.

Wei Ying, by reducing his weight, could let himself be windborne and drift.

Chu Min, however, made winds for herself-strong wind-and directly flew with all her weight.

What power?! What vehemence?!

Madly swirling winds roared. These winds, which could even lift Chu Min's entire being, had picked up a lot of things. Dried branches, dead leaves, broken rocks, and even some mud on the ground had been engulfed in the winds. All these things, following Chu Min, as if baring their fangs and presenting a warning, rushed past the wall, following Wei Ying.

Wei Ying was running. He had not stopped. He was incessantly running on the ground. In front of Tian Zhao institute was Bi Polar institute. He rushed in without the slightest hesitation. In his opinion, no place could be better than this to temporarily avoid his pursuer. A member of Tian Zhao, a natural enemy of Bipolar, she couldn't dare enter Bi Polar this brazenly?

Dared!

Chu Min dared.

Along with the crazy winds, she flew past the wall of Bi Polar. The students inside began to yell and shout. However, all kinds of things carried by the wind began to drop down and caused massive chaos.

Chu Min dropped on the ground. Not paying any attention to any member of Bipolar, she continued to chase after Wei Ying.

“Who?” Bi Polar students, however, were not appreciative. One after other, they began to surround her. Could an outsider do as she pleased in Bi Polar?

At the same time, inside Tian Zhao institute, in the open land beside the library, Wen Yan had not yet completely recovered from Chu Min’s sudden departure. However, she was not careless with the task entrusted to her by Chu Min. However, right at this moment, a group of students also appeared in the woods. Usually, such a thing rarely happened here.

Chapter 68: Institute's Tyrant.

A group of people emerged out of the woods. Among these, some had ugly complexions, some were limping, and some were rubbing medicines on their arms. Surprisingly, most of the group-a group of no less than twenty-three -seemed injured.

Wen Yan was looking at them. Although she couldn't know every single student of the Tian Zhao institute, the leader of the group, which seemed in high spirits, was an individual she could tell at a glance.

Ran Dao, a fourth-grade student like her and a Linked one of Strength's soul. Most proficient in consolidation type Strength's soul's ability, 'Power Up'. Power Up, according to the name, consolidated a cultivator's strength. Infusion's soul's ability grasped by Wen Yan, 'Distant Vision', was also a type of consolidation ability which consolidated one's vision range.

One troublesome point about consolidation abilities compared to other kinds of abilities was that they couldn't be graded.

For example, consolidating strength. It might increase a cultivator's strength two times, ten times, and even more, hundred times!

Such disparities in consolidation type techniques could easily appear. Intensifying twice and intensifying hundred, lumping these two consolidations in the same group was not suitable. Therefore, all the intensifying abilities had always been graded as sixth-level abilities. This signified their boundless potential for growth.

This lasted until three hundred years ago when one of the four major institutes, Northern Battle institute's reputed cultivator, Lin Yuyuan, concluded his lifetime of study on consolidation techniques. After issuing publications on all sorts of intensifying abilities, he ultimately published . In the field of institutes and research, this produced a sensational effect. The detailed classification and evaluation of consolidating techniques provided in the book had been used as the basis to this day.

Consolidating techniques were no longer akin to just a barrel of sixth

level techniques.

For example, strength consolidating techniques.

If two times strength intensification, the ability would be evaluated as first-level and called 'Twice Power'

From three to ten, second-level, called as 'Power Up'

From eleven to fifty, third-level, called as 'Strong Power'

From fifty to hundred, fourth-level, called 'Ferocious Power'

Above hundred, fifth level, called as 'Spirit Power'

As for sixth-level strength consolidating abilities, Lin Yuyuan didn't issue any criteria. This was because among all the strength consolidating abilities he could find, the strongest only amounted to one-hundred-eight times. Was this the limit of strength consolidation? He didn't have the answer. However, after his death, to this day, the world had yet to see a cultivator with a strength consolidation ability that could intensify strength by more than one hundred eight times.

However, in , he mentioned a name for such potential strength consolidation techniques, 'Boundless Power.' Boundless strength was not the criteria for sixth-level, but sort of represented his boundless expectations from consolidating type techniques. In , there were many such abilities that only had names but no criteria for evaluation.

Consolidation type techniques could be upgraded. Compared to ordinary techniques, this was their most important feature.

Consolidation techniques' potential was boundless. Many cultivators who selected consolidation techniques believed this fact written in the . Among these, many believed that they would be able to cross the limit and become the person who would attain the sixth level, 'boundless'.

Daoran was precisely one such person.

His strength consolidation technique's name was 'Power Up'. Thus, it naturally belonged to level two already. Furthermore, Wen Yan also knew that this guy's 'Power Up' had already attained the multiplier of nine, not

far away from the third level.

Nine times intensification.

Being a Linked One of Strength soul, his Strength's soul had naturally attained the sixth Heavenly layer. The basic strength of his body was already beyond average people and other perceivers of Strength soul. Nine times intensification on top of that, would his single fist measure thousand jins? This was already a modest estimation.

Daoran was quite strong, but Wen Yan went ahead to meet him without the slightest hesitation.

"Daoran, how come you are here?" Wen Yan obstructed Daoran's way and asked. In the daily life of Tian Zhao and Bi Polar institutes, not to mention students, even teachers giving lectures with injuries due to the fights was not strange. However, this moment, all twenty-three injured individuals deciding to gather here, this caused Wen Yan to think of another possibility.

"What are you doing here?" Daoran's figure was quite tall and sturdy. From two meters above the ground, he was looking down on Wen Yan, refusing to give a straightforward answer to her question.

"You answer me first." Wen Yan was also not willing to be outdone.

"In short, something that has nothing to do with you." He stepped forward and was about to circumvent Wen Yan, and the students behind him were following him.

"Wait Wait!" Wen took one step and again blocked him. She had already guessed this group's target. Those who had their arms and legs broken were probably injured by Su Tang that day, and those who had pale complexions, seeming as if they could vomit anytime, were probably poisoned by Mo Lin that day.

"What are you doing?" Daoran frowned. Seeing Wen Yan here was a bit out of his expectations, but he was not interested. However, this moment, she seemed to have thoughts of defending those guys. This truly puzzled him. All of them heard that Lu Ping's group had come from mountains in

order to cultivate. This didn't make them enemies, but also not friends. However, the crux lied in the fact that they had suffered. Thus, they were about to repay it. This was the basic principle of Tian Zhao. Otherwise, what did the average of three point two fights every day with Bipolar meant?

In Daoran's understanding of Wen Yan, if such a matter happened, she would be sitting somewhere nearby and enjoying the show. This was not like her.

"What are you doing?" A moment ago, Daoran refused to directly answer Wen Yan. Now, it was her turn.

"You want to meddle in other's business?" Daoran frowned. Although his words were not polite, they contained no malice towards Wen Yan. For these troublemakers, this beautiful girl had always been a faithful spectator that cheered for them from the sidelines. Had she not been so immoral, not having any side of her own, that would have been even better. However, today, what happened to her? She suddenly had a standpoint?

"I am just asking, so what?" Wen Yan's face seemed determined. Two days ago, Daoran's thinking indeed would not have been wrong. If Wen Yan had met with such an incident two days ago, she would have prepared some snacks to watch the show from sidelines. However, this moment, she was moved by these four mountain bumpkins. Although their realms were nothing special, she had never seen such a perseverance, courage, and confidence in the students of Tian Zhao institute during her four years here. She would hate to see their hard work being destroyed by somebody just like this.

"Move aside!" Daoran's hand abruptly rose. His palm, which was even bigger than Wen Yan's entire head arced towards Wen Yan's head. Seeing that Wen Yan's standpoint was indeed as such, Daoran acted without the slightest hesitation.

Wen Yan had seen many such scenes. She knew Daoran's innate character. A cultivator of Strength's soul held a natural advantage over

the cultivators of other soul's as far as fighting was concerned. From the day he entered the institute, he had been a tyrant and bullied students who had inferior realms compared to his. However, back in the day, there were a lot of stronger students. Thus, this guy was somewhat cautious. However, in the fourth grade, there were no senior students to keep him in control. His Strength's soul had already undergone Linking. The advantage of consolidation abilities was that they could be upgraded. Therefore, a cultivator of consolidation abilities would not slowly control a high-level ability. Instead, grasping a first level ability at a lightning fast speed was sufficient. He could then slowly advance!

Due to this point, cultivators that possessed a consolidation ability, especially the cultivators of Strength's soul, held a clear advantage in the beginning of the realm of Linking.

Thereupon, this Daoran had turned from a grade-tyrant into the tyrant of the institute. Of course, he would naturally not provoke those who possessed the strength to contend against him. As for others, who in short couldn't hold against 'Power Up', in these four years, the number of Tian Zhao institute's students he'd injured were no less than that of the Bi Polar.

Wen Yan was not afraid of him. It was not that she was stronger than him, she only wished for Chu Min to quickly return. This superiority of Daoran during the early phase of Linking, would it be any different than an insect in front of a Linked One of three souls, Chu Min?

Delay. She only wanted to delay.

Wen Yan had a clear objective. She sidestepped Daoran's palm, and she did not strike back. Instead, she assumed a defensive stance.

"Dodging? I will like to see where you dodge now!" Daoran stepped forward and swung his fist. Wen Yan was already prepared. She arranged her hands next to each other and was ready to discharge the momentum via her feet. However, only after the fist connected did she realized that she was in a terrible spot. The strength behind Daoran's fist stepped beyond her imagination.

Multiplier of nine. This was the realm Dao Ran's 'Power Up' had attained in her knowledge. However, the strength behind this fist was above nine times intensification. She was sure. Perhaps ten times, or eleven, or even twelve?

"Go die!" Daoran coldly smiled. Regarding this mistake from Wen Yan, he was quite pleased.

Power Up?

No, not anymore. His strength intensifier, at this moment, had already attained the third level, the multiplier of 15!

Bang!

Wen Yan had no way of neutralizing this fist's strength. The fist energy exploded against the Soul's Power she had been exerting against it. Her entire body blew backward and directly collided with a tree before she spurted a mouthful of blood. She was defeated. Thoroughly defeated in a single fist. She underestimated her opponent, and this was not the first time she did it. Just a few days ago....

"Hey...." One of the individuals she underestimated a few days ago was motionlessly lying on the ground, while the other had already arrived beside her.

"Why are you fighting?" Lu Ping said.

"Uh...I came to help you. That Sound Preserving Instrument of yours.....I will not compensate for it, is that fine?"

"Do you even know what's going on?!" Wen Yan spurted another mouthful of blood due to anger.

Chapter 69: Ow!.

“What happened? Just now, I went to toilet” Lu Ping indeed did not have a clue about the current events. He left for a few moments, and upon returning, he saw Wen Yan being sent flying by a fist.

“They were injured by Mo Lin and Su Tang.” Wen Yan explained the situation to Lu Ping concisely.

“Oh, I see. Thank You,” Lu Ping said to her. Subsequently, his vision fell upon the overbearing Daoran.

“Young fellow, we are not looking for you either. Do you know about not meddling in other people’s affairs?” Daoran asked Lu Ping while swinging his fist which was as big as a sand pot. Although he didn’t feel any Soul’s Power coming from the latter’s body, he didn’t lower his guard. He had already heard that among the group that came from mountains, the seemingly ordinary youngster was quite powerful underneath and was quite unorthodox. For him who liked to bully weak and maintain his distance from strong, he had no interest in tangling with a person that held unknown strength.

“This is not other’s affairs.” Lu Ping said while stepping forward. Daoran, who was taller than Lu Ping by about two heads, seemed impatient as he turned his body around and said with a meaningful signal in his eyes, “Take care of him.”

After finished speaking, he stepped aside as if he disdained going against Lu Ping, when in reality, he wanted to probe this youngster with unclear strength first.

Behind his body, the remaining few apart from poisoned and injured students, were but the individuals who loved to show their strength alongside Daoran. They were quite clear on Daoran’s style. Although they knew the latter’s intention, they couldn’t refuse. One looked to another, and the other did the same. Apparently deciding by glances, eventually, one stepped forward.

“Young fellow, you don’t know one should not meddle in other’s

business?” Speaking the necessary imposing words, this student advanced towards Lu Ping. However, seeing that his opponent didn’t respond to his words in any way, he could only act. Following the example of Daoran, he swung his fist aiming straight for Lu Ping’s face.

Wen Yan coldly smiled.

This lackey who stepped forward was merely a second grade student. He had not even attained the single-soul-sixth Heavenly layer. He could be this arrogant only by following Daoran. Otherwise, such a realm was not something great in Tian Zhao’s second grade at all.

Such a trash, what would be his conclusion?

Wen Yan’s lively heart was immediately aroused. She was so delighted that she even forgot her own injury. However, the next moment, she immediately cried out.

“Ah!” Crying out, she immediately shifted her body to one side. That damnable Lu Ping caught the other guy’s palm, twisted, and flung that guy towards the tree where she had just crashed.

This should have been revenge for me, no? This guy didn’t saw that I was under this tree?!

As soon as Wen Yan moved aside, two explosions sounded. First was that guy crashing into the tree, and the second was him falling down. Fortunately, she was quick enough. Otherwise, wouldn’t she have been crushed by this guy for no reason?

“Hey, watch out!” She yelled at Lu Ping.

However, no one cared about her yell as everybody blankly stared.

Even though this was a second grade student with an ordinary realm, in their group, no one could throw him out this causally apart from perhaps Daoran.

Many of them revealed fearful expressions in succession. One doesn’t believe his ears but only his eyes when he sees for himself. This guy was reportedly quite ferocious. Ferocious to what extent, they finally

experienced. They had no way contending against such a strength! Boss, can you stop your act?

No one dared to move as they looked towards Daoran with their hearts palpitating.

Daoran stood without a word or a movement. Inwardly he was gauging the strength behind this throw. He was a Linked One of Strength's soul and further possessed an consolidation ability. His grasp on strength was naturally exceedingly precise. Although he couldn't properly perceive Lu Ping's Strength soul when he threw that second grade student, by the latter's collision with tree, he already had a clear estimation of Lu Ping's strength.

Subsequently, he calmly smiled. His smile was still filled with contempt.

"Just some petty tricks!" He advanced, not intending to trouble his pathetic underlings anymore. His followers felt they had just received amnesty. They immediately moved behind Daoran one after another, and their bearing once again became arrogant.

"I don't want to waste time on you. Here's your last opportunity," Daoran's words were still overbearing. He liked to warn his opponent like this and especially liked when his opponent rejected his warning then ended up on ground. This kind of feeling was indeed wonderful. It was simply bullying to the extreme.

Lu Ping indeed didn't heed his warning. However, what caused Daoran to be regretful was that the guy before him was too calm. Even if he had shouted a few lines, like Wen Yan a few moments ago, that would have been quite nice. With such a reactionless attitude, he felt like tangling with a wooden statue.

Daoran's spirits were greatly reduced, and didn't feel like wasting times on this guy anymore.

"Get Lost!" Just like before, he waved his palm.

However, Lu Ping raised his hand as well and waved it, intending to grab

Doran's palm.

"Humph!" Daoran sneered. Strong Power, fifteen times strength multiplier, was employed without the slightest restrain, and a strike brimming with strength went straight for Lu Ping's head. Lu Ping's arm compared to the gigantic arm of Daoran seemed weak and slender.

You want to resist like this? Break!

Daoran didn't pay any attention to Lu Ping's raised arm. He didn't believe that Lu Ping's strength would hinder him in the slightest.

Bang!

As his palm was waving, his wrist was first caught by Lu Ping's palm, producing a sort of brittle sound.

Did not break?

Daoran hadn't expected that such a weak arm could take his powerful strike.

However, no matter what, this palm of this. couldn't be stopped. He continued to wave it. However, it was not able to reach Lu Ping's head either. Lu Ping bowed his head and dodged the strike, but his right hand's wrist was firmly locked in latter's palm. Apparently, Lu Ping was about to throw him away.

"You don't know what's good for you!" Daoran again coldly smiled and lifted his arm straight up in air. Compared with almost two meter tall Daoran, Lu Ping's entire figure seemed petite. As the former lifted his arm, he was also lifted in the air, and Daoran didn't feel any resistance while lifting his hand either.

"Go die!" He shouted and throwed Lu Ping towards the same tree. However, subsequently, the one to scream was him.

"Ah!!!!!"

Following this scream, his arm dropped down, and the other hand reflexively moved to support it. His figure stood seemingly strengthless. Suddenly, he bent down and placed both knees on the ground.

“Ow Ow Ow.....Ow Ow Ow Ow!”

Seven yells of ‘ow’ escaped Daora’s mouth in one breath. Because he was indeed in pain. He wished to throw Lu Ping, but then he felt Lu Ping increasing the pressure on his wrist. Subsequently, he felt an unbearable pain coming from his wrist, causing his body to instantly lose all strength.

Daoran knelt. Even though he was kneeling on the ground, his figure still seemed mightier than Lu Ping. His wrist was still in Lu Ping’s palm. That thick and sturdy wrist, Lu Ping could only grab it halfway. However, everybody could clearly see that Lu Ping’s five fingers had already entered the latter’s flesh. Being squeezed at the two ends of the grip, his flesh bulged, resembling two horns.

Daoran’s cries of ‘ow’ were no different than ‘help me’. His underlings behind him were further completely white. Lu Ping, however, still calm and without affected in the slightest, turned his head and asked Wen Yan, “What to do with him?”

Chapter 70: Disciples

What to do?

Wen Yan really felt like allowing Lu Ping to kill this Daoran and be done with it. However, it was not possible.

An institute was not a lawless area. Murdering a student this brazenly, it would simply be impossible for institute to not investigate. Moreover, it wasn't as if this Daoran didn't have any background. Oppressing others and behave tyrannically straightaway from the grade first couldn't just be done on the basis of realm alone. This was because he'd the institute's vice dean, Xia Bojian behind him.

Although the latter was not institute's dean, his seniority was even above that of dean, Yun Chong. Not to mention the cultivators that had left Tian Zhao and had been instructed by the former, even one-third of the teachers inside the institute were his disciples.

In an institute as small as Zhai Feng, the concept of disciples couldn't be seen. However, in Tian Zhao, a reputable institute, this was quite ordinary.

Students would naturally like to follow a strong teacher, preferably a Linked One of three souls, like Xia Bojian. However, a teacher's energy was limited, and students required different instructions according to their Soul's power. After Linking, the disparity increased even further. With so many students, one teacher obviously couldn't take care of them all.

Therefore, at this point, students would choose teachers. Or, more often, teachers would choose their students. Only selected students would receive guidance from their respective teachers. A teacher influenced a selected student's realm and the ability significantly. Thus, importance of a teacher need not be mentioned.

Hereby, emerged the idea of disciples. Raising a formidable disciple would increase a teacher's reputation. Likewise, students would yearn to become the disciple of that teacher even more.

Xia Bojian was one such teacher. His disciples could be said to be as numerous as clouds, covering the heavens. In this respect, his fame was unrivaled in Tian Zhao. Not even Yun Chong, the institute's dean, could compare.

Not only was Daoran former's disciple, but also his blood sister's son. The number of people that protected him in Tian Zhao were simply unaccountable. Tactful people would naturally not provoke him, and for those that were sought out by him, they could only curse at their bad luck. A few times, some matters had escalated quite far. However, Xia Bojian hadn't even been required to personally step in, ever. His disciples had always settled the matters by themselves.

This kind of person, not to mention killing him, even the condition he was in at this moment, Wen Yan felt it might lead to trouble. Furthermore, their group was from outside the institute and had nobody to stand out for them. That drunkard woman? She seemed quite mysterious, but who knew how reliable was she. Even at this moment, she had run off to somewhere.

What to do?

Killing him won't do, leaving him be was no good either, so what to do?

Wen Yan felt troubled, not being able to come up with anything worthwhile for the moment. Following her lack of reply, Lu Ping decided to take matters into his own hands.

"Don't create trouble again." Lu Ping said to Daoran.

"I will not come again, I will not come again!" Being in pain, Daoran's entire forehead was drenched with sweat. No longer arrogant, no longer disdainful, his face only seemed distorted in pain.

"Leave!" Lu Ping relaxed his grip and let go of his wrist.

"I am.....You just believed his words?!" As Wen Yan jumped, Daoran also did the same. With a sudden big stride, he pulled open a distance of three meters between him and Lu Ping. His one hand was supporting the other. Although the pain didn't subside instantly, his expression was already

quite better and had turned into a sinister one.

“You... wait for me. It won’t be as simple!” Daoran yelled while escaping as fast as he could. Being a Linked One, although his ability consolidated strength, his speed didn’t pale in comparison either.

“Shouldn’t have believed him.....” Lu Ping seemed aghast.

“You are so stupid!” Wen Yan flared up.

Lu Ping prepared to go after him while turning his head and asking, “What about teacher Chu Min?”

“I don’t know, she suddenly disappeared. What are you doing?” Wen Yan was foolishly looking at Lu Ping. Daoran’s going back on his words was not out of her expectations at all. However, Lu Ping was quite decisive in going back on his words as well. Just now he said that he would let Daoran leave, but as soon as he saw the latter acting shamelessly, he was ready to chase and capture him again. These mountain people truly didn’t have the slightest sense of aloofness at all.

However, as soon as Lu Ping heard Wen Yan’s words, he stopped.

He looked at Su Tang, Xi Fan, and Mo Li, neither of whom had not a clue about the events that just occurred, and gave up on pursuing. Daoran’s group escaped in a frenzy. No one cared about those who were less agile and fell behind the group, and the latter almost broke into tears. However, as they saw that Lu Ping was not chasing after them, they relaxed somewhat and left in limping footsteps.

“Where did teacher Chu Min go?” Lu Ping looked around.

“I saw her going in that direction,” Wen Yan pointed with her finger. Her face didn’t look good. Blood was still trickling down the corner of her mouth. The injury she had received was not too heavy but not light either.

“I am here, go take some rest!” Lu Ping was also mindful.

“Ok, you be a bit careful. I will come back soon,” Wen Yan indeed felt as if she would not be able to continue anymore, and she left as well.

Only the four of them remained in the woods. Having their senses

stripped off, the three had no clue what just happened. Xi Fan was still calm, Mo Lin still had something in his mouth, and Su Tang's movements were becoming even more natural but sense of direction was still no good. Lu Ping brought her back since she had gone a bit too far off, then himself also returned back to the pile of fragments. Cultivating, paying attention to the surroundings, and keeping an eye for Chu Min at the same time.

Where did Chu Min go?

Lu Ping's group didn't know, but right in front of them, Bi Polar institute, knew it too well.

"It's that drunkard woman from Tian Zhao!" In the beginning, they had not cared much about who broke into their institute. However, more and more students began to recognize Chu Min. Although they didn't know her name, many of them had seen her drunkenly enter Tian Zhao on multiple occasions.

However, even if they had seen her, what did it matter this moment?

As Chu Min ran, she resembled a gale. Or perhaps one should say she was bringing the gale wherever she went. Students who had inferior realms were even blowing away and collapsing after ending up near this gale.

All were dumbstruck. They never imagined that this drunkard woman could be this strong. After she infiltrated the Bi Polar institute, students had obstructed her, surrounded her, attacked her, and much more, but to no avail. Regardless of their realm, in front of this woman, they were nothing more than paper.

Strong, Too strong!

"Go inform the Dean quickly!" Someone shouted. There was truly no other choice. Whenever they asked her purpose, she would say, "Looking for someone", when they asked her who, she would reply, "Right ahead."

Ahead? What ahead, haven't you been running ahead till now? Who on earth is she looking for ahead?

Bi Polar students couldn't tell. Wei Ying's escape and hiding techniques were indeed too strong. Not only was he proficient in using the terrain to his advantage, but also adept at moving through the crowd. He'd already changed his attire three times after entering the Bi Polar institute. This was his limit. If wished to change his attire again, he would have to run naked.

Some Bi Polar students who took notice of him would lost him in a few moments due to his ever-changing hiding and escaping means. However, Chu Min was still after him. From Tian Zhao, she had chased him to Bi Polar. Bi Polar didn't matter to her, and the former also couldn't block her. In such a brazen and fearless way, she continued to chase after Wei Ying. Wei Ying didn't need to turn his head to know this fact. Hearing the shouting voices and rioting atmosphere, he knew that this woman was still behind him.

Inform the Dean!

Although students were shouting as such, the fact was that the Dean's grasp on the situation of his institute would be eternally beyond students' imagination.

Originally, Dean Tang Mu didn't care much and thought the intruder was again a Tian Zhao student who had come to pick a fight. Such matters happened time to time, he didn't need to personally handle such affairs.

However, other piece of information soon arrived. The intruder was the drunkard woman of Tian Zhao.

Drunkard woman?

Tang Mu's complexion immediately transformed. If this woman was truly intoxicated, it wouldn't have mattered. However, she was not intoxicated. She had barged in Tian Zhao seeming as healthy as one could be. Now, this was a major affair.

He didn't issue any instructions, because he had personally moved to deal with situation. However, as he was hurrying over to her, he received another information,

She is looking for someone, someone ahead....

She is....chasing someone?

Chasing who?

Being an institute's dean, he was obviously tactful and shrewd. Tang Mu didn't immediately went to confront her. He didn't even went to the scene. He found a suitable position and distantly watched.

Subsequently, he immediately spotted Wei Ying.

Dean Tang Mu's realm obviously couldn't be compared to that of students.

Not only he spotted Wei Ying, he even recognized the latter. Although usually, Wei Ying tried to avoid the eyes of others at all costs, in front of Tang Mu, he never tried to hide. He was a protector of Wei family, and Wei family's master Wei Zhong was a disciple of Tang Mu. Although the latter had already started to govern a region, towards his master, his attitude was one of utmost respect. Even Wei Ming's attitude towards the latter compared to his attitude towards Baliyan was as different heaven and earth.

This was not simply pure respect to the master.

From the influential aspect, institute and teachers obviously couldn't compare to a city master. However, students who had received guidance from the teachers of institute and disciples of a reputed master could be found throughout the continent. From the aspect of connections, nobody would dare compare himself with institutes and reputed masters.

Respecting an institute and respecting a reputed master, this was not merely a courtesy; this was interest.

Credits

Translator: [Wele](#)

Novel Updates: [Link](#)

Epub: [Shyboy](#) / [dotNOVEL](#)